

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 01269122 6




Presented to the
LIBRARY *of the*
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
by

THE ESTATE OF THE LATE
PROFESSOR
A.S.P. WOODHOUSE

HANDBOUND
AT THE



UNIVERSITY OF
TORONTO PRESS



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

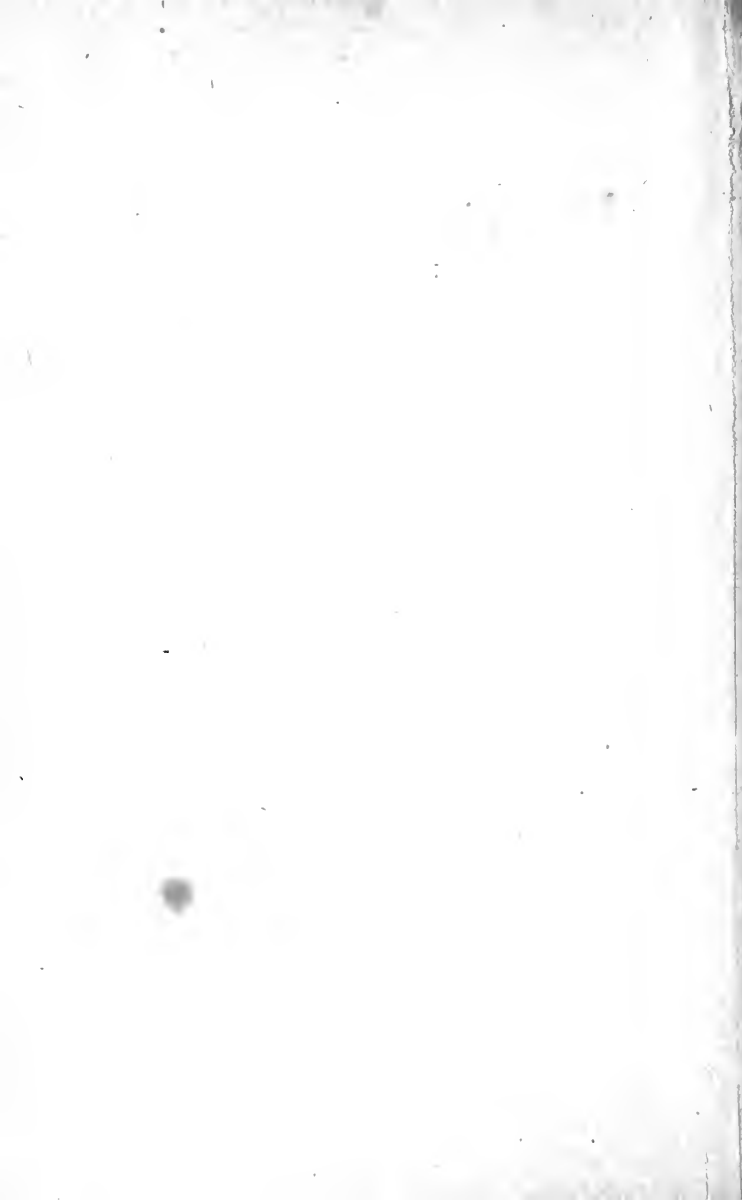
93

3714

I

THE DR. JOHNSON EDITION.

~~~~~  
The Complete Works of Shakespeare.









F. PECHT, PINX.

JOAN OF ARC, THE DAUPHIN, ETC.

*First Part of King Henry VI. Act I., Scene II.*





THE DR. JOHNSON EDITION.

---

THE  
COMPLETE WORKS  
OF  
SHAKESPEARE

WITH LIFE, COMPENDIUM, AND  
CONCORDANCE.

Illustrated with Fifty Photogravures.



VOL. IV.

PHILADELPHIA:  
THE GEBBIE PUBLISHING CO., LIMITED.

1896.

PR  
2752  
J6  
1896  
v.4



1145423

## CONTENTS.

---

|                                            | PAGE |
|--------------------------------------------|------|
| FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI., . . .        | 1    |
| SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI., . . .       | 71   |
| THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI., . . .        | 149  |
| THE LIFE AND DEATH OF KING RICHARD III., . | 225  |
| KING HENRY VIII., . . . . .                | 317  |
| TROILUS AND CRESSIDA, . . . . .            | 397  |

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

## VOLUME IV.

|                                                                                |             |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------|
| JOAN OF ARC, THE DAUPHIN, ETC., by <i>F. Pecht</i> .                           |             |
| <i>Frontispiece.</i><br><i>First Part of King Henry VI., Act I., Scene II.</i> |             |
| JACK CADE AND LORD SAY by <i>N. Goose</i> . . . . .                            | PAGE<br>133 |
| <i>Second Part of King Henry VI., Act IV., Scene VII.</i>                      |             |
| WARWICK AND KING EDWARD, by <i>M. Adamo</i> . . . . .                          | 201         |
| <i>Third Part of King Henry VI., Act IV., Scene III.</i>                       |             |
| KING RICHARD III., by <i>N. Goose</i> . . . . .                                | 260         |
| <i>Act II., Scene IV.</i>                                                      |             |
| MR. COULDÖCK AS RICHARD III., by <i>McClees</i> . . . . .                      | 287         |
| <i>King Richard III., Act IV., Scene II.</i>                                   |             |
| WOOLSEY, HENRY VIII. AND ANNE BULLEN, by <i>F. Pecht</i> . . . . .             | 334         |
| <i>King Henry VIII., Act I., Scene IV.</i>                                     |             |
| TEGILUS AND CRESSIDA, by <i>J. C. Armytage</i> . . . . .                       | 437         |
| <i>Act III., Scene II.</i>                                                     |             |



FIRST PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.

DUKE OF GLOSTER, *Uncle to the KING, and Protector.*

DUKE OF BEDFORD, *Uncle to the KING, and Regent of France.*

THOMAS BEAUFORT, *Duke of Exeter, Great-Uncle to the KING.*

HENRY BEAUFORT, *Great-Uncle to the KING, Bishop of Winchester, and afterwards Cardinal.*

JOHN BEAUFORT, *Earl of Somerset, afterwards Duke.*

RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *Eldrest Son of RICHARD, late Earl of Cambridge, afterwards Duke of York.*

EARL OF WARWICK.

EARL OF SALISBURY.

EARL OF SUFFOLK.

LORD TALBOT, *afterwards Earl of Shrews'ury.*

JOHN TALBOT, *his Son.*

EDMUND MORTIMER, *Earl of March.*

MORTIMER'S KEEPERS.

A Lawyer.

SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE.

SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE.

Mayor of London.

WOODVILLE, *Lieutenant of the Tower.*

VERNON, *of the White-rose or York faction.*

BASSET, *of the Red-rose or Lancaster faction.*

CHARLES, *Dauphin, and afterwards King of France.*

REIGNIER, *Duke of Anjou, and Titular King of Naples.*

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

DUKE OF ALENÇON.

BASTARD OF ORLEANS.

Governor of Paris.

Master-Gunner of Orleans, *and his Son.*

General of the French Forces in *Bordeaux.*

A French Sergeant. A Porter.

An Old Shepherd, *Father to JOAN LA PUCELLE.*

MARGARET, *Daughter to REIGNIER, afterwards married to KING HENRY.*

COUNTESS OF AUVERGNE.

JOAN LA PUCELLE, *commonly called JOAN OF ARC.*

Lords, Warders of the Tower, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, *and several English and French Attendants.*

Fiends appearing to LA PUCELLE.

SCENE,—Partly in ENGLAND, and partly in FRANCE.

FIRST PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I.—*Westminster Abbey.*

*Dead March.* Corpse of KING HENRY THE FIFTH, *in state,*  
is brought in, attended on by the DUKES OF BEDFORD,  
GLOSTER, and EXETER, the EARL OF WARWICK, the  
BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, Heralds, &c.

*Bed.* Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!  
Comets, importing change of times and states,  
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky,  
And with them scourge the bad revolting stars  
That have consented unto Henry's death!  
Henry the Fifth, too famous to live long!  
England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.

*Glo.* England ne'er had a king until his time.  
Virtue he had, deserving to command:  
His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams;  
His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings;  
His sparkling eyes, replete with wrathful fire,  
More dazzled and drove back his enemies  
Than mid-day sun fierce bent against their faces.  
What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech:  
He ne'er lift up his hand but conquered.

*Exe.* We mourn in black: why mourn we not in blood?  
Henry is dead, and never shall revive:  
Upon a wooden coffin we attend;  
And death's dishonourable victory  
We with our stately presence glorify,  
Like captives bound to a triumphant car.  
What! shall we curse the planets of mishap,  
That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?  
Or shall we think the subtle-witted French

Conjurers and sorcerers, that, afraid of him,  
By magic verses have contriv'd his end?

*Win.* He was a king bless'd of the King of kings.  
Unto the French the dreadful judgment-day  
So dreadful will not be as was his sight.  
The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought:  
The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

*Glo.* The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray'd,  
His thread of life had not so soon decay'd:  
None do you like but an effeminate prince,  
Whom, like a school-boy, you may overawe.

*Win.* Gloster, whate'er we like, thou art protector,  
And lookest to command the prince and realm.  
Thy wife is proud; she holdeth thee in awe  
More than God or religious churchmen may.

*Glo.* Name not religion, for thou lov'st the flesh;  
And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'st,  
Except it be to pray against thy foes.

*Bed.* Cease, cease these jars and rest your minds in peace  
Let's to the altar:—heralds, wait on us:—  
Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms;  
Since arms avail not, now that Henry's dead.—  
Posterity, await for wretched years,  
When at their mother's moisten'd eyes babes shall suck;  
Our isle be made a marish of salt tears,  
And none but women left to wail the dead.—  
Henry the Fifth! thy ghost I invoke;  
Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils!  
Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!  
A far more glorious star thy soul will make  
Than Julius Cæsar or bright—

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My honourable lords, health to you all!  
Sad tidings bring I to you out of France,  
Of loss, of slaughter, and discomfiture:  
Guienne, Champagne, Rheims, Orleans,  
Paris, Guysors, Poictiers, are all quite lost.

*Bed.* What say'st thou, man, before dead Henry's corse?  
Speak softly; or the loss of those great towns  
Will make him burst his lead and rise from death.

*Glo.* Is Paris lost? is Rouen yielded up?  
If Henry were recall'd to life again,  
These news would cause him once more yield the ghost.

*Ere.* How were they lost? what treachery was us'd?

*Mess.* No treachery but want of men and money.

Among the soldiers this is muttered,—  
 That here you maintain several factions;  
 And whilst a field should be despatch'd and fought,  
 You are disputing of your generals:  
 One would have ling'ring wars, with little cost;  
 Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings;  
 A third man thinks, without expense at all,  
 By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.  
 Awake, awake, English nobility!  
 Let not sloth dim your honours, new-begot:  
 Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms;  
 Of England's coat one-half is cut away.

*Exe.* Were our tears wanting to this funeral,  
 These tidings would call forth her flowing tides.

*Bed.* Me they concern; regent I am of France.—  
 Give me my steeled coat! I'll fight for France.—  
 Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!  
 Wounds will I lend the French, instead of eyes,  
 To weep their intermissive miseries.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*2 Mess.* Lords, view these letters, full of bad mischance  
 France is revolted from the English quite,  
 Except some petty towns of no import:  
 The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims;  
 The Bastard of Orleans with him is join'd;  
 I eiguier, Duke of Anjou, doth take his part;  
 The Duke of Alençon lieth to his side.

*Exe.* The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!  
 O, whither shall we fly from this reproach?

*Glo.* We will not fly, but to our enemies' throats:—  
 Bedford, if thou be slack I'll fight it out.

*Bed.* Gloster, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness?  
 An army have I muster'd in my thoughts,  
 Wherewith already France is overrun.

*Enter a third Messenger.*

*3 Mess.* My gracious lords,—to add to your laments,  
 Wherewith you now bedew King Henry's hearse,—  
 I must inform you of a dismal fight  
 Betwixt the stout Lord Talbot and the French.

*Win.* What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't so?

*3 Mess.* O, no; wherein Lord Talbot was o'erthrown:  
 The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.  
 The tenth of August last this dreadful lord,  
 Retiring from the siege of Orleans,

Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,  
 By three-and-twenty thousand of the French  
 Was round encompassed and set upon.  
 No leisure had he to enrank his men;  
 He wanted pikes to set before his archers;  
 Instead whereof, sharp stakes, pluck'd out of hedges,  
 They pitched in the ground confusedly,  
 To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.  
 More than three hours the fight continued;  
 Where valiant Talbot, above human thought,  
 Enacted wonders with his sword and lance:  
 Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand him;  
 Here, there, and everywhere, enrag'd he flew:  
 The French exclaim'd the devil was in arms;  
 All the whole army stood amaz'd on him:  
 His soldiers, spying his undaunted spirit,  
 A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out amain,  
 And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.  
 Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up  
 If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward:  
 He, being in the vaward,—plac'd behind,  
 With purpose to relieve and follow them,—  
 Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke.  
 Hence grew the general wreck and massacre;  
 Enclosed were they with their enemies:  
 A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,  
 Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back;  
 Whom all France, with their chief assembled strength,  
 Durst not presume to look once in the face.

*Bed.* Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,  
 For living idly here in pomp and ease,  
 Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,  
 Unto his dastard foemen is betray'd.

3 *Mess.* O no, he lives; but is took prisoner,  
 And Lord Scales with him, and Lord Hungerford:  
 Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise.

*Bed.* His ransom there is none but I shall pay:  
 I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne.—  
 His crown shall be the ransom of my friend;  
 Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.—  
 Farewell, my masters; to my task will I;  
 Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,  
 To keep our great Saint George's feast withal:  
 Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,  
 Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake.

3 *Mess.* So you had need; for Orleans is besieg'd;

The English army is grown weak and faint :  
 The Earl of Salisbury craveth supply,  
 And hardly keeps his men from mutiny,  
 Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.

*Exe.* Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry sworn,  
 Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,  
 Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.

*Bed.* I do remember it; and here take my leave,  
 To go about my preparation. [*Exit.*

*Glo.* I'll to the Tower, with all the haste I can,  
 To view the artillery and munition;  
 And then I will proclaim young Henry king. [*Exit.*

*Exe.* To Eltham will I, where the young king is,  
 Being ordain'd his special governor;  
 And for his safety there I'll best devise. [*Exit.*

*Win.* Each hath his place and function to attend :  
 I am left out; for me nothing remains.  
 But long I will not be Jack-out-of-office :  
 The king from Eltham I intend to steal,  
 And sit at chiefest stern of public weal.

[*Exit.* Scene closes.

SCENE II.—FRANCE. *Before Orleans.*

*Enter CHARLES, with his Forces; ALENÇON, REIGNIER,  
 and others.*

*Char.* Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens,  
 So in the earth, to this day is not known :  
 Late did he shine upon the English side ;  
 Now we are victors, upon us he smiles.  
 What towns of any moment but we have ?  
 At pleasure here we lie near Orleans ;  
 Otherwhiles the famish'd English, like pale ghosts,  
 Faintly besiege us one hour in a month.

*Alen.* They want their porridge and their fat bull-beeves :  
 Either they must be dieted like mules,  
 And have their provender tied to their mouths,  
 Or piteous they will look, like drowned mice.

*Reig.* Let's raise the siege : why live we idly here ?  
 Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear :  
 Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury ;  
 And he may well in fretting spend his gall,—  
 Nor men nor money hath he to make war.

*Char.* Sound, sound alarm ! we will rush on them.  
 Now for the honour of the forlorn French ! -

Him I forgive my death that killeth me,  
 When he sees me go back one foot or fice. [*Exeunt.*

*Alarums; excursions; afterwards a retreat. Re-enter  
 CHARLES, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Who ever saw the like? what men have I!—  
 Dogs! cowards! dastards! I would ne'er have fled  
 But that they left me midst my enemies.

*Reig.* Salisbury is a desperate homicide;  
 He fighteth as one weary of his life.  
 The other lords, like lions wanting food,  
 Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.

*Alen.* Froissart, a countryman of ours, records,  
 England all Olivers and Rowlands bred  
 During the time Edward the Third did reign.  
 More truly now may this be verified;  
 For none but Samsons and Goliasses  
 It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!  
 Lean raw-bon'd rascals! who would e'er suppose  
 They had such courage and audacity?

*Char.* Let's leave this town; for they are hair-brain'd  
 slaves,  
 And hunger will enforce them to be more eager:  
 Of old I know them; rather with their teeth  
 The walls they'll tear down than forsake the siege.

*Reig.* I think, by some odd gimmicks or device,  
 Their arms are set, like clocks, still to strike on;  
 Else ne'er could they hold out so as they do.  
 By my consent, we'll even let them alone.

*Alen.* Be it so.

*Enter the BASTARD OF ORLEANS.*

*Bast.* Where's the Prince Dauphin? I have news for him.

*Char.* Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.

*Bast.* Methinks your looks are sad, your cheer appall'd:  
 Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?  
 Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand:  
 A holy maid hither with me I bring,  
 Which, by a vision sent to her from heaven,  
 Ordain'd is to raise this tedious siege,  
 And drive the English forth the bounds of France.  
 The spirit of deep prophecy she hath,  
 Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome:  
 What's past and what's to come she can descry.  
 Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words,  
 For they are certain and unfallible.



*Char.* Go, call her in. [*Exit BASTARD.*] But first, to try her skill,  
Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place:  
Question her proudly; let thy looks be stern:  
By this means shall we sound what skill she hath. [*Retires.*]

*Re-enter the BASTARD OF ORLEANS, with LA PUCELLE.*

*Reig.* Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these wondrous feats?

*Puc.* Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to beguile me?—  
Where is the Dauphin?—Come, come from behind;  
I know thee well, though never seen before.  
Be not amaz'd, there's nothing hid from me:  
In private will I talk with thee apart.—  
Stand back, you lords, and give us leave awhile.

*Reig.* She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

*Puc.* Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter,  
My wit untrain'd in any kind of art.  
Heaven and our Lady gracious hath it pleas'd  
To shine on my contemptible estate:  
Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,  
And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks,  
God's mother deign'd to appear to me,  
And in a vision full of majesty  
Will'd me to leave my base vocation,  
And free my country from calamity:  
Her aid she promis'd and assur'd success:  
In complete glory she reveal'd herself;  
And whereas I was black and swart before,  
With those clear rays which she infus'd on me,  
That beauty am I bless'd with which you see.  
Ask me what question thou canst possible,  
And I will answer unpremeditated:  
My courage try by combat if thou dar'st,  
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.  
Resolve on this,—thou shalt be fortunate  
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

*Char.* Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high terms:  
Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,—  
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me;  
And if thou vanquishest, thy words are true;  
Otherwise I renounce all confidence.

*Puc.* I am prepar'd: here is my keen-edg'd sword,  
Deck'd with five flower-de-luces on each side;  
The which at Touraine, in Saint Katherine's churchyard,  
Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth.

*Char.* Then come, o' God's name; I fear no woman.

*Puc.* And while I live I'll ne'er fly from a man.

[*They fight.*]

*Char.* Stay, stay thy hands! thou art an Amazon,  
And fightest with the sword of Deborah.

*Puc.* Christ's mother helps me, else I were too weak.

*Char.* Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that must help me:  
Impatiently I burn with thy desire;  
My heart and hands thou hast at once subdu'd.  
Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so,  
Let me thy servant and not sovereign be:  
'Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

*Puc.* I must not yield to any rites of love,  
For my profession's sacred from above:  
When I have chased all thy foes from hence,  
Then will I think upon a recompense.

*Char.* Meantime look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.

*Reig.* My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.

*Alen.* Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock;  
Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech.

*Reig.* Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean?

*Alen.* He may mean more than we poor men do  
know:

These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues.

*Reig.* My lord, where are you? what devise you on?  
Shall we give over Orleans, or no?

*Puc.* Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants!  
Fight till the last gasp; I will be your guard.

*Char.* What she says I'll confirm: we'll fight it out.

*Puc.* Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.  
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise:  
Expect Saint Martin's summer, halcyon days,  
Since I have entered into these wars,  
Glory is like a circle in the water,  
Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself,  
Till by broad spreading it disperse to naught.  
With Henry's death the English circle ends;  
Dispersed are the glories it included.  
Now am I like that proud insulting ship  
Which Cæsar and his fortune bare at once.

*Char.* Was Mahomet inspired with a dove?  
Thou with an eagle art inspired, then.  
Helen, the mother of great Constantine,  
Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters, were like thee.  
Bright star of Venus, fall'n down on the earth,  
How may I reverently worship thee enough?

*Alen.* Leave off delays, and let us raise the siege.

*Reig.* Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours;  
Drive them from Orleans, and be immortaliz'd.

*Char.* Presently we'll try:—come, let's away about it:—  
No prophet will I trust if she prove false. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. *Before the Gates of the Tower.*

*Enter the DUKE OF GLOSTER, with his Serving-men  
in blue coats.*

*Glo.* I am come to survey the Tower this day:  
Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance.—  
Where be these warders, that they wait not here?  
Open the gates: Gloster it is that calls. [*Servants knock.*]

1 *Ward.* [*within.*] Who's there that knocks so imper-  
iously?

1 *Serv.* It is the noble Duke of Gloster.

2 *Ward.* [*within.*] Whoe'er he be, you may not be let in.

1 *Serv.* Villains, answer you so the lord protector?

1 *Ward.* [*within.*] The Lord protect him! so we answer  
We do no otherwise than we are will'd. [*him:*]

*Glo.* Who willed you? or whose will stands but mine?  
There's none protector of the realm but I.—

Break up the gates, I'll be your warrantize:

Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

[*GLOSTER'S Servants rush at the Tower-gates.*]

*Wood.* [*within.*] What noise is this? what traitors have  
we here?

*Glo.* Lieutenant, is it you whose voice I hear?

Open the gates; here's Gloster that would enter.

*Wood.* [*within.*] Have patience, noble Duke; I may not  
open;

The Cardinal of Winchester forbids:

From him I have express commandment

That thou nor none of thine shall be let in.

*Glo.* Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him 'fore me,—

Arrogant Winchester? that haughty prelate

Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?

Thou art no friend to God or to the king:

Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out short'y.

1 *Serv.* Open the gates unto the lord protector,  
Or we'll burst them open if that you come not quickly.

[*GLOSTER'S Servants rush again at the Tower-gates.*]

*Enter WINCHESTER, with his Serving-men in tawny coats.*

*Win.* How now, ambitious Humplrey! what means this?

*Glo.* Peel'd priest, dost thou command me to be shut out?

*Win.* I do, thou most usurping proditor,  
And not protector of the king or realm.

*Glo.* Stand back, thou manifest conspirator,  
Thou that contriv'dst to murder our dead lord;  
Thou that giv'st whores indulgences to sin:  
I'll canvass thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,  
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

*Win.* Nay, stand thou back; I will not budge a foot:  
This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain,  
To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt.

*Glo.* I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee back:  
Thy scarlet robes as a child's bearing-cloth  
I'll use to carry thee out of this place.

*Win.* Do what thou dar'st; I beard thee to thy face.

*Glo.* What! am I dar'd, and bearded to my face?—  
Draw, men, for all this privileged place;  
Blue-coats to tawny-coats.—Priest, beware your beard;  
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly:  
Under my feet I'll stamp thy cardinal's hat;  
In spite of pope or dignities of church,  
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.

*Win.* Gloster, thou wilt answer this before the pope.

*Glo.* Winchester goose! I cry, a rope! a rope!—  
Now heat them hence, why do you let them stay?—  
Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's array.—  
Out, tawny-coats!—Out, scarlet hypocrite!

*GLOSTER and his Servants attack the other Party. In the tumult, enter the Mayor of London and Officers.*

*May.* Fie, lords! that you, being supreme magistrates,  
Thus contumeliously should break the peace!

*Glo.* Peace, mayor! thou know'st little of my wrongs:  
Here's Beaufort, that regards nor God nor king,  
Hath here distrain'd the Tower to his use.

*Win.* Here's Gloster, too, a foe to citizens;  
One that still motions war, and never peace,  
O'ercharging your free purses with large fines;  
That seeks to overthrow religion,  
Because he is protector of the realm;  
And would have armour here out of the Tower,  
To crown himself king and suppress the prince.

*Glo.* I will not answer thee with words, but blows.

*[Here they skirmish again.]*

*May.* Naught rests for me, in this tumultuous strife,

But to make open proclamation:—

Come, officer, as loud as e'er thou canst.

*Off.* [reads.] *All manner of men assembled here in arms this day against God's peace and the king's, we charge and command you, in his highness' name, to repair to your several dwelling-places; and not to wear, handle, or use any sword, weapon, or dagger, henceforward, upon pain of death.*

*Glo.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law;  
But we shall meet and break our minds at large.

*Win.* Gloster, we'll meet, to thy dear cost, be sure:  
Thy heart-blood I will have for this day's work.

*May.* I'll call for clubs if you will not away:—  
This cardinal's more haughty than the devil.

*Glo.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what thou may'st.

*Win.* Abominable Gloster! guard thy head;  
For I intend to have it ere long.

[*Exeunt severally, GLO. and WIN.,  
with their Servants.*]

*May.* See the coast clear'd, and then we will depart.—

Good God, these nobles should such stomachs bear!

I myself fight not once in forty year.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—FRANCE. *Before Orleans.*

*Enter, on the walls, the Master-Gunner and his Son.*

*M. Gun.* Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans is besieg'd,  
And how the English have the suburbs won.

*Son.* Father, I know; and oft have shot at them,  
Howe'er, unfortunate, I missed my aim.

*M. Gun.* But now thou shalt not. Be thou rul'd by me:

Chief master-gunner am I of this town;  
Something I must do to procure me grace.

The prince's espials have informed me  
How the English, in the suburbs close intrench'd,

Wont, through a secret grate of iron bars

In yonder tower, to overpeer the city,

And thence discover how with most advantage

They may vex us with shot or with assault.

To intercept this inconvenience,

A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have plac'd;

And even these three days have I watch'd if I

Could see them.

Now do thou watch, for I can stay no longer.

If thou spy'st any, run and bring me word;

And thou shalt find me at the governor's.

[*Exit*]

*Son.* Father, I warrant you; take you no care;  
I'll never trouble you if I may spy them.

*Enter, in an upper Chamber of a Tower, the LORDS SALISBURY  
and TALBOT, SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE, SIR THOMAS  
GARGRAVE, and others.*

*Sal.* Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd!  
How wert thou handled being prisoner?  
Or by what means gott'st thou to be releas'd?  
Discourse, I pr'ythee, on this turret's top.

*Tal.* The Duke of Bedford had a prisoner  
Call'd the brave Lord Ponton de Santrailles;  
For him was I exchange'd and ransomed.  
But with a baser man of arms by far  
Once, in contempt, they would have barter'd me:  
Which I, disdain'd, scorn'd; and craved death  
Rather than I would be so vile-esteem'd.  
In fine, redeem'd I was as I desir'd.

But, O! the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my heart!  
Whom with my bare fists I would execute  
If I now had him brought into my power.

*Sal.* Yet tell'st thou not how thou wert entertain'd.

*Tal.* With scoffs, and scorns, and contumelious taunts,  
In open market-place produc'd they me,  
To be a public spectacle to all:  
Here, said they, is the terror of the French,  
The scarecrow that affrights our children so.  
Then broke I from the officers that led me,  
And with my nails digg'd stones out of the ground  
To hurl at the beholders of my shame:  
My grisly countenance made others fly;  
None durst come near for fear of sudden death.  
In iron walls they deem'd me not secure;  
So great fear of my name 'mongst them was spread  
That they suppos'd I could rend bars of steel,  
And spurn in pieces posts of adamant:  
Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had,  
That walk'd about me every minute-while;  
And if I did but stir out of my bed,  
Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

*Sal.* I grieve to hear what torments you endur'd;  
But we will be reveng'd sufficiently.  
Now it is supper-time in Orleans:  
Here, through this grate, I can count each one,  
And view the Frenchmen how they fortify:  
Let us look in; the sight will much delight thee.—

Sir Thomas Gargrave and Sir William Glansdale,  
 Let me have your express opinions  
 Where is best place to make our battery next.

*Gar.* I think at the north gate; for there stand lords.

*Glan.* And I here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

*Tal.* For aught I see, this city must be famish'd,  
 Or with light skirmishes enfeebled.

[*Shot from the town.* *SAL.* and *SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE* *fall.*

*Sal.* O Lord, have mercy on us, wretched sinners!

*Gar.* O Lord, have mercy on me, woeful man!

*Tal.* What chance is this that suddenly hath cross'd us?—  
 Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak:

How far'st thou, mirror of all martial men?

One of thy eyes and thy cheek's side struck off!—

Accurs'd tower! accurs'd fatal hand

That hath contriv'd this woeful tragedy!

In thirteen battles Salisbury o'ercame;

Henry the Fifth he first train'd to the wars;

Whilst any trump did sound or drum struck up,

His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field.—

Yet liv'st thou, Salisbury? though thy speech doth fail,

One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace:

The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.—

Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive

If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!—

Bear hence his body; I will help to bury it.

Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life?

Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him.—

Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort;

Thou shalt not die whiles—

He beckons with his hand, and smiles on me,

As who should say, *When I am dead and gone,*

*Remember to avenge me on the French.*—

Plantagenet, I will; and like thee, Nero,

Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn:

Wretched shall France be only in my name.

[*Thunder heard; afterwards an alarum.*

What stir is this? What tumult's in the heavens?

Whence cometh this alarum, and the noise?

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, my lord, the French have gather'd head:

The Dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle join'd,—

A holy prophetess new risen up,—

Is come with a great power to raise the siege.

[*SAL.* *lifts himself and groans.*

*Tal.* Hear, hear how dying Salisbury doth groan !  
 It irks his heart he cannot be reveng'd.—  
 Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you :—  
 Pucelle or puzzle, dolphin or dogfish,  
 Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels,  
 And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.—  
 Convey me Salisbury into his teut,  
 And then we'll try what these dastard Frenchmen dare.  
*[Exeunt, bearing out the bodies.]*

SCENE V.—*The same. Before one of the Gates.*

*Alarum; skirmishings. Enter TALBOT, pursuing the DAUPHIN, drives him in, and exit: then enter JOAN LA PUCELLE, driving Englishmen before her, and exit after them: then re-enter TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Where is my strength, my valour, and my force?  
 Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them;  
 A woman clad in armour chaseth them.  
 Here, here she comes.

*Enter LA PUCELLE.*

I'll have a bout with thee;  
 Devil or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee:  
 Blood will I draw on thee,—thou art a witch,—  
 And straightway give thy soul to him thou serv'st.

*Puc.* Come, come, 'tis only I that must disgrace thee.

*[They fight.]*

*Tal.* Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail?  
 My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage,  
 And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,  
 But I will chastise this high-minded trumpet.

*[They fight again.]*

*Puc.* *[retiring.]* Talbot, farewell: thy hour is not yet come:

I must go victual Orleans forthwith.  
 O'ertake me if thou canst; I scorn thy strength.  
 Go, go, cheer up thy hunger-starved men;  
 Help Salisbury to make his testament:  
 This day is ours, as many more shall be.

*[LA PUC. enters the town with Soldiers.]*

*Tal.* My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel;  
 I know not where I am nor what I do:  
 A witch by fear, not force, like Hannibal  
 Drives back our troops, and conquers as she lists:



So bees with smoke and doves with noisome stench  
 Are from their hives and houses driven away.  
 They call'd us, for our fierceness, English dogs;  
 Now like to whelps we crying run away. [*A short alarum.*  
 Hark, countrymen! either renew the fight  
 Or tear the lions out of England's coat;  
 Renounce your soil, give sheep in lions' stead:  
 Sheep run not half so timorous from the wolf,  
 Or horse or oxen from the leopard,  
 As you fly from your oft-subdued slaves.

[*Alarum. Another skirmish.*

It will not be:—retire into your trenches:  
 You all consented unto Salisbury's death,  
 For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.—  
 Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,  
 In spite of us or aught that we could do.  
 O, would I were to die with Salisbury!  
 The shame hereof will make me hide my head!

[*Alarum. Retreat. Exeunt TALBOT and Forces, &c.*

*Flourish. Enter, on the Walls, LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, REIGNIER, ALENÇON, and Soldiers.*

*Puc.* Advance our waving colours on the walls;  
 Rescu'd is Orleans from the English:—  
 Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.

*Char.* Divinest creature, Astræa's daughter,  
 How shall I honour thee for this success?  
 Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens,  
 That one day bloom'd and fruitful were the next.—  
 France, triumph in thy glorious prophetess!—  
 Recover'd is the town of Orleans:  
 More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state.

*Reig.* Why ring not out the bells aloud throughout the town?

Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires,  
 And feast and banquet in the open streets,  
 To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.

*Alen.* All France will be replete with mirth and joy  
 When they shall hear how we have play'd the men.

*Char.* 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day is won;  
 For which I will divide my crown with her;  
 And all the priests and friars in my realm  
 Shall in procession sing her endless praise.  
 A statelier pyramis to her I'll rear  
 Than Rhodope's of Memphis ever was:

In memory of her when she is dead,  
 Her ashes, in an urn more precious  
 Than the rich jewell'd coffer of Darius,  
 Transported shall be at high festivals  
 Before the kings and queens of France  
 No longer on Saint Denis will we cry,  
 But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.  
 Come in, and let us banquet royally,  
 After this golden day of victory. *[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*Before Orleans.*

*Enter to the Gate a French Sergeant and two Sentinels.*

*Serg.* Sirs, take your places and be vigilant:  
 If any noise or soldier you perceive  
 Near to the walls, by some apparent sign  
 Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.

*1 Sent.* Sergeant, you shall. *[Exit Sergeant.]* Thus are  
 poor servitors,  
 When others sleep upon their quiet beds,  
 Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain, and cold.

*Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, and Forces, with  
 scaling-ladders; their drums beating a dead march.*

*Tal.* Lord regent and redoubted Burgundy,—  
 By whose approach the regions of Artois,  
 Walloon, and Picardy are friends to us,—  
 This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,  
 Having all day carous'd and banqueted:  
 Embrace we, then, this opportunity,  
 As fitting best to quittance their deceit,  
 Contriv'd by art and baleful sorcery.

*Bed.* Coward of France!—how much he wrongs his  
 fame,  
 Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,  
 To join with witches and the help of hell.

*Bur.* Traitors have never other company.—  
 But what's that Pucelle whom they term so pure?

*Tal.* A maid, they say.

*Bed.* A maid! and be so martial!

*Bur.* Pray God she prove not masculine ere long,

If underneath the standard of the French  
She carry armour, as she hath begun.

*Tal.* Well, let them practise and converse with spirits:  
God is our fortress, in whose conquering name  
Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.

*Bed.* Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.

*Tal.* Not all together: better far, I guess,  
That we do make our entrance several ways;  
That, if it chance the one of us do fail,  
The other yet may rise against their force.

*Bed.* Agreed: I'll to you corner.

*Bur.* And I to this.

*Tal.* And here will Talbot mount or make his grave.—  
Now, Salisbury, for thee, and for the right  
Of English Henry, shall this night appear  
How much in duty I am bound to both.

[*The English scale the Walls, crying St. George!  
a Talbot! and all enter the Town.*]

*Sent.* Arm! arm! the enemy doth make assault!

*The French leap over the Walls in their shirts. Enter,  
several ways, BASTARD, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, half ready  
and half unready.*

*Alen.* How, now my lords? what, all unready so?

*East.* Unready! ay, and glad we 'scap'd so well.

*Reig.* 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,  
Hearing alarums at our chamber-doors.

*Alen.* Of all exploits since first I follow'd arms,  
Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprise  
More venturous or desperate than this.

*Bast.* I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

*Reig.* If not of hell, the heavens, sure, favour him.

*Alen.* Here cometh Charles: I marvel how he sped.

*Bast.* Tut! holy Joan was his defensive guard.

*Enter CHARLES and LA PUCELLE.*

*Char.* Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame?  
Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,  
Make us partakers of a little gain,  
That now our loss might be ten times so much?

*Puc.* Wherefore is Charles impatient with his friend?  
At all times will you have my power alike?  
Sleeping or waking, must I still prevail,  
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?  
Improvident soldiers! had your watch been good  
This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

*Char.* Duke of Alençon, this was your default,  
That, being captain of the watch to-night,  
Did look no better to that weighty charge.

*Alen.* Had all your quarters been as safely kept  
As that whereof I had the government,  
We had not been thus shamefully surpris'd.

*Bast.* Mine was secure.

*Reig.* And so was mine, my lord.

*Char.* And, for myself, most part of all this night,  
Within her quarter and mine own precinct  
I was employ'd in passing to and fro,  
About relieving of the sentinels:  
Then how or which way should they first break in?

*Puc.* Question, my lords, no further of the case,  
How or which way; 'tis sure they found some place  
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.  
And now there rests no other shift but this,—  
To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispers'd,  
And lay new platforms to endamage them.

*Alarum.* Enter an English Soldier, crying a Talbot! a  
Talbot! They fly, leaving their clothes behind.

*Sold.* I'll be so bold to take what they have left.  
The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword;  
For I have loaden me with many spoils,  
Using no other weapon but his name.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—ORLEANS. *Within the Town.*

Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a Captain,  
and others.

*Bed.* The day begins to break, and night is fled,  
Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.  
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.

[*Retreat sounded.*]

*Tal.* Bring forth the body of old Salisbury,  
And here advance it in the market-place,  
The middle centre of this cursed town.  
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul;  
For every drop of blood was drawn from him,  
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.  
And that hereafter ages may behold  
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,  
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect  
A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:

Upon the which, that every one may read,  
 Shall be engrav'd the sack of Orleans,  
 The treacherous manner of his mournful death,  
 And what a terror he had been to France.  
 But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,  
 I muse we meet not with the Dauphin's grace,  
 His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc,  
 Nor any of his false confederates.

*Bed.* 'Tis thought, Lord Talbot, when the fight began,  
 Rous'd on the sudden from their drowsy beds,  
 They did, amongst the troops of armed men,  
 Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.

*Bur.* Myself,—as far as I could well discern  
 For smoke and dusky vapours of the night,—  
 Am sure I scar'd the Dauphin and his trull,  
 When arm in arm they both came swiftly running,  
 Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves,  
 That could not live asunder day or night.  
 After that things are set in order here,  
 We'll follow them with all the power we have.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* All hail, my lords! Which of this princely train  
 Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts  
 So much applauded through the realm of France?

*Tal.* Here is the Talbot: who would speak with him?

*Mess.* The virtuous lady, Countess of Auvergne,  
 With modesty admiring thy renown,  
 By me entreats, great lord, thou wouldst vouchsafe  
 To visit her poor castle where she lies,  
 That she may boast she hath beheld the man  
 Whose glory fills the world with loud report.

*Bur.* Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our wars  
 Will turn unto a peaceful comic sport,  
 When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.—  
 You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.

*Tal.* Ne'er trust me then; for when a world of men  
 Could not prevail with all their oratory,  
 Yet hath a woman's kindness overrul'd:—  
 And therefore tell her I return great thanks,  
 And in submission will attend on her.—  
 Will not your honours bear me company?

*Bed.* No, truly; it is more than manners will:  
 And I have heard it said, unbidden guests  
 Are often welcomest when they are gone.

*Tal.* Well then, alone, since there's no remedy,

I mean to prove this lady's courtesy.—

Come hither, captain. [*Whispers.*] You perceive my mind?

*Capt.* I do, my lord, and mean accordingly. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—AUVERGNE. *Court of the Castle.*

*Enter the COUNTESS and her Porter.*

*Count.* Porter, remember what I gave in charge;  
And when you have done so, bring the keys to me.

*Port.* Madam, I will.

*Count.* The plot is laid: if all things fall out right,  
I shall as famous be by this exploit [*Exit.*]

As Scythian Tomyris by Cyrus' death.

Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,

And his achievements of no less account:

Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,

To give their censure of these rare reports.

*Enter Messenger and TALBOT.*

*Mess.* Madam,  
According as your ladyship desir'd,  
By message crav'd, so is Lord Talbot come.

*Count.* And he is welcome. What! is this the man?

*Mess.* Madam, it is.

*Count.* Is this the scourge of France?  
Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad

That with his name the mothers still their babes?

I see report is fabulous and false:

I thought I should have seen some Hercules,

A second Hector, for his grim aspect,

And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.

Alas, this is a child, a silly dwarf!

It cannot be this weak and writhled shrimp

Should strike such terror to his enemies.

*Tal.* Madam, I have been bold to trouble you;

But since your ladyship is not at leisure,

I'll sort some other time to visit you.

*Count.* What means he now?—Go ask him whither he  
goes. [*Going.*]

*Mess.* Stay, my Lord Talbot: for my lady craves  
To know the cause of your abrupt departure.

*Tal.* Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,  
I go to certify her Talbot's here.

*Re-enter Porter with keys.*

*Count.* If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.

*Tal.* Prisoner! to whom?

*Count.* To me, blood-thirsty lord;  
And for that cause I train'd thee to my house.  
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,  
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:  
But now the substance shall endure the like;  
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,  
That hast by tyranny these many years  
Wasted our country, slain our citizens,  
And sent our sons and husbands captivate.

*Tal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Count.* Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn to  
moan.

*Tal.* I laugh to see your ladyship so fond  
To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow  
Whereon to practise your severity.

*Count.* Why, art not thou the man?

*Tal.* I am indeed.

*Count.* Then have I substance too.

*Tal.* No, no, I am but shadow of myself:  
You are deceiv'd, my substance is not here  
For what you see is but the smallest part  
And least proportion of humanity:  
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,  
It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,  
Your roof were not sufficient to contain 't.

*Count.* This is a riddling merchant for the nonce;  
He will be here, and yet he is not here:  
How can these contrarities agree?

*Tal.* That will I show you presently.

*[He winds a Horn. Drums heard; then a Peal  
of Ordnance. The Gates being forced, enter  
Soldiers.*

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded  
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?  
These are his substance, sinews, arms, and strength,  
With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,  
Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns,  
And in a moment makes them desolate.

*Count.* Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:  
I find thou art no less than fame hath bruted,  
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.  
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath;

For I am sorry that with reverence  
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

*Tal.* Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor misconstrue  
The mind of Talbot as you did mistake  
The outward composition of his body.  
What you have done hath not offended me:  
Nor other satisfaction do I crave  
But only—with your patience—that we may  
Taste of your wine, and see what cates you have;  
For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.

*Count.* With all my heart, and think me honoured  
To feast so great a warrior in my house. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *The Temple Garden.*

*Enter the EARLS OF SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, and WARWICK;  
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VERNON, and another Lawyer.*

*Plan.* Great lords and gentlemen, what means this silence?  
Dare no man answer in a case of truth?

*Suf.* Within the Temple-hall we were too loud;  
The garden here is more convenient.

*Plan.* Then say at once if I maintain'd the truth;  
Or else was wrangling Somerset in the error?

*Suf.* Faith, I have been a truant in the law,  
And never yet could frame my will to it;  
And therefore frame the law unto my will.

*Som.* Judge you, my Lord of Warwick, then, between us

*War.* Between two hawks, which flies the higher pitch;  
Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth;  
Between two blades, which bears the better temper;  
Between two horses, which doth bear him best;  
Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye;—  
I have, perhaps, some shallow spirit of judgment;  
But in these nice sharp quilllets of the law,  
Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.

*Plan.* Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance:  
The truth appears so naked on my side  
That any purblind eye may find it out.

*Som.* And on my side it is so well apparell'd,  
So clear, so shining, and so evident,  
That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.

*Plan.* Since you are tongue-tied and so loth to speak,  
In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts:  
Let him that is a true-born gentleman,  
And stands upon the honour of his birth,



If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,  
From off this brier pluck a white rose with me.

*Som.* Let him that is no coward nor no flatterer,  
But dare maintain the party of the truth,  
Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.

*War.* I love no colours; and, without all colour  
Of base insinuating flattery,  
I pluck this white rose with Plantagenet.

*Suf.* I pluck this red rose with young Somerset;  
And say withal, I think he held the right.

*Ver.* Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck no more  
Till you conclude that he upon whose side  
The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree  
Shall yield the other in the right opinion.

*Som.* Good Master Vernon, it is well objected:  
If I have fewest I subscribe in silence.

*Plan.* And I.

*Ver.* Then, for the truth and plainness of the case,  
I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,  
Giving my verdict on the white rose side.

*Som.* Prick not your finger as you pluck it off,  
Lest, bleeding, you do paint the white rose red,  
And fall on my side so, against your will.

*Ver.* If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,  
Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt,  
And keep me on the side where still I am.

*Som.* Well, well, come on; who else?

*Law.* Unless my study and my books be false,  
The argument you held was wrong in you; [*To SOMERSET.*  
In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too.

*Plan.* Now, Somerset, where is your argument?

*Som.* Here in my scabbard; meditating that  
Shall dye your white rose in a bloody red.

*Plan.* Meantime your cheeks do counterfeit our roses;  
For pale they look with fear, as witnessing  
The truth on our side.

*Som.* No, Plantagenet,  
'Tis not for fear, but anger that thy cheeks  
Blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses,  
And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.

*Plan.* Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset?

*Som.* Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet?

*Plan.* Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain his truth;  
Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood.

*Som.* Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding  
roses,

That shall maintain what I have said is true,  
Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.

*Plan.* Now, by this maiden blossom in my hand,  
I scorn thee and thy faction, peevish boy.

*Suf.* Turn not thy scorns this way, Plantagenet.

*Plan.* Proud Poole, I will; and scorn both him and thee.

*Suf.* I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.

*Som.* Away, away, good William De-la-Poole!

We grace the yeoman by conversing with him.

*War.* Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st him, Somerset;  
His grandfather was Lionel Duke of Clarence,  
Third son to the third Edward King of England:  
Spring crestless yeomen from so deep a root?

*Plan.* He bears him on the place's privilege,  
Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.

*Som.* By him that made me, I'll maintain my words  
On any plot of ground in Christendom.

Was not thy father, Richard Earl of Cambridge,  
For treason executed in our late king's days?

And by his treason stand'st not thou attainted,  
Corrupted, and exempt from ancient gentry?

His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood;

And till thou be restor'd thou art a yeoman.

*Plan.* My father was attach'd, not attainted;  
Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor;

And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset,  
Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.

For your partaker Poole, and you yourself,

I'll note you in my book of memory,

To scourge you for this apprehension:

Look to it well, and say you are well warn'd.

*Som.* Ay, thou shalt find us ready for thee still;

And know us by these colours for thy foes,—

For these my friends, in spite of thee, shall wear.

*Plan.* And, by my soul, this pale and angry rose,

As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,

Will I for ever, and my faction, wear,

Until it wither with me to my grave,

Or flourish to the height of my degree.

*Suf.* Go forward, and be chok'd with thy ambition!

And so, farewell, until I meet thee next.

[*Exit.*

*Som.* Have with thee, Poole.—Farewell, ambitious

Richard.

[*Exit.*

*Plan.* How I am brav'd, and must perforce endure it!

*War.* This blot, that they object against your house,  
Shall be wip'd out in the next Parliament,

Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Gloster  
 And if thou be not then created York,  
 I will not live to be accounted Warwick.  
 Meantime, in signal of my love to thee,  
 Against proud Somerset and William Poole,  
 Will I upon thy party wear this rose:  
 And here I prophesy,—This brawl to-day,  
 Grown to this faction, in the Temple-garden,  
 Shall send, between the red rose and the white,  
 A thousand souls to death and deadly night.

*Plan.* Good Master Vernon, I am bound to you,  
 That you on my behalf would pluck a flower.

*Ver.* In your behalf still will I wear the same.

*Law.* And so will I.

*Plan.* Thanks, gentle sir.

Come, let us four to dinner: I dare say  
 This quarrel will drink blood another day.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—LONDON. *A Room in the Tower.*

*Enter MORTIMER, brought in in a Chair by two Keepers.*

*Mor.* Kind keepers of my weak decaying age,  
 Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.—  
 Even like a man new-haled from the rack,  
 So fare my limbs with long imprisonment;  
 And these gray locks, the pursuivants of death,  
 Nestor-like aged, in an age of care,  
 Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer.  
 These eyes,—like lamps whose wasting oil is spent,—  
 Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent:  
 Weak shoulders, overborne with burdening grief;  
 And pithless arms, like to a wither'd vine  
 That droops his sapless branches to the ground:  
 Yet are these feet,—whose strengthless stay is numb,  
 Unable to support this lump of clay,—  
 Swift-winged with desire to get a grave,  
 As witting I no other comfort have.—  
 But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?

*1 Keep.* Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will come:  
 We sent unto the Temple, to his chamber;  
 And answer was return'd that he will come.

*Mor.* Enough: my soul shall then be satisfied.—  
 Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine.  
 Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign,—  
 Before whose glory I was great in arms,—

This loathsome sequestration have I had ;  
 And even since then hath Richard been obscur'd,  
 Depriv'd of honour and inheritance.  
 But now the arbitrator of despairs,  
 Just death, kind umpire of men's miseries,  
 With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence :  
 I would his troubles likewise were expir'd,  
 That so he might recover what was lost.

*Enter* RICHARD PLANTAGENET.

*I Keep.* My lord, your loving nephew now is come.

*Mor.* Richard Plantagenet, my friend, is he come?

*Plan.* Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly us'd,  
 Your nephew, late-despised Richard, comes

*Mor.* Direct mine arms I may embrace his neck,  
 And in his bosom spend my latter gasp :

O, tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks,  
 That I may kindly give one fainting kiss.—  
 And now declare, sweet stem from York's great stock,  
 Why didst thou say of late thou wert despis'd?

*Plan.* First, lean thine aged back against mine arm ;  
 And, in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease.

This day, in argument upon a case,  
 Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and me ;  
 Among which terms he us'd his lavish tongue,  
 And did upbraid me with my father's death :  
 Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,  
 Else with the like I had requited him.

Therefore, good uncle, for my father's sake,  
 In honour of a true Plantagenet,  
 And for alliance' sake, declare the cause  
 My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head.

*Mor.* That cause, fair nephew, that imprison'd me,  
 And hath detain'd me all my flowering youth  
 Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,  
 Was curs'd instrument of his decease.

*Plan.* Discover more at large what cause that was ;  
 For I am ignorant, and cannot guess.

*Mor.* I will, if that my fading breath permit,  
 And death approach not ere my tale be done.  
 Henry the Fourth, grandfather to this king,  
 Depos'd his nephew Richard,—Edward's son,  
 The first-begotten, and the lawful heir  
 Of Edward king, the third of that descent :  
 During whose reign the Percies of the north,  
 Finding his usurpation most unjust,

Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne:  
 The reason mov'd these warlike lords to this  
 Was, for that,—young King Richard thus remov'd,  
 Leaving no heir begotten of his body,—  
 I was the next by birth and parentage;  
 For by my mother I derived am  
 From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son  
 To King Edward the Third; whereas he  
 From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,  
 Being but fourth of that heroic line.  
 But mark: as in this haughty great attempt  
 They laboured to plant the rightful heir,  
 I lost my liberty, and they their lives.  
 Long after this, when Henry the Fifth,  
 Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,  
 Thy father, Earl of Cambridge, then deriv'd  
 From famous Edmund Langley, Duke of York,  
 Marrying my sister, that thy mother was,  
 Again, in pity of my hard distress,  
 Levied an army, weening to redeem  
 And have install'd me in the diadem:  
 But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl,  
 And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,  
 In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

*Plan.* Of which, my lord, your honour is the last.

*Mor.* True; and thou seest that I no issue have,  
 And that my fainting words do warrant death:  
 Thou art my heir; the rest I wish thee gather:  
 But yet be wary in thy studious care.

*Plan.* Thy grave admonishments prevail with me.  
 But yet methinks my father's execution  
 Was nothing less than bloody tyranny.

*Mor.* With silence, nephew, be thou politic;  
 Strong-fixed is the house of Lancaster,  
 And, like a mountain, not to be remov'd.  
 But now thy uncle is removing hence;  
 As princes do their courts, when they are cloy'd  
 With long continuance in a settled place.

*Plan.* O uncle, would some part of my young years  
 Might but redeem the passage of your age!

*Mor.* Thou dost then wrong me,—as the slaughterer doth  
 Which giveth many wounds when one will kill.  
 Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good;  
 Only, give order for my funeral:  
 And so, farewell; and fair be all thy hopes,  
 And prosperous be thy life in peace and war!

[Dies.]

*Plan.* And peace, no war, befall thy parting soul!  
 In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage,  
 And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.—  
 Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast;  
 And what I do imagine, let that rest.—  
 Keepers, convey him hence; and I myself  
 Will see his burial better than his life.—

[*Exeunt* Keepers, *bearing out the body of MOR.*

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,  
 Chok'd with ambition of the meaner sort:—  
 And for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,  
 Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,  
 I doubt not but with honour to redress;  
 And therefore haste I to the Parliament,  
 Either to be restored to my blood,  
 Or make my ill the advantage of my good.

[*Exit.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *The Parliament House.*

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, EXETER, GLOSTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, and SUFFOLK; the BISHOP OF WINCHESTER, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, and others. GLOSTER offers to put up a bill; WINCHESTER snatches it, and tears it.

*Win.* Com'st thou with deep premeditated lines,  
 With written pamphlets studiously devis'd,  
 Humphrey of Gloster? if thou canst accuse,  
 Or aught intend'st to lay unto my charge,  
 Do it without invention, suddenly:  
 As I with sudden and extemporal speech  
 Purpose to answer what thou canst object.

*Glo.* Presumptuous priest! this place commands my  
 patience,  
 Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour'd me.  
 Think not, although in writing I preferr'd  
 The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,  
 That therefore I have forg'd, or am not able  
 I *exbatim* to rehearse the method of my pen:  
 No, prelate; such is thy audacious wickedness,  
 Thy lewd, pestiferous, and dissentious pranks,  
 As very infants prattle of thy pride.  
 Thou art a most pernicious usurer;

Froward by nature, enemy to peace;  
 Lascivious, wanton, more than well beseems  
 A man of thy profession and degree;  
 And for thy treachery, what's more manifest,—  
 In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,  
 As well at London bridge as at the Tower?  
 Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted,  
 The king, thy sovereign, is not quite exempt  
 From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

*Win.* Gloster, I do defy thee.—Lords, vouchsafe  
 To give me hearing what I shall reply.  
 If I were covetous, ambitious, or perverse,  
 As he will have me, how am I so poor?  
 Or how haps it I seek not to advance  
 Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling?  
 And for dissension, who preferreth peace  
 More than I do,—except I be provok'd?  
 No, my good lords, it is not that offends;  
 It is not that that hath incens'd the duke:  
 It is because no one should sway but he;  
 No one but he should be about the king;  
 And that engenders thunder in his breast,  
 And makes him roar these accusations forth.  
 But he shall know I am as good—

*Glo.* As good!

Thou bastard of my grandfather!—

*Win.* Ay, lordly sir; for what are you, I pray,  
 But one imperious in another's throne?

*Glo.* Am I not protector, saucy priest?

*Win.* And am not I a prelate of the church?

*Glo.* Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps,  
 And useth it to patronage his theft.

*Win.* Unreverent Gloster!

*Glo.* Thou art reverent

Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

*Win.* Rome shall remedy this.

*War.* Roam thither then,

*Som.* My Lord, it were your duty to forbear.

*War.* Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

*Som.* Methinks my lord should be religious,  
 And know the office that belongs to such.

*War.* Methinks his lordship should be humbler;  
 It fitteth not a prelate so to plead.

*Som.* Yes, when his holy state is touch'd so near.

*War.* State holy or unhallow'd, what of that?  
 Is not his grace protector to the king?

*Plan.* Plantagenet, I see, must hold his tongue,  
Lest it be said, *Speak, sirrah, when you should;*  
*Must your bold verdict enter talk with lords?*  
Else would I have a fling at Winchester.

[*Aside.*

*K. Hen.* Uncles of Gloster and of Winchester,  
The special watchmen of our English weal,  
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,  
To join your hearts in love and amity.  
O, what a scandal is it to our crown  
That two such noble peers as ye should jar!  
Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell  
Civil dissension is a viperous worm  
That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth.

[*A noise within, "Down with the tawny coats."*  
What tumult's this?

*War.* An uproar, I dare warrant,  
Begun through malice of the bishop's men!

[*A noise again, "Stones! Stones!"*

*Enter the Mayor of London, attended.*

*May.* O, my good lords,—and virtuous Henry,—  
Pity the city of London, pity us!  
The bishop and the Duke of Gloster's men,  
Forbidden late to carry any weapon,  
Have fill'd their pockets full of pebble stones,  
And, banding themselves in contrary parts,  
Do pelt so fast at one another's pate,  
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:  
Our windows are broke down in every street,  
And we, for fear, compell'd to shut our shops.

*Enter, skirmishing, the Retainers of GLOSTER and WINCHES-  
TER, with bloody pates.*

*K. Hen.* We charge you, on allegiance to ourself,  
To hold your slaughter hands, and keep the peace.—  
Pray, uncle Gloster, mitigate this strife.

*1 Serv.* Nay, if we be  
Forbidden stones, we'll fall to it with our teeth.

*2 Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as resolute.

[*Skirmish again.*

*Glo.* You of my household, leave this peevish broil,  
And set this unaccustom'd fight aside.

*3 Serv.* My lord, we know your grace to be a man  
Just and upright; and for your royal birth  
Inferior to none but to his majesty:  
And ere that we will suffer such a prince,



So kind a father of the commonweal,  
To be disgraced by an inkhorn mate,  
We, and our wives and children, all will fight,  
And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.

*I Serv.* Ay, and the very parings of our nails  
Shall pitch a field when we are dead. [*Skirmish again.*]

*Glo.* Stay, stay, I say!

And if you love me, as you say you do,  
Let me persuade you to forbear awhile.

*K. Hen.* O, how this discord doth afflict my soul!—  
Can you, my Lord of Winchester, behold  
My sighs and tears, and will not once relent?  
Who should be pitiful if you be not?

Or why should study to prefer a peace,  
If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

*War.* Yield, my lord protector;—yield, Winchester;—  
Except you mean, with obstinate repulse,  
To slay your sovereign and destroy the realm.  
You see what mischief, and what murder too,  
Hath been enacted through your enmity;  
Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.

*Win.* He shall submit, or I will never yield.

*Glo.* Compassion on the king commands me stoop;  
Or I would see his heart out, ere the priest  
Should ever get that privilege of me.

*War.* Behold, my Lord of Winchester, the duke  
Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,  
As by his smoothed brows it doth appear:  
Why look you still so stern and tragical?

*Glo.* Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.

*K. Hen.* Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard you preach  
That malice was a great and grievous sin;  
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,  
But prove a chief offender in the same?

*War.* Sweet king!—the bishop hath a kindly gird.—  
For shame, my Lord of Winchester, relent!  
What, shall a child instruct you what to do?

*Win.* Well, Duke of Gloster, I will yield to thee;  
Love for thy love and hand for hand I give.

*Glo.* Ay, but, I fear me, with a hollow heart.—  
See here, my friends and loving countrymen;  
This token serveth for a flag of truce  
Betwixt ourselves and all our followers:  
So help me God, as I dissemble not!

*Win.* So help me God, as I intend it not! [*Aside.*]

*K. Hen.* O loving uncle, kind Duke of Gloster,

How joyful am I made by this contract!—  
 Away, my masters! trouble us no more;  
 But join in friendship, as your lords have done.

1 *Serv.* Content: I'll to the surgeon's.

2 *Serv.* And so will I.

3 *Serv.* And I will see what physic the tavern affords.

[*Exeunt* Servants, Mayor, &c.]

*War.* Accept this scroll, most gracious sovereign;  
 Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet  
 We do exhibit to your majesty.

*Glo.* Well urg'd, my Lord of Warwick;—for, sweet prince,  
 An if your grace mark every circumstance,  
 You have great reason to do Richard right;  
 Especially for those occasions  
 At Eltham Place I told your majesty.

*K. Hen.* And those occasions, uncle, were of force:  
 Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is  
 That Richard be restored to his blood.

*War.* Let Richard be restored to his blood;  
 So shall his father's wrongs be recompens'd.

*Win.* As will the rest, so willeth Winchester.

*K. Hen.* If Richard will be true, not that alone,  
 But all the whole inheritance I give  
 That doth belong unto the house of York,  
 From whence you spring by lineal descent.

*Plan.* Thy humble servant vows obedience  
 And humble service till the point of death.

*K. Hen.* Stoop, then, and set your knee against my foot,  
 And in reguerdon of that duty done  
 I girt thee with the valiant sword of York:  
 Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet,  
 And rise created princely Duke of York.

*Plan.* And so thrive Richard as thy foes may fall!  
 And as my duty springs, so perish they  
 That grudge one thought against your majesty!

*All.* Welcome, high prince, the mighty Duke of York!

*Som.* Perish, base prince, ignoble Duke of York! [*Aside.*]

*Glo.* Now will it best avail your majesty  
 To cross the seas, and to be crown'd in France:  
 The presence of a king engenders love  
 Amongst his subjects and his loyal friends,  
 As it disanimates his enemies.

*K. Hen.* When Gloster says the word, King Henry goes;  
 For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.

*Glo.* Your ships already are in readiness.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt* all but EXETER.]

*Ecc.* Ay, we may march in England or in France,  
 Not seeing what is likely to ensue.  
 This late dissension grown betwixt the peers  
 Burns under feigned ashes of forg'd love,  
 And will at last break out into a flame:  
 As fester'd members rot but by degree,  
 Till bones and flesh and sinews fall away,  
 So will this base and envious discord breed.  
 And now I fear that fatal prophecy  
 Which in the time of Henry named the Fifth  
 Was in the mouth of every sucking babe,—  
 That Henry born at Monmouth should win all,  
 And Henry born at Windsor should lose all:  
 Which is so plain that Exeter doth wish  
 His days may finish ere that hapless time. [Exit.

SCENE II.—FRANCE. *Before Rouen.*

*Enter LA PUCELLE disguised, and Soldiers dressed like  
 Countrymen, with sacks upon their backs.*

*Puc.* These are the city-gates, the gates of Rouen,  
 Through which our policy must make a breach:  
 Take heed, be wary how you place your words;  
 Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men  
 That come to gather money for their corn.  
 If we have entrance,—as I hope we shall,—  
 And that we find the slothful watch but weak,  
 I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,  
 That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them.

*I Sold.* Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city,  
 And we be lords and rulers over Rouen;  
 Therefore we'll knock. [Knocks.

*Guard.* [within.] *Qui est là?*

*Puc.* *Paysans, pauvres gens de France,—*  
 Poor market-folks that come to sell their corn.

*Guard.* [opening the gates.] Enter, go in; the market-  
 bell is rung.

*Puc.* Now, Rouen, I'll shake thy bulwarks to the ground.  
[LA PUCELLE, &c., enter the Town.

*Enter CHARLES, BASTARD OF ORLEANS, ALENÇON, and  
 Forces.*

*Char.* Saint Denis bless this happy stratagem!  
 And once again we'll sleep secure in Rouen.

*Bast.* Here enter'd Pucelle and her practisants;

Now she is there, how will she specify  
Where is the best and safest passage in?

*Alen.* By thrusting out a torch from yonder tower;  
Which, once discern'd, shows that her meaning is,—  
No way to that, for weakness, which she enter'd.

*Enter LA PUCELLE on a battlement, holding out a torch burning.*

*Puc.* Behold, this is the happy wedding-torch  
That joineth Rouen unto her countrymen,  
But burning fatal to the Talbotites.

*Bast.* See, noble Charles, the beacon of our friend;  
The burning torch in yonder turret stands.

*Char.* Now shine it like a comet of revenge,  
A prophet to the fall of all our foes!

*Alen.* Defer no time, delays have dangerous ends;  
Enter, and cry *The Dauphin!* presently,  
And then do execution on the watch.

*[They enter. Exit LA PUCELLE above.]*

*Alarum. Enter, from the Town, TALBOT and English Soldiers.*

*Tal.* France, thou shalt rue this treason with thy tears,  
If Talbot but survive thy treachery.—  
*Pucelle*, that witch, that damned sorceress,  
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,  
That hardly we escap'd the pride of France.

*[Exeunt into the Town.]*

*Alarum: excursions. Enter, from the Town, BEDFORD, brought in sick in a chair, with TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and the English Forces. Then enter on the walls LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, BASTARD, ALENÇON, and others.*

*Puc.* Good-morrow, gallants! want ye corn for bread?  
I think the Duke of Burgundy will fast  
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:  
'Twas fill of darnel;—do you like the taste?

*Bur.* Sc off on, vile fiend and shameless courtezán!  
I trust ere long to choke thee with thine own,  
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

*Char.* Your grace may starve, perhaps, before that time.

*Bed.* O let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!

*Puc.* What will you do, good gray-beard? break a lance,  
And run a tilt at death within a chair?

*Tal.* Foul fiend of France, and hag of all despite,  
Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!

Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,  
 And twit with cowardice a man half dead?  
 Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,  
 Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.

*Puc.* Are you so hot, sir?—Yet, Pucelle, hold thy peace;  
 If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.

[*TALBOT and the rest consult together.*]

God speed the parliament! who shall be the speaker?

*Tal.* Dare ye come forth and meet us in the field?

*Puc.* Belike your lordship takes us then for fools,  
 To try if that our own be ours or no.

*Tal.* I speak not to that railing Hecaté,  
 But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest;  
 Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?

*Alen.* Signior, no.

*Tal.* Signior, hang!—base muleteers of France!  
 Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls,  
 And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.

*Puc.* Away, captains! let's get us from the walls;  
 For Talbot means no goodness, by his looks.—  
 God b' wi' you, my lord! we came but to tell you  
 That we are here. [*Exeunt LA PUC., &c., from the Walls.*]

*Tal.* And there will we be too, ere it be long,  
 Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!—  
 Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house,—  
 Prick'd on by public wrongs sustain'd in France,—  
 Either to get the town again or die;  
 And I,—as sure as English Henry lives,  
 And as his father here was conqueror;  
 As sure as in this late-betrayed town  
 Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was buried,—  
 So sure I swear to get the town or die.

*Bur.* My vows are equal partners with thy vows.

*Tal.* But ere we go, regard this dying prince,  
 The valiant Duke of Bedford.—Come, my lord,  
 We will bestow you in some better place,  
 Fitter for sickness and for crazy age.

*Bed.* Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me:  
 Here will I sit before the walls of Rouen,  
 And will be partner of your weal or woe.

*Bur.* Courageous Bedford, let us now persuade you.

*Bed.* Not to be gone from hence; for once I read  
 That stout Pendragon, in his litter, sick  
 Came to the field, and vanquished his foes:  
 Methinks I should revive the soldiers' hearts,  
 Because I ever found them as myself.

*Tal.* Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!—  
Then be it so:—heavens keep old Bedford safe!—  
And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,  
But gather we our forces out of hand,  
And set upon our boasting enemy.

[*Exeunt into the Town, BUR., TAL., and  
Forces, leaving BED. and others.*]

*Alarum: excursions. Enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE, and a Captain.*

*Cap.* Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste?

*Fast.* Whither away! to save myself by flight:  
We are like to have the overthrow again.

*Cap.* What! will you fly, and leave Lord Talbot?

*Fast.* Ay,  
All the Talbots in the world, to save my life. [*Exit.*]

*Cap.* Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee!

[*Exit into the Town.*]

*Retreat: excursions. Re-enter, from the Town, LA PUCELLE,  
ALENÇON, CHARLES, &c., and exeunt flying.*

*Bed.* Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven please,  
For I have seen our enemies' overthrow.

What is the trust or strength of foolish man?  
They that of late were daring with their scoffs  
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.

[*Dies, and is carried off in his chair.*]

*Alarum. Re-enter TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and others.*

*Tal.* Lost and recover'd in a day again!  
This is a double honour, Burgundy:  
Yet heavens have glory for this victory!

*Bur.* Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy  
Enshrines thee in his heart; and there erects  
Thy noble deeds, as valour's monuments.

*Tal.* Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now?  
I think her old familiar is asleep:  
Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his gleeks?  
What, all a-mort? Ronen hangs her head for grief  
That such a valiant company are fled.  
Now will we take some order in the town,  
Placing therein some expert officers;  
And then depart to Paris to the king,  
For there young Harry with his nobles lie.

*Bur.* What wills Lord Talbot pleaseth Burgundy.

*Tal.* But yet, before we go, let's not forget  
The noble Duke of Bedford, late deceas'd,

But see his exequies fulfill'd in Rouen :  
 A braver soldier never couched lance,  
 A gentler heart did never sway in court ;  
 But kings and mightiest potentates must die,  
 For that's the end of human misery.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Plains near Rouen.*

*Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE,  
 and Forces.*

*Puc.* Dismay not, princes, at this accident.  
 Nor grieve that Rouen is so recovered :  
 Care is no cure, but rather corrosive,  
 For things that are not to be remedied.  
 Let frantic Talbot triumph for awhile,  
 And like a peacock sweep along his tail ;  
 We'll pull his plumes and take away his train,  
 If Dauphin and the rest will be but rul'd.

*Char.* We have been guided by thee hitherto,  
 And of thy cunning had no diffidence :  
 One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.

*Bast.* Search out thy wit for secret policies,  
 And we will make thee famous through the world.

*Alen.* We'll set thy statue in some holy place,  
 And have thee reverenc'd like a blessed saint :  
 Employ thee, then, sweet virgin, for our good.

*Puc.* Then thus it must be ; this doth Joan devise :  
 By fair persuasions, mix'd with sugar'd words,  
 We will entice the Duke of Burgundy  
 To leave the Talbot and to follow us.

*Char.* Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,  
 France were no place for Henry's warriors ;  
 Nor should that nation boast it so with us,  
 But be extirped from our provinces.

*Alen.* For ever should they be expuls'd from France,  
 And not have title of an earldom here.

*Puc.* Your honours shall perceive how I will work  
 To bring this matter to the wished end. [*Drums heard.*]  
 Hark ! by the sound of drum you may perceive  
 Their powers are marching unto Paris-ward.

*An English March. Enter, and pass over at a distance,  
 TALBOT and his Forces.*

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread,  
 And all the troops of English after him.

*A French March.* Enter the DUKE OF BURGUNDY and his Forces.

Now in the rearward comes the duke and his:  
 Fortune in favour makes him lag behind.  
 Summon a parley; we will talk with him.

[*A parley sounded.*]

*Char.* A parley with the Duke of Burgundy!

*Bur.* Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?

*Puc.* The princely Charles of France, thy countryman.

*Bur.* What say'st thou, Charles? for I am marching hence.

*Char.* Speak, Pucelle, and enchant him with thy words.

*Puc.* Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France!

Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.

*Bur.* Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

*Puc.* Look on thy country, look on fertile France,

And see the cities and the towns defac'd

By wasting ruin of the cruel foe!

As looks the mother on her lovely babe

When death doth close his tender dying eyes,

See, see the pining malady of France;

Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds,  
 Which thou thyself hast given her woeful breast!

O, turn thy edged sword another way;

Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help!

One drop of blood drawn from thy country's bosom

Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign gore:

Return thee, therefore, with a flood of tears,

And wash away thy country's stained spots.

*Bur.* Either she hath bewitch'd me with her words,

Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

*Puc.* Besides, all French and France exclaims on thee,

Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.

Who join'st thou with but with a lordly nation

That will not trust thee but for profit's sake?

When Talbot hath set footing once in France,

And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill,

Who then but English Henry will be lord,

And thou be thrust out like a fugitive?

Call we to mind,—and mark but this for proof,—

Was not the Duke of Orleans thy foe?

And was he not in England prisoner?

But when they heard he was thine enemy,

They set him free, without his ransom paid,

In spite of Burgundy and all his friends.

See, then, thou fight'st against thy countrymen,



And join'st with them will be thy slaughter-men.  
Come, come, return; return, thou wand'ring lord;  
Charles and the rest will take thee in their arms.

*Bur.* I am vanquished; these haughty words of hers  
Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,  
And made me almost yield upon my knees.—  
Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen!  
And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:  
My forces and my power of men are yours:  
So, farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.

*Puc.* Done like a Frenchman,—turn, and turn again!

*Char.* Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship makes us  
fresh.

*Bast.* And doth beget new courage in our breasts.

*Alen.* Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part in this,  
And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

*Char.* Now let us on, my lords, and join our powers;  
And seek how we may prejudice the foe. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—PARIS. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, and other Lords, VERNON,  
BASSET, &c. *To them* TALBOT and some of his Officers.

*Tal.* My gracious prince,—and honourable peers,—  
Hearing of your arrival in this realm,  
I have awhile given truce unto my wars,  
To do my duty to my sovereign:  
In sign whereof, this arm,—that hath reclaim'd  
To your obedience fifty fortresses,  
Twelve cities, and seven walled towns of strength,  
Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,—  
Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet,  
And with submissive loyalty of heart  
Ascribes the glory of his conquest got  
First to my God and next unto your grace.

*K. Hen.* Is this the Lord Talbot, uncle Gloster,  
That hath so long been resident in France?

*Glo.* Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Welcome, brave captain and victorious lord!  
When I was young,—as yet I am not old,—  
I do remember how my father said  
A stouter champion never handled sword.  
Long since we were resolved of your truth,  
Your faithful service, and your toil in war;  
Yet never have you tasted our reward,

Or been reguerdon'd with so much as thanks,  
 Because till now we never saw your face:  
 Therefore, stand up; and for these good deserts  
 We here create you Earl of Shrewsbury;  
 And in our coronation take your place.

[*Exeunt* K. HEN., GLO., TAL., and Nobles.

*Ver.* Now, sir, to you, that were so hot at sea,  
 Disgracing of these colours that I wear  
 In honour of my noble Lord of York,—  
 Dar'st thou maintain the former words thou spak'st?

*Bas.* Yes, sir; as well as you dare patronage  
 The envious barking of your saucy tongue  
 Against my lord the Duke of Somerset.

*Ver.* Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.

*Bas.* Why, what is he? as good a man as York.

*Ver.* Hark ye; not so: in witness, take ye that.

[*Strikes him.*

*Bas.* Villain, thou know'st the law of arms is such  
 That whoso draws a sword 'tis present death,  
 Or else this blow should broach thy dearest blood.  
 But I'll unto his majesty, and crave  
 I may have liberty to venge this wrong;  
 When thou shalt see I'll meet thee to thy cost.

*Ver.* Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as you;  
 And, after, meet you sooner than you would. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—PARIS. *A Room of State.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, EXETER, YORK, SUFFOLK,  
 SOMERSET, WINCHESTER, WARWICK, TALBOT, the Govern-  
 or of Paris, and others.

*Glo.* Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head.

*Win.* God save King Henry, of that name the sixth!

*Glo.* Now, governor of Paris, take your oath,—

[*Governor kneels.*

That you elect no other king but him;  
 Esteem none friends but such as are his friends,  
 And none your foes but such as shall pretend  
 Malicious practices against his state:

This shall ye do, so help you righteous God!

[*Exeunt* Gov. and his Train.

*Enter* SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

*Fast.* My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais,  
To haste unto your coronation,  
A letter was deliver'd to my hands,  
Writ to your grace from the Duke of Burgundy.

*Tal.* Shame to the Duke of Burgundy and thee!  
I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next,  
To tear the garter from thy craven's leg,— [*Plucking it off.*]  
Which I have done,—because unworthily  
Thou wast installed in that high degree.—  
Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:  
This dastard, at the battle of Patay,  
When but in all I was six thousand strong,  
And that the French were almost ten to one,—  
Before we met, or that a stroke was given,  
Like to a trusty squire, did run away:  
In which assault we lost twelve hundred men;  
Myself, and divers gentlemen beside,  
Were there surpris'd and taken prisoners.  
Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss;  
Or whether that such cowards ought to wear  
This ornament of knighthood, yea or no.

*Glo.* To say the truth, this fact was infamous,  
And ill beseeming any common man,  
Much more a knight, a captain, and a leader.

*Tal.* When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,  
Knights of the garter were of noble birth,  
Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty courage,  
Such as were grown to credit by the wars;  
Not fearing death nor shrinking for distress,  
But always resolute in most extremes.  
He, then, that is not furnish'd in this sort  
Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight,  
Profaning this most honourable order,  
And should,—if I were worthy to be judge,—  
Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain  
That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

*K. Hen.* Stain to thy countrymen, thou hear'st thy doom!  
Be packing, therefore, thou that wast a knight:  
Henceforth we banish thee, on pain of death. [*Exit* FAST.  
And now, my lord protector, view the letter  
Sent from our uncle Duke of Burgundy.

*Glo.* What means his grace, that he hath chang'd his  
style? [*Viewing the superscription.*]  
No more but, plain and bluntly, *To the King?*

Hath he forgot he is his sovereign?  
 Or doth this churlish superscription  
 Pretend some alteration in good-will?  
 What 's here?—[Reads.]—*I have, upon especial cause,—*  
*Mov'd with compassion of my country's wreck,*  
*Together with the pitiful complaints*  
*Of such as your oppression feeds upon,—*  
*Forsaken your pernicious faction,*  
*And join'd with Charles, the rightful King of France.*

O monstrous treachery! Can this be so,—

That in alliance, amity, and oaths,

There should be found such false dissembling guile?

*K. Hen.* What! doth my uncle Burgundy revolt?

*Glo.* He doth, my lord; and is become your foe.

*K. Hen.* Is that the worst this letter doth contain?

*Glo.* It is the worst, and all, my lord, he writes.

*K. Hen.* Why, then, Lord Talbot there shall talk with  
 him,

And give him chastisement for this abuse:—

How say you, my lord, are you not content?

*Tal.* Content, my liege! yes; but that I am prevented,  
 I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd.

*K. Hen.* Then gather strength, and march unto him  
 straight:

Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason,

And what offence it is to flout his friends.

*Tal.* I go, my lord; in heart desiring still

You may behold confusion of your foes.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter VERNON and BASSET.*

*Ver.* Grant me the combat, gracious sovereign!

*Bas.* And me, my lord, grant me the combat too!

*York.* This is my servant: hear him, noble prince!

*Som.* And this is mine: sweet Henry, favour him!

*K. Hen.* Be patient, lords; and give them leave to speak.—

Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim?

And wherefore crave you combat? or with whom?

*Ver.* With him, my lord; for he hath done me wrong.

*Bas.* And I with him; for he hath done me wrong.

*K. Hen.* What is that wrong whereof you both complain?  
 First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

*Bas.* Crossing the sea from England into France,

This fellow here, with envious carping tongue,

Upbraided me about the rose I wear;

Saying the sanguine colour of the leaves

Did represent my master's blushing cheeks,

When stubbornly he did repugn the truth  
 About a certain question in the law  
 Argu'd betwixt the Duke of York and him;  
 With other vile and ignominious terms:  
 In confutation of which rude reproach,  
 And in defence of my lord's worthiness,  
 I crave the benefit of law of arms.

*Ver.* And that is my petition, noble lord:  
 For though he seem with forged quaint conceit  
 To set a gloss upon his bold intent,  
 Yet know, my lord, I was provok'd by him;  
 And he first took exceptions at this badge,  
 Pronouncing that the paleness of this flower  
 Bewray'd the faintness of my master's heart.

*York.* Will not this malice, Somerset, be left?

*Som.* Your private grudge, my Lord of York, will out,  
 Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it.

*K. Hen.* Good Lord, what madness rules in brainsick  
 When for so slight and frivolous a cause . . . [men,  
 Such factious emulations shall arise!—  
 Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,  
 Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace.

*York.* Let this dissension first be tried by fight,  
 And then your highness shall command a peace.

*Som.* The quarrel toucheth none but us alone;  
 Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then.

*York.* There is my pledge; accept it, Somerset.

*Ver.* Nay, let it rest where it began at first.

*Bas.* Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.

*Glo.* Confirm it so! Confounded be your strife!  
 And perish ye, with your audacious prate!  
 Presumptuous vassals, are you not asham'd  
 With this immodest clamorous outrage  
 To trouble and disturb the king and us?—  
 And you, my lords,—methinks you do not well  
 To bear with their perverse objections;  
 Much less to take occasion from their mouths  
 To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves:  
 Let me persuade you take a better course.

*Exe.* It grieves his highness:—my good lords, be friends.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, you that would be combatants:  
 Henceforth I charge you, as you love our favour,  
 Quite to forget this quarrel and the cause.—  
 And you, my lords, remember where we are;  
 In France, amongst a fickle wavering nation:  
 If they perceive dissension in our looks,

And that within ourselves we disagree,  
 How will their grudging stomachs be provok'd  
 To wilful disobedience, and rebel!  
 Beside, what infamy will there arise,  
 When foreign princes shall be certified  
 That for a toy, a thing of no regard,  
 King Henry's peers and chief nobility  
 Destroy'd themselves and lost the realm of France!  
 O, think upon the conquest of my father;  
 My tender years; and let us not forego  
 That for a trifle that was bought with blood!  
 Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.  
 I see no reason, if I wear this rose, [*Putting on a red rose.*  
 That any one should therefore be suspicious  
 I more incline to Somerset than York:  
 Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both:  
 As well they may upbraid me with my crown,  
 Because, forsooth, the King of Scots is crown'd.  
 But your discretions better can persuade  
 Than I am able to instruct or teach:  
 And therefore, as we hither came in peace,  
 So let us still continue peace and love.—  
 Cousin of York, we institute your grace  
 To be our regent in these parts of France:—  
 And, good my Lord of Somerset, unite  
 Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot;  
 And like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,  
 Go cheerfully together, and digest  
 Your angry choler on your enemies.  
 Ourself, my lord protector, and the rest,  
 After some respite, will return to Calais;  
 From thence to England; where I hope ere long  
 To be presented, by your victories,  
 With Charles, Alençon, and that traitorous rout.

[*Flourish. Exeunt K. HEN., GLO., SOM.,  
 WIN., SUF., and BAS.*

*War.* My Lord of York, I promise you, the king  
 Prettily, methought, did play the orator.

*York.* And so he did; but yet I like it not,  
 In that he wears the badge of Somerset.

*War.* Tush, that was but his fancy, blame him not;  
 I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no harm.

*York.* An if I wist he did,—but let it rest;  
 Other affairs must now be managed.

[*Exeunt YORK, WAR., and VER.*

*Exc.* Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress thy voice:

For had the passions of thy heart burst out,  
 I fear we should have seen decipher'd there  
 More rancorous spite, more furious raging broils,  
 Than yet can be imagin'd or suppos'd.  
 But howsoe'er, no simple man that sees  
 This jarring discord of nobility,  
 This shouldering of each other in the court,  
 This factious bandying of their favourites,  
 But that it doth presage some ill event.  
 'Tis much when sceptres are in children's hands;  
 But more when envy breeds unkind division;  
 There comes the ruin, there begins confusion.

[Exit

SCENE II.—FRANCE. *Before Bourdeaux.**Enter TALBOT, with his Forces.*

*Tal.* Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trumpeter:  
 Summon their general unto the wall.

*Trumpet sounds a parley. Enter, on the Walls, the General  
 of the French Forces, and others.*

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,  
 Servant in arms to Harry King of England;  
 And thus he would,—Open your city gates;  
 Be humble to us; call my sovereign yours,  
 And do him homage as obedient subjects;  
 And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power:  
 But if you frown upon this proffer'd peace  
 You tempt the fury of my three attendants,  
 Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing fire;  
 Who, in a moment, even with the earth  
 Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,  
 If you forsake the offer of their love.

*Gen.* Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,  
 Our nation's terror and their bloody scourge!  
 The period of thy tyranny approacheth.  
 On us thou canst not enter but by death;  
 For, I protest, we are well fortified,  
 And strong enough to issue out and fight:  
 If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,  
 Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee:  
 On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd,  
 To wall thee from the liberty of flight;  
 And no way canst thou turn thee for redress  
 But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,

And pale destruction meets thee in the face.  
 Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament,  
 To rive their dangerous artillery  
 Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot.  
 Lo, there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant man,  
 Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit!  
 This is the latest glory of thy praise  
 That I, thy enemy, due thee withal;  
 For ere the glass that now begins to run  
 Finish the process of his sandy hour,  
 These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,  
 Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale, and dead.

[*Drum afar off*  
 Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum, a warning bell,  
 Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul;  
 And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.

[*Exeunt General, &c. from the Walls.*

*Tal.* He fables not; I hear the enemy:—  
 Out, some light horsemen, and peruse their wings.—  
 O, negligent and heedless discipline!  
 How are we park'd and bounded in a pale,—  
 A little herd of England's timorous deer,  
 Maz'd with a yelping kennel of French curs!  
 If we be English deer, be, then, in blood;  
 Not rascal-like to fall down with a pinch,  
 But rather, moody-mad and desperate stags,  
 Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel,  
 And make the cowards stand aloof at bay:  
 Sell every man his life as dear as mine,  
 And they shall find dear deer of us, my friends.—  
 God and Saint George, Talbot and England's right,  
 Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*Plains in Gascony.*

*Enter YORK, with Forces; to him a Messenger.*

*York.* Are not the speedy scouts return'd again,  
 That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin?

*Mess.* They are return'd, my lord; and give it out  
 That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his power,  
 To fight with Talbot: as he march'd along,  
 By your espials were discovered

Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led,  
 Which join'd with him, and made their march for Bour-

*York.* A plague upon that villain Somerset, [deaux.



That thus delays my promised supply  
 Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege!  
 Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid;  
 And I am louted by a traitor villain,  
 And cannot help the noble chevalier:  
 God comfort him in this necessity!  
 If he miscarry, farewell wars in France.

*Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY.*

*Lucy.* Thou princely leader of our English strength,  
 Never so needful on the earth of France,  
 Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot,  
 Who now is girdled with a waist of iron,  
 And hemm'd about with grim destruction:  
 To Bourdeaux, warlike duke! to Bourdeaux, York!  
 Else, farewell Talbot, France, and England's honour.

*York.* O God, that Somerset,—who in proud heart  
 Doth stop my cornets,—were in Talbot's place!  
 So should we save a valiant gentleman  
 By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.  
 Mad ire and wrathful fury makes me weep,  
 That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.

*Lucy.* O, send some succour to the distress'd lord!

*York.* He dies, we lose; I break my warlike word;  
 We mourn, France smiles; we lose, they daily get;  
 All 'long of this vile traitor Somerset.

*Lucy.* Then God take mercy on brave Talbot's soul;  
 And on his son, young John, who two hours since  
 I met in travel toward his warlike father!  
 This seven years did not Talbot see his son;  
 And now they meet where both their lives are done.

*York.* Alas, what joy shall noble Talbot have  
 To bid his young son welcome to his grave?  
 Away! vexation almost stops my breath,  
 That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death.—  
 Lucy, farewell: no more my fortune can,  
 But curse the cause I cannot aid the man.—  
 Maine, Blois, Poitiers, and Tours are won away,  
 'Long all of Somerset and his delay. [*Exit, with Forces.*]

*Lucy.* Thus, while the vulture of sedition  
 Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,  
 Sleeping neglectation doth betray to loss  
 The conquest of our scarce-cold conqueror,  
 That ever-living man of memory,  
 Henry the Fifth:—whiles they each other cross,  
 Lives, honours, lands, and all, hurry to loss.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*Other Plains of Gascony.*

*Enter SOMERSET, with his Forces; an Officer of TALBOT'S with him.*

*Som.* It is too late; I cannot send them now:  
This expedition was by York and Talbot  
Too rashly plotted; all our general force  
Might with a sally of the very town  
Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot  
Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour  
By this unheedful, desperate, wild adventure:  
York set him on to fight and die in shame,  
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the name.

*Off.* Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me  
Set from our o'er-matched forces forth for aid.

*Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY.*

*Som.* How now, Sir William! whither were you sent?

*Lucy.* Whither, my lord! from bought and sold Lord  
Who, ring'd about with bold adversity, [Talbot;  
Cries out for noble York and Somerset,  
To beat assailing death from his weak legions:  
And whiles the honourable captain there  
Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,  
And, in advantage lingering, looks for rescue,  
You, his false hopes, the trust of England's honour,  
Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.  
Let not your private discord keep away  
The levied succours that should lend him aid,  
While he, renowned noble gentleman,  
Yields up his life unto a world of odds:  
Orleans the Bastard, Charles, Burgundy,  
Alençon, Reignier, compass him about,  
And Talbot perisheth by your default.

*Som.* York set him on, York should have sent him aid.

*Lucy.* And York as fast upon your grace exclaims;  
Swearing that you withhold his levied horse,  
Collected for this expedition.

*Som.* York lies; he might have sent and had the horse:  
I owe him little duty and less love;  
And take foul scorn to fawn on him by sending.

*Lucy.* The fraud of England, not the force of France,  
Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot:  
Never to England shall he bear his life;  
But dies betray'd to fortune by your strife.

*Som.* Come, go; I will despatch the horsemen straight:  
Within six hours they will be at his aid.

*Lucy.* Too late comes rescue; he is ta'en or slain:  
For fly he could not, if he would have fled;  
And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

*Som.* If he be dead, brave Talbot, then, adieu!

*Lucy.* His fame lives in the world, his shame in you.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*The English Camp near Bourdeaux.*

*Enter TALBOT and JOHN his Son.*

*Tal.* O young John Talbot! I did send for thee  
To tutor thee in stratagems of war,  
That Talbot's name might be in thee reviv'd  
When sapless age and weak unable limbs  
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.

But,—O malignant and ill-boding stars!—  
Now thou art come unto a feast of death,  
A terrible and unavoided danger:

Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest horse;  
And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape  
By sudden flight: come, dally not, begone.

*John.* Is my name Talbot? and am I your son?

And shall I fly? O, if you love my mother,  
Dishonour not her honourable name,  
To make a bastard and a slave of me!

The world will say, he is not Talbot's blood  
That basely fled when noble Talbot stood.

*Tal.* Fly to revenge my death, if I be slain.

*John.* He that flies so will ne'er return again.

*Tal.* If we both stay we both are sure to die.

*John.* Then let me stay; and, father, do you fly:

Your loss is great, so your regard should be;

My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.

Upon my death the French can little boast;

In yours they will, in you all hopes are lost.

Flight cannot stain the honour you have won;

But mine it will, that no exploit have done;

You fled for vantage, every one will swear;

But if I bow, they'll say it was for fear.

There is no hope that ever I will stay,

If the first hour I shrink and run away.

Here, on my knee, I beg mortality,

Rather than life preserv'd with infamy.

*Tal.* Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one tomb?

*John.* Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's womb.

*Tal.* Upon my blessing I command thee go.

*John.* To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

*Tal.* Part of thy father may be sav'd in thee.

*John.* No part of him but will be shame in me.

*Tal.* Thou never hadst renown, nor canst not lose it.

*John.* Yes, your renowned name: shall flight abuse it.

*Tal.* Thy father's charge shall clear thee from that stain.

*John.* You cannot witness for me, being slain.

If death be so apparent, then both fly.

*Tal.* And leave my followers here to fight and die?

My age was never tainted with such shame.

*John.* And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?

No more can I be sever'd from your side

Than can yourself yourself in twain divide:

Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;

For live I will not if my father die.

*Tal.* Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.

Come, side by side together live and die;

And soul with soul from France to heaven fly. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Fie'd of Battle.*

*Alarum: excursions, wherein TALBOT'S SON is hemmed about, and TALBOT rescues him.*

*Tal.* Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight:  
The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,  
And left us to the rage of France his sword.  
Where is John Talbot?—pause, and take thy breath;  
I gave thee life and rescu'd thee from death.

*John.* O, twice my father, twice am I thy son!  
The life thou gav'st me first was lost and done,  
Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,  
To my determin'd time thou gav'st new date.

*Tal.* When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck  
fire,  
It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire  
Of bold-fac'd victory. Then leaden age,  
Quicken'd with youthful spleen and warlike rage,  
Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,  
And from the pride of Gallia rescu'd thee.  
The ireful bastard Orleans,—that drew blood  
From thee, my boy, and had the maidenhood  
Of thy first fight,—I soon encountered,

And, interchanging blows, I quickly shed  
 Some of his bastard blood; and, in disgrace,  
 Bespoke him thus,—*Contaminated, base,  
 And misbegotten blood I spill of thine,  
 Mean and right poor, for that pure blood of mine  
 Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy:—*

Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy,  
 Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's care,—  
 Art thou not weary, John? how dost thou fare?

Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,  
 Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?  
 Fly, to revenge my death when I am dead:  
 The help of one stands me in little stead.

O, too much folly is it, well I wot,  
 To hazard all our lives in one small boat!  
 If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,  
 To-morrow I shall die with mickle age:  
 By me they nothing gain an if I stay,—  
 'Tis but the short'ning of my life one day:  
 In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,  
 My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's fame:  
 All these, and more, we hazard by thy stay;  
 All these are sav'd if thou wilt fly away.

*John.* The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart;  
 These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart:  
 On that advantage, bought with such a shame,—  
 To save a paltry life, and slay bright fame,—  
 Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,  
 The coward horse that bears me fall and die!  
 And like me to the peasant boys of France;  
 To be shame's scorn, and subject of mischance!  
 Surely, by all the glory you have won,  
 An if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:  
 Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;  
 If son to Talbot, die at Talbot's foot.

*Tal.* Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,  
 Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet:  
 If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;  
 And, commendable prov'd, let's die in pride.

[*Exeunt*

SCENE VII.—*Another part of the same.*

*Alarum: excursions.* Enter TALBOT wounded, supported by  
 a Servant.

*Tal.* Where is my other life?—mine own is gone;—

O, where's young Talbot? where is valiant John?—  
 Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity,  
 Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:—  
 When he perceiv'd me shrink and on my knee,  
 His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,  
 And like a hungry lion did commence  
 Rough deeds of rage and stern impatience;  
 But when my angry guardant stood alone,  
 Tendering my ruin, and assail'd of none,  
 Dizzy-ey'd fury and great rage of heart  
 Suddenly made him from my side to start  
 Into the clustering battle of the French;  
 And in that sea of blood my boy did drench  
 His overmounting spirit; and there died  
 My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

*Serv.* O my dear lord! lo where your son is borne!

*Enter Soldiers, bearing the body of JOHN TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Thou antic death, which laugh'st us here to scorn,  
 Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,  
 Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,  
 Two Talbots, winged through the lither sky,  
 In thy despite, shall 'scape mortality.—  
 O thou whose wounds become hard-favour'd death,  
 Speak to thy father ere thou yield thy breath!  
 Brave death by speaking, whether he will or no;  
 Imagine him a Frenchman and thy foe.—  
 Poor boy! he smiles, methinks, as who should say,  
 Had death been French, then death had died to-day.—  
 Come, come, and lay him in his father's arms:  
 My spirit can no longer bear these harms.  
 Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,  
 Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave. [Dies.

*Alarums. Exeunt Soldiers and Servant, leaving the two bodies. Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, BURGUNDY, BASTARD, LA PUCELLE, and Forces.*

*Char.* Had York and Somerset brought rescue in,  
 We should have found a bloody day of this.

*Bast.* How the young whelp of Talbot's, raging-wood,  
 Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood!

*Puc.* Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said,  
*Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a maid:*  
 But, with a proud majestic high scorn,  
 He answer'd thus, *Young Talbot was not born  
 To be the pillage of a giglot wench:*

So, rushing in the bowels of the French,  
He left me proudly, as unworthy fight.

*Bur.* Doubtless he would have made a noble knight:—  
See where he lies inhaled in the arms  
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms!

*Bast.* Hew them to pieces, hack their bones asunder,  
Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder.

*Char.* O, no; forbear! for that which we have fled  
During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

*Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY, attended; a French Herald  
preceding.*

*Lucy.* Herald,  
Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent, to know  
Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.

*Char.* On what submissive message art thou sent?

*Lucy.* Submission, Dauphin! 'tis a mere French word;  
We English warriors wot not what it means.  
I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en,  
And to survey the bodies of the dead.

*Char.* For prisoners ask'st thou? hell our prison is.  
But tell me whom thou seek'st.

*Lucy.* But where's the great Alcides of the field,  
Valiant Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury,—  
Created, for his rare success in arms,  
Great Earl of Washford, Waterford, and Valence;  
Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchinfield,  
Lord Strange of Blackmere, Lord Verdun of Alton,  
Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, Lord Furnival of Sheffield,  
The thrice victorious Lord of Falconbridge;  
Knight of the noble order of Saint George,  
Worthy Saint Michael, and the Golden Fleece;  
Great Marshal to Henry the Sixth  
Of all his wars within the realm of France?

*Puc.* Here is a silly-stately style indeed!  
The Turk, that two-and-fifty kingdoms hath,  
Writes not so tedious a style as this.—  
Him that thou magnifiest with all these titles,  
Stinking and fly-blown, lies here at our feet.

*Lucy.* Is Talbot slain,—the Frenchmen's only scourge,  
Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?  
O were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,  
That I, in rage, might shoot them at your faces!  
O that I could but call these dead to life!  
It were enough to fright the realm of France:  
Were but his picture left amongst you here,

It would amaze the proudest of you all.  
Give me their bodies, that I may bear them hence,  
And give them burial as beseems their worth.

*Puc.* I think this upstart is old Talbot's ghost,  
He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit.  
For God's sake, let him have 'em; to keep them here,  
They would but stink, and putrefy the air.

*Char.* Go, take their bodies hence.

*Lucy.*

I'll bear them hence:

But from their ashes shall be rear'd  
A phoenix that shall make all France afeard.

*Char.* So we be rid of them, do with 'em what thou wilt.—  
And now to Paris in this conquering vein:  
All will be ours, now bloody Talbot's slain. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter KING HENRY, GLOSTER, and EXETER.*

*K. Hen.* Have you perus'd the letters from the pope,  
The emperor, and the Earl of Armagnac?

*Glo.* I have, my lord: and their intent is this,—  
They humbly sue unto your excellence  
To have a godly peace concluded of  
Between the realms of England and of France.

*K. Hen.* How doth your grace affect their motion?

*Glo.* Well, my good lord; and as the only means  
To stop effusion of our Christian blood,  
And stablish quietness on every side.

*K. Hen.* Ay, marry, uncle; for I always thought  
It was both impious and unnatural  
That such immanity and bloody strife  
Should reign among professors of one faith.

*Glo.* Beside, my lord, the sooner to effect  
And surer bind this knot of amity,  
The Earl of Armagnac,—near kin to Charles,  
A man of great authority in France,—  
Proffers his only daughter to your grace  
In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry.

*K. Hen.* Marriage, uncle! alas, my years are young;  
And fitter is my study and my books  
Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.



Yet, call the ambassadors; and as you please,  
So let them have their answers every one:  
I shall be well content with any choice  
Tends to God's glory and my country's weal.

*Enter a Legate and two Ambassadors, with WINCHESTER,  
now CARDINAL BEAUFORT, in a Cardinal's habit.*

*Exe.* What! is my Lord of Winchester install'd,  
And call'd unto a cardinal's degree?  
Then I perceive that will be verified  
Henry the Fifth did sometime prophesy,—  
*If once he come to be a cardinal,  
He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.*

*K. Hen.* My lords ambassadors, your several suits  
Have been consider'd and debated on.  
Your purpose is both good and reasonable;  
And therefore are we certainly resolv'd  
To draw conditions of a friendly peace;  
Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean  
Shall be transported presently to France.

*Glo.* And for the proffer of my lord your master,  
I have inform'd his highness so at large,  
As, liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,  
Her beauty, and the value of her dower,  
He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

*K. Hen.* In argument and proof of which contract,  
Bear her this jewel [*to the Amb.*], pledge of my affection.—  
And so, my lord protector, see them guarded  
And safely brought to Dover; where, inshipp'd,  
Commit them to the fortune of the sea.

*[Exeunt K. HEN., GLO., EXE., and Ambassadors.]*

*Car.* Stay, my lord legate: you shall first receive  
The sum of money which I promised  
Should be delivered to his holiness  
For clothing me in these grave ornaments.

*Leg.* I will attend upon your lordship's leisure. *[Exit.]*

*Car.* Now Winchester will not submit, I trow,  
Or be inferior to the proudest peer.  
Humphrey of Gloster, thou shalt well perceive  
That neither in birth or for authority  
The bishop will be overborne by thee:  
I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee,  
Or sack this country with a mutiny. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—FRANCE. *Plains in Anjou.*

*Enter CHARLES, BURGUNDY, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE,  
and Forces, marching.*

*Char.* These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping spirits:

'Tis said the stout Parisians do revolt,  
And turn again unto the warlike French.

*Alen.* Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France,  
And keep not back your powers in dalliance.

*Puc.* Peace be amongst them if they turn to us;  
Else ruin combat with their palaces!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Success unto our valiant general,  
And happiness to his accomplices!

*Char.* What tidings send our scouts? I pry'thee, speak.

*Mess.* The English army, that divided was  
Into two parts, is now conjoin'd in one,  
And means to give you battle presently.

*Char.* Somewhat too sudden, sirs, the warning is;  
But we will presently provide for them.

*Bur.* I trust the ghost of Talbot is not there:  
Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.

*Puc.* Of all base passions fear is most accurs'd:—  
Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be thine;  
Let Henry fret and all the world repine.

*Char.* Then on, my lords; and France be fortunate!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—FRANCE. *Before Angiers.*

*Alarums: excursions. Enter LA PUCELLE.*

*Puc.* The regent conquers and the Frenchmen fly,—  
Now help, ye charming spells and periapts;  
And ye choice spirits that admonish me,  
And give me signs of future accidents,—  
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes  
Under the lordly monarch of the north,  
Appear, and aid me in this enterprise!

[*Thunder.*]

*Enter Fiends.*

This speedy and quick appearance argues proof  
Of your accustomed diligence to me.  
Now, ye familiar spirits that are cull'd

Out of the powerful legions under earth,  
Help me this once, that France may get the field.

[*They walk about and speak not.*]

O, hold me not with silence over-long!  
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood  
I'll lop a member off and give it you,  
In earnest of a further benefit,  
So you do condescend to help me now.

[*They hang their heads.*]

No hope to have redress?—My body shall  
Pay recompense if you will grant my suit.

[*They shake their heads.*]

Cannot my body nor blood-sacrifice  
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?  
Then take my soul,—my body, soul, and all,  
Before that England give the French the foil. [*They depart.*]  
See! they forsake me. Now the time is come  
That France must veil her lofty-plumed crest,  
And let her head fall into England's lap.  
My ancient incantations are too weak,  
And hell too strong for me to buckle with:  
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust. [*Exit.*]

*Alarums. Enter French and English, fighting. LA PUCELLE and YORK fight hand to hand: LA PUCELLE is taken. The French fly.*

*York.* Damsel of France, I think I have you fast:  
Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms,  
And try if they can gain your liberty.—  
A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!  
See how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,  
As if, with Circe, she would change my shape!

*Puc.* Chang'd to a worser shape thou canst not be.

*York.* O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;  
No shape but his can please your dainty eye.

*Puc.* A plaguing mischief light on Charles and thee!  
And may ye both be suddenly surpris'd  
By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!

*York.* Fell, banning hag; enchantress, hold thy tongue!

*Puc.* I prythee, give me leave to curse awhile.

*York.* Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarums. Enter SUFFOLK, leading in LADY MARGARET.*

*Suf.* Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner.

[*Gazes on her.*]

O fairest beauty, do not fear nor fly!  
 For I will touch thee but with reverent hands,  
 And lay them gently on thy tender side.  
 I kiss these fingers for eternal peace. [*Kissing her hand.*  
 Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee.

*Mar.* Margaret my name, and daughter to a king,  
 The King of Naples—whosoe'er thou art.

*Suf.* An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.  
 Be not offended, nature's miracle,  
 Thou art allotted to be ta'en by me:  
 So doth the swan her downy cygnets save,  
 Keeping them prisoners underneath her wings.  
 Yet, if this servile usage once offend,  
 Go, and be free again as Suffolk's friend.

[*She turns away as going.*

O, stay!—I have no power to let her pass;  
 My hand would free her, but my heart says no  
 As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,  
 Twinkling another counterfeited beam,  
 So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.  
 Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak:  
 I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind:  
 Fie, De-la-Poole! disable not thyself;  
 Hast not a tongue? is she not here thy prisoner?  
 Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?  
 Ay, beauty's princely majesty is such,  
 Confounds the tongue, and makes the senses rough.

*Mar.* Say, Earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be so,—  
 What ransom must I pay before I pass?  
 For I perceive I am thy prisoner.

*Suf.* How canst thou tell she will deny thy suit  
 Before thou make a trial of her love? [*Aside.*

*Mar.* Why speak'st thou not? what ransom must I pay?

*Suf.* She's beautiful, and therefore to be woo'd;  
 She is a woman, therefore to be won. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* Wilt thou accept of ransom—yea or no?

*Suf.* Fond man, remember that thou hast a wife;  
 Then how can Margaret be thy paramour? [*Aside.*

*Mar.* I were best leave him, for he will not hear.

*Suf.* There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling-card. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* He talks at random; sure, the man is mad.

*Suf.* And yet a dispensation may be had. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* And yet I would that you would answer me.

*Suf.* I'll win this Lady Margaret. For whom?  
 Why, for my king: tush, that's a wooden thing! [*Aside.*

*Mar.* He talks of wood: it is some carpenter.

*Suf.* Yet so my fancy may be satisfied,  
And peace established between these realms.  
But there remains a scruple in that too;  
For though her father be the King of Naples,  
Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor,  
And our nobility will scorn the match.

[*Aside.*]

*Mar.* Hear ye, captain,—are ye not at leisure?

*Suf.* It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so much:  
Henry is youthful, and will quickly yield.—  
Madam, I have a secret to reveal.

[*Aside.*]

*Mar.* What though I be enthrall'd? he seems a knight,  
And will not any way dishonour me.

[*Aside.*]

*Suf.* Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

*Mar.* Perhaps I shall be rescued by the French;  
And then I need not crave his courtesy.

[*Aside.*]

*Suf.* Sweet madam, give me hearing in a cause—

*Mar.* Tush! women have been captivate ere now. [*Aside.*]

*Suf.* Lady, wherefore talk you so?

*Mar.* I cry you mercy, 'tis but *quid* for *quo*.

*Suf.* Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose  
Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

*Mar.* To be a queen in bondage is more vile  
Than is a slave in base servility;  
For princes should be free.

*Suf.* And so shall you,  
If happy England's royal king be free.

*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?

*Suf.* I'll undertake to make thee Henry's queen;  
To put a golden sceptre in thy hand,  
And set a precious crown upon thy head,  
If thou wilt condescend to be my—

*Mar.* What?

*Suf.* His love.

*Mar.* I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.

*Suf.* No, gentle madam; I unworthy am  
To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,  
And have no portion in the choice myself.  
How say you, madam,—are you so content?

*Mar.* An if my father please, I am content.

*Suf.* Then call our captains and our colours forth!—

[*Troops come forward.*]

And, madam, at your father's castle-walls  
We'll crave a parley, to confer with him.

*A Parley sounded. Enter REIGNIER on the Walls.*

*Suf.* See Reignier, see, thy daughter prisoner!

*Reig.* To whom?

*Suf.* To me.

*Reig.* Suffolk, what remedy?

I am a soldier, and unapt to weep  
Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.

*Suf.* Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord:  
Consent,—and for thy honour give consent,—  
Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king;  
Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;  
And this her easy-held imprisonment  
Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty.

*Reig.* Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?

*Suf.* Fair Margaret knows  
That Suffolk doth not flatter, face, or feign.

*Reig.* Upon thy princely warrant I descend,  
To give thee answer of thy just demand.

[*Exit REIGNIER from the Walls.*]

*Suf.* And here I will expect thy coming.

*Trumpets sound. Enter REIGNIER below.*

*Reig.* Welcome, brave earl, into our territories;  
Command in Anjou what your honour pleases.

*Suf.* Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,  
Fit to be made companion with a king:  
What answer makes your grace unto my suit?

*Reig.* Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth  
To be the princely bride of such a lord,  
Upon condition I may quietly  
Enjoy mine own, the county Maine and Anjou,  
Free from oppression or the stroke of war,  
My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.

*Suf.* That is her ransom,—I deliver her;  
And those two counties I will undertake  
Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.

*Reig.* And I again, in Henry's royal name,  
As deputy unto that gracious king,  
Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.

*Suf.* Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks,  
Because this is in traffic of a king:—  
And yet, methinks, I could be well content  
To be mine own attorney in this case.—

[*Aside.*]

I'll over, then, to England with this news,  
And make this marriage to be solemniz'd.  
So, farewell, Reignier: set this diamond safe  
In golden palaces, as it becomes.

*Reig.* I do embrace thee as I would embrace  
The Christian prince, King Henry, were he here.

*Mar.* Farewell, my lord: good wishes, praise, and prayers  
Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [*Going.*]

*Suf.* Farewell, sweet madam: but hark you, Margaret,—  
No princely commendations to my king?

*Mar.* Such commendations as become a maid,  
A virgin, and his servant, say to him.

*Suf.* Words sweetly plac'd and modestly directed.  
Put, madam, I must trouble you again,—

No loving token to his majesty?

*Mar.* Yes, my good lord,—a pure unspotted heart,  
Never yet taint with love, I send the king.

*Suf.* And this withal. [*Kisses her.*]

*Mar.* That for thyself:—I will not so presume  
To send such peevish tokens to a king.

[*Exeunt REIG. and MAR.*]

*Suf.* O, wert thou for myself!—But, Suffolk, stay;  
Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth:

There Minotaurs and ugly treasons lurk.

Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise:

Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount,

And natural graces that extinguish art;

Repeat their semblance often on the seas,

That when thou com'st to kneel at Henry's feet

Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*Camp of the DUKE OF YORK in Anjou.*

*Enter YORK, WARWICK, and others.*

*York.* Bring forth that sorceress, condemn'd to burn.

*Enter LA PUCELLE, guarded, and a Shepherd.*

*Shep.* Ah, Joan, this kills thy father's heart outright!

Have I sought every country far and near,

And now it is my chance to find thee out

Must I behold thy timeless cruel death?

Ah, Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with thee!

*Puc.* Decrepit miser! base ignoble wretch!

I am descended of a gentler blood;

Thou art no father nor no friend of mine.

*Shep.* Out, out!—My lords, an please you, 'tis not so;

I did beget her, all the parish knows:

Her mother liveth yet, can testify

She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

*War.* Graceless, wilt thou deny thy parentage?

*York.* This argues what her kind of life hath been,—  
Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes.

*Shep.* Fie, Joan, that thou wilt be so obstacle!  
God knows thou art a collop of my flesh;  
And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:  
Deny me not, I pr'ythee, gentle Joan.

*Puc.* Peasant, avaunt!—You have suborn'd this man,  
Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

*Shep.* 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest  
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.—  
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl.  
Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time  
Of thy nativity! I would the milk  
Thy mother gave thee when thou suck'dst her breast  
Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!  
Or else, when thou didst keep my lambs a-field,  
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!  
Dost thou deny thy father, cursed drab?  
O, burn her, burn her! hanging is too good. [Exit.

*York.* Take her away; for she hath liv'd too long,  
To fill the world with vicious qualities.

*Puc.* First let me tell you whom you have condemn'd:  
Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,  
But issu'd from the progeny of kings;  
Virtuous and holy; chosen from above,  
By inspiration of celestial grace,  
To work exceeding miracles on earth.  
I never had to do with wicked spirits:  
But you,—that are polluted with your lusts,  
Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,  
Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,—  
Because you want the grace that others have,  
You judge it straight a thing impossible  
To compass wonders but by help of devils.  
No, misconceived! Joan of Arc hath been  
A virgin from her tender infancy,  
Chaste and immaculate in very thought;  
Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effus'd,  
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

*York.* Ay, ay:—away with her to execution!

*War.* And hark ye, sirs; because she is a maid,  
Spare for no fagots, let there be enow:  
Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,  
That so her torture may be shortened.

*Puc.* Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts?—



Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity,  
That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.—  
I am with child, ye bloody homicides:  
Murder not, then, the fruit within my womb,  
Although ye hale me to a violent death.

*York.* Now heaven forfend! the holy maid with child!

*War.* The greatest miracle that e'er ye wrought:  
Is all your strict preciseness come to this?

*York.* She and the Dauphin have been juggling:  
I did imagine what would be her refuge.

*War.* Well, go to; we will have no bastards live;  
Especially since Charles must father it.

*Puc.* You are deceiv'd; my child is none of his:  
It was Alençon that enjoy'd my love.

*York.* Alençon! that notorious Machiavel!  
It dies, an if it had a thousand lives.

*Puc.* O, give me leave, I have deluded you:  
'Twas neither Charles nor yet the duke I nam'd,  
But Reignier, King of Naples, that prevail'd.

*War.* A married man! that's most intolerable.

*York.* Why, here's a girl!—I think she knows not well—  
There were so many—whom she may accuse.

*War.* It's sign she hath been liberal and free.

*York.* And yet, forsooth, she is a virgin pure.—  
Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat and thee:  
Use no entreaty, for it is in vain.

*Puc.* Then lead me hence;—with whom I leave my curse:  
May never glorious sun reflex his beams  
Upon the country where you make abode;  
But darkness and the gloomy shade of death  
Environ you, till mischief and despair  
Drive you to break your necks or hang yourselves!

*[Exit, guarded.]*

*York.* Break thou in pieces and consume to ashes,  
Thou foul accursed minister of hell!

*Enter* CARDINAL BEAUFORT, *attended.*

*Car.* Lord regent, I do greet your excellence  
With letters of commission from the king.  
For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,  
Mov'd with remorse of these outrageous broils,  
Have earnestly implor'd a general peace  
Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French;  
And here at hand the Dauphin and his train  
Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

*York.* Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?  
 After the slaughter of so many peers,  
 So many captains, gentlemen, and soldiers,  
 That in this quarrel have been overthrown,  
 And sold their bodies for their country's benefit,  
 Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?  
 Have we not lost most part of all the towns,  
 By treason, falsehood, and by treachery,  
 Our great progenitors had conquered?—  
 O Warwick, Warwick! I foresee with grief  
 The utter loss of all the realm of France.

*War.* Be patient, York: if we conclude a peace,  
 It shall be with such strict and severe covenants  
 As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

*Enter CHARLES, attended; ALENÇON, BASTARD, REIGNIER,  
 and others.*

*Char.* Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed,  
 That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France  
 We come to be informed by yourselves  
 What the conditions of that league must be.

*York.* Speak, Winchester; for boiling choler chokes  
 The hollow passage of my prison'd voice,  
 By sight of these our baleful enemies.

*Car.* Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:  
 That in regard King Henry gives consent,  
 Of mere compassion and of lenity,  
 To ease your country of distressful war,  
 And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,—  
 You shall become true liegemen to his crown:  
 And, Charles, upon condition thou wilt swear  
 To pay him tribute and submit thyself,  
 Thou shalt be plac'd as viceroy under him,  
 And still enjoy thy regal dignity.

*Alen.* Must he be, then, as shadow of himself?  
 Adorn his temples with a coronet,  
 And yet, in substance and authority,  
 Retain but privilege of a private man?  
 This proffer is absurd and reasonless.

*Char.* 'Tis known already that I am possess'd  
 With more than half the Gallian territories,  
 And therein reverenc'd for their lawful king:  
 Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,  
 Detract so much from that prerogative  
 As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?  
 No, lord ambassador; I'll rather keep

That which I have than, coveting for more,  
Be cast from possibility of all.

*York.* Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret means  
Us'd intercession to obtain a league,  
And now the matter grows to compromise  
Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?  
Either accept the title thou usurp'st,  
Of benefit proceeding from our king,  
And not of any challenge of desert,  
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

*Reig.* My lord, you do not well in obstinacy  
To cavil in the course of this contract:  
If once it be neglected, ten to one  
We shall not find like opportunity.

*Alen.* To say the truth, it is your policy  
To save your subjects from such massacre  
And ruthless slaughters as are daily seen  
By our proceeding in hostility;  
And therefore take this compact of a truce,  
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.

[*Aside to CHARLES.*

*War.* How say'st thou, Charles? shall our condition stand?

*Char.* It shall;

Only reserv'd, you claim no interest  
In any of our towns of garrison.

*York.* Then swear allegiance to his majesty,  
As thou art knight, never to disobey  
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,—  
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.

[*CHARLES and the rest give tokens of fealty.*

So, now dismiss your army when ye please;  
Hang up your ensigus, let your drums be still,  
For here we entertain a solemn peace.

[*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE V.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter KING HENRY, in conference with SUFFOLK; GLOSTER  
and EXETER following.*

*K. Hen.* Your wondrous rare description, noble earl,  
Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me:  
Her virtues, graced with external gifts,  
Do breed love's settled passions in my heart:  
And like as rigour of tempestuous gusts  
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide,

So am I driven, by breath of her renown,  
 Either to suffer shipwreck or arrive  
 Where I may have fruition of her love.

*Suf.* Tush, my good lord,—this superficial tale  
 Is but a preface of her worthy praise:  
 The chief perfections of that lovely dame,—  
 Had I sufficient skill to utter them,—  
 Would make a volume of enticing lines,  
 Able to ravish any dull conceit:  
 And, which is more, she is not so divine,  
 So full-replete with choice of all delights,  
 But, with as humble lowliness of mind,  
 She is content to be at your command;  
 Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,  
 To love and honour Henry as her lord.

*K. Hen.* And otherwise will Henry ne'er presume.  
 Therefore, my lord protector, give consent  
 That Margaret may be England's royal queen.

*Glo.* So should I give consent to flatter sin.  
 You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd  
 Unto another lady of esteem:  
 How shall we, then, dispense with that contract,  
 And not deface your honour with reproach?

*Suf.* As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths;  
 Or one that, at a triumph having vow'd  
 To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists  
 By reason of his adversary's odds  
 A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,  
 And therefore may be broke without offence.

*Glo.* Why, what, I pray, is Margaret more than that?  
 Her father is no better than an earl,  
 Although in glorious titles he excel.

*Suf.* Yes, my lord, her father is a king,  
 The King of Naples and Jerusalem;  
 And of such great authority in France  
 As his alliance will confirm our peace,  
 And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.

*Glo.* And so the Earl of Armagnac may do,  
 Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.

*Ere.* Beside, his wealth doth warrant a liberal dower;  
 While Reignier sooner will receive than give.

*Suf.* A dower, my lords! disgrace not so your king,  
 That he should be so abject, base, and poor,  
 To choose for wealth, and not for perfect love.  
 Henry is able to enrich his queen,  
 And not to seek a queen to make him rich:

So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,  
 As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.  
 Marriage is a matter of more worth  
 Than to be dealt in by attorneyship;  
 Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,  
 Must be companion of his nuptial bed:  
 And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,  
 It most of all these reasons bindeth us,  
 In our opinions she should be preferr'd.  
 For what is wedlock forced but a hell,  
 An age of discord and continual strife?  
 Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss,  
 And is a pattern of celestial peace.  
 Whom should we match with Henry, being a king,  
 But Margaret, that is daughter to a king?  
 Her peerless feature, joined with her birth,  
 Approves her fit for none but for a king:  
 Her valiant courage and undaunted spirit,—  
 More than in women commonly is seen,—  
 Will answer our hope in issue of a king;  
 For Henry, son unto a conqueror,  
 Is likely to beget more conquerors,  
 If with a lady of so high resolve  
 As is fair Margaret he be link'd in love.  
 Then yield, my lords; and here conclude with me  
 That Margaret shall be queen, and none but she.

*K. Hen.* Whether it be through force of your report,  
 My noble Lord of Suffolk, or for that  
 My tender youth was never yet attain'd  
 With any passion of inflaming love,  
 I cannot tell; but this I am assur'd,  
 I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,  
 Such fierce alarums both of hope and fear,  
 As I am sick with working of my thoughts.  
 Take therefore shipping; post, my lord, to France;  
 Agree to any covenants; and procure  
 That Lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come  
 To cross the seas to England, and be crown'd  
 King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:  
 For your expenses and sufficient charge,  
 Among the people gather up a tenth.  
 Be gone, I say; for, till you do return,  
 I rest perplexed with a thousand cares.—  
 And you, good uncle, banish all offence:  
 If you do censure me by what you were,  
 Not what you are, I know it will excuse

This sudden execution of my will.

And so, conduct me where, from company,

I may revolve and ruminare my grief.

[*Exit.*

*Glo.* Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and last.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and EXETER.*

*Suf.* Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd; and thus he goes,

As did the youthful Paris once to Greece,

With hope to find the like event in love,

But prosper better than the Trojan did.

Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king;

But I will rule both her, the king, and realm.

[*Exit.*

SECOND PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.

HUMPHREY, *Duke of Gloster, his Uncle.*

CARDINAL BEAUFORT, *Bishop of Winchester, Great-Uncle to the KING.*

RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *Duke of York.*

EDWARD and RICHARD, *his Sons.*

DUKE OF SOMERSET,

DUKE OF SUFFOLK,

DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM,

LORD CLIFFORD,

YOUNG CLIFFORD, *his Son,*

} *of the KING's party.*

EARL OF SALISBURY,

EARL OF WARWICK,

} *of the York faction.*

LORD SCALES, *Governor of the Tower.*

LORD SAY.

SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD.

WILLIAM STAFFORD, *his Brother.*

SIR JOHN STANLEY.

A Sea Captain, Master. and Master's Mate, and WALTER WHITMORE.

Two Gentlemen, *Prisoners with SUFFOLK.*

VAUX.

A Herald.

HUME and SOUTHWELL, *two Priests.*

BOLINGBROKE, *a Conjurer.* A Spirit raised by him.

THOMAS HORNER, *an Armourer.* PETER, *his Man.*

Clerk of Chatham.

Mayor of Saint Alban's.

SIMPCOX, *an Impostor.*

Two Murderers.

JACK CADE, *a Rebel.*

GEORGE, JOHN, DICK, SMITH *the Weaver,* MICHAEL, &c., *his Followers.*

ALEXANDER IDEN, *a Kentish Gentleman.*

MARGARET, *Queen to KING HENRY.*

ELEANOR, *Duchess of Gloster.*

MARGERY JOURDAIN, *a Witch.*

Wife to SIMPCOX.

Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Petitioners, Aldermen, a Beadle, Sheriff, and Officers; Citizens, Prentices, Falconers, Guards, Soldiers, Messengers, &c.

SCENE,—*Dispersedly in various parts of ENGLAND.*



SECOND PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Room of State in the Castle.*

*Flourish of trumpets: then hautboys. Enter, on one side, KING HENRY, DUKE OF GLOSTER, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and CARDINAL BEAUFORT; on the other, QUEEN MARGARET, led in by SUFFOLK; YORK, SOMERSET, BUCKINGHAM, and others, following.*

*Suf.* As by your high imperial majesty  
I had in charge at my depart for France,  
As procurator to your excellence,  
To marry Princess Margaret for your grace;  
So, in the famous ancient city Tours,—  
In presence of the Kings of France and Sicil,  
The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretagne, and Alençon,  
Seven earls, twelve barons, and twenty reverend bishops,  
I have perform'd my task, and was espous'd:  
And humbly now, upon my bended knee,  
In sight of England and her lordly peers,  
Deliver up my title in the queen  
To your most gracious hands, that are the substance  
Of that great shadow I did represent;  
The happiest gift that ever marquess gave,  
The fairest queen that ever king receiv'd.

*K. Hen.* Suffolk, arise.—Welcome, Queen Margaret:  
I can express no kinder sign of love  
Than this kind kiss.—O Lord, that lends me life,  
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness!  
For thou hast given me, in this beauteous face,  
A world of earthly blessings to my soul,  
If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

*Q. Mar.* Great King of England, and my gracious lord,—

The mutual conference that my mind hath had,  
 By day, by night, waking and in my dreams,  
 In courtly company or at my beads,  
 With you, mine alder-lieftest sovereign,  
 Makes me the bolder to salute my king  
 With ruder terms, such as my wit affords  
 And over-joy of heart doth minister.

*K. Hen.* Her sight did ravish; but her grace in speech,  
 Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,  
 Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys;  
 Such is the fullness of my heart's content.—  
 Lords, with one cheerful voice welcome my love.

*All.* [*kneeling.*] Long live Queen Margaret, England's  
 happiness!

*Q. Mar.* We thank you all. [*Flourish.*]

*Suf.* My lord protector, so it please your grace,  
 Here are the articles of contracted peace  
 Between our sovereign and the French King Charles,  
 For eighteen months concluded by consent.

*Glo.* [*reads.*] *Imprimis, It is agreed between the French King Charles and William de la Poole, Marquess of Suffolk, ambassador for Henry King of England, that the said Henry shall espouse the Lady Margaret, daughter unto Reiguiet King of Naples, Sicilia, and Jerusalem; and crown her Queen of England ere the thirtieth of May next ensuing.—Item,—That the duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine shall be released and delivered to the king her father,—*

*K. Hen.* Uncle, how now!

*Glo.* Pardon me, gracious lord;  
 Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the heart,  
 And dimm'd mine eyes, that I can read no further.

*K. Hen.* Uncle of Winchester, I pray read on.

*Car.* [*reads.*] *Item,—It is further agreed between them that the duchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to the king her father; and she sent over of the King of England's own proper cost and charges, without having any dowry.*

*K. Hen.* They please us well.—Lord marquess, kneel  
 We here create thee the first Duke of Suffolk, [*down:*]  
 And girt thee with the sword.—Cousin of York,  
 We here discharge your grace from being regent  
 O' the parts of France, till term of eighteen months  
 Be full expir'd.—Thanks, uncle Winchester,  
 Gloster, York, Buckingham, Somerset,  
 Salisbury, and Warwick;  
 We thank you all for this great favour done,

In entertainment to my princely queen.  
Come, let us in; and with all speed provide  
To see her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt* KING, QUEEN, and SUFFOLK.]

*Glo.* Brave peers of England, pillars of the state,  
To you Duke Humphrey must unload his grief, —  
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.  
What! did my brother Henry spend his youth,  
His valour, coin, and people, in the wars?  
Did he so often lodge in open field,  
In winter's cold and summer's parching heat,  
To conquer France, his true inheritance?  
And did my brother Bedford toil his wits  
To keep by policy what Henry got?  
Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham,  
Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious Warwick,  
Receiv'd deep scars in France and Normandy?  
Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and myself,  
With all the learned council of the realm,  
Studied so long, sat in the council-house  
Early and late, debating to and fro  
How France and Frenchmen might be kept in awe?  
And hath his highness in his infancy  
Been crown'd in Paris, in despite of foes?  
And shall these labours and these honours die?  
Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,  
Your deeds of war, and all our counsel die?  
O peers of England, shameful is this league!  
Fatal this marriage! cancelling your fame,  
Blotting your names from books of memory,  
Razing the characters of your renown,  
Defacing monuments of conquer'd France,  
Undoing all, as all had never been!

*Car.* Nephew, what means this passionate discourse,  
This peroration with such circumstance?  
For France, 'tis ours; and we will keep it still.

*Glo.* Ay, uncle, we will keep it if we can;  
But now it is impossible we should:  
Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the roast,  
Hath given the duchy of Anjou and Maine  
Unto the poor King Reignier, whose large style  
Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

*Sal.* Now, by the death of Him that died for all,  
These counties were the keys of Normandy:—  
But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son?

*War.* For grief that they are past recovery:

For were there hope to conquer them again  
 My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes no tears.  
 Anjou and Maine! myself did win them both;  
 Those provinces these arms of mine did conquer:  
 And are the cities that I got with wounds  
 Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?  
*Mort Dieu!*

*York.* For Suffolk's duke, may he be suffocate  
 That dims the honour of this warlike isle!  
 France should have torn and rent my very heart  
 Before I would have yielded to this league.  
 I never read but England's kings have had  
 Large sums of gold and dowries with their wives;  
 And our King Henry gives away his own,  
 To match with her that brings no vantages.

*Glo.* A proper jest, and never heard before,  
 That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth  
 For costs and charges in transporting her!  
 She should have stay'd in France, and starv'd in France,  
 Before—

*Car.* My Lord of Gloster, now you grow too hot:  
 It was the pleasure of my lord the king.

*Glo.* My Lord of Winchester, I know your mind;  
 'Tis not my speeches that you do dislike,  
 But 'tis my presence that doth trouble ye.  
 Rancour will out: proud prelate, in thy face  
 I see thy fury: if I longer stay  
 We shall begin our ancient bickerings.—  
 Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,  
 I prophesied France will be lost ere long.

[*Exit.*

*Car.* So, there goes our protector in a rage.  
 'Tis known to you he is mine enemy;  
 Nay, more, an enemy unto you all,  
 And no great friend, I fear me, to the king.  
 Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,  
 And heir-apparent to the English crown:  
 Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,  
 And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,  
 There's reason he should be displeas'd at it.  
 Look to it, lords; let not his smoothing words  
 Bewitch your hearts; be wise and circumspect.  
 What though the common people favour him,  
 Calling him—*Humphrey, the good Duke of Gloster;*  
 Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice,  
*Jesu maintain your royal excellence!*  
 With God preserve the good Duke *Humphrey!*

I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,  
He will be found a dangerous protector.

*Buck.* Why should he then protect our sovereign,  
He being of age to govern of himself?—  
Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,  
And altogether, with the Duke of Suffolk,  
We'll quickly hoise Duke Humphrey from his seat.

*Car.* This weighty business will not brook delay;  
I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently. [*Erit.*

*Som.* Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride  
And greatness of his place be grief to us,  
Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal:  
His insolence is more intolerable  
Than all the princes in the land beside:  
If Gloster be displac'd, he'll be protector.

*Buck.* Or thou or I, Somerset, will be protector,  
Despite Duke Humphrey or the cardinal.

[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM and SOMERSET.]

*Sal.* Pride went before, ambition follows him.  
While these do labour for their own preferment,  
Behoves it us to labour for the realm.  
I never saw but Humphrey Duke of Gloster  
Did bear him like a noble gentleman.  
Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal,—  
More like a soldier than a man o' the church,  
As stout and proud as he were lord of all,—  
Swear like a ruffian, and demean himself  
Unlike the ruler of a commonweal.—  
Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age!  
Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy housekeeping,  
Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,  
Excepting none but good Duke Humphrey:—  
And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,  
In bringing them to civil discipline;  
Thy late exploits done in the heart of France,  
When thou wert regent for our sovereign,  
Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the people:—  
Join we together for the public good  
In what we can, to bridle and suppress  
The pride of Suffolk and the cardinal,  
With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition;  
And, as we may, cherish Duke Humphrey's deeds  
While they do tend the profit of the land.

*War.* So God help Warwick, as he loves the land  
And common profit of his country!

*York.* And so says York, for he hath greatest cause.

*Sal.* Then let's make haste away and look unto the main.

*War.* Unto the main! O father, Maine is lost,—  
That Maine which by main force Warwick did win,  
And would have kept so long as breath did last!  
Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant Maine,—  
Which I will win from France, or else be slain.

[*Exeunt WARWICK and SALISBURY.*]

*York.* Anjou and Maine are given to the French;  
Paris is lost; the state of Normandy  
Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone:  
Suffolk concluded on the articles;  
The peers agreed; and Henry was well pleas'd  
To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair daughter.  
I cannot blame them all: what is 't to them?  
'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.  
Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage,  
And purchase friends, and give to courtezans,  
Still revelling like lords till all be gone;  
While as the silly owner of the goods  
Weeps over them, and wrings his hapless hands,  
And shakes his head, and trembling stands aloof,  
While all is shar'd, and all is borne away,  
Ready to starve, and dare not touch his own:  
So York must sit, and fret, and bite his tongue,  
While his own lands are bargain'd for and sold.  
Methinks the realms of England, France, and Ireland  
Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood  
As did the fatal brand Althæa burn'd  
Unto the prince's heart of Calydon.  
Anjou and Maine both given unto the French!  
Cold news for me; for I had hope of France,  
Even as I have of fertile England's soil.  
A day will come when York shall claim his own;  
And therefore I will take the Nevils' parts,  
And make a show of love to proud Duke Humphrey,  
And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,  
For that's the golden mark I seek to hit:  
Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right,  
Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist,  
Nor wear the diadem upon his head,  
Whose church-like humours fit not for a crown.  
Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:  
Watch thou and wake, when others be asleep,  
To pry into the secrets of the state;  
Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love  
With his new bride and England's dear-bought queen,

And Humphrey with the peers be fall'n at jars :  
Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,  
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfum'd ;  
And in my standard bear the arms of York,  
To grapple with the house of Lancaster ;  
And, force perforce, I'll make him yield the crown,  
Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—LONDON. *A Room in the Duke of  
GLOSTER'S House.*

*Enter GLOSTER and the DUCHESS.*

*Duch.* Why droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn  
Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load?  
Why doth the great Duke Humphrey knit his brows,  
As frowning at the favours of the world?  
Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth,  
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?  
What see'st thou there? King Henry's diadem,  
Enchas'd with all the honours of the world?  
If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face  
Until thy head be circled with the same.  
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold:—  
What, is't too short? I'll lengthen it with mine;  
And, having both together heav'd it up,  
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven;  
And never more abase our sight so low  
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.

*Glo.* O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord,  
Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts!  
And may that thought, when I imagine ill  
Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,  
Be my last breathing in this mortal world!  
My troublous dream this night doth make me sad.

*Duch.* What dream'd my lord? tell me, and I'll requite it  
With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

*Glo.* Methought this staff, mine office-badge in court,  
Was broke in twain; by whom I have forgot,  
But, as I think, it was by the cardinal;  
And on the pieces of the broken wand  
Were plac'd the heads of Edmund Duke of Somerset,  
And William de la Poole, first Duke of Suffolk.  
This was my dream; what it doth bode God knows.

*Duch.* Tut, this was nothing but an argument  
That he that breaks a stick of Gloster's grove

Shall lose his head for his presumption.  
 But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke:  
 Methought I sat in seat of majesty  
 In the cathedral church of Westminster,  
 And in that chair where kings and queens are crown'd;  
 Where Henry and Dame Margaret kneel'd to me,  
 And on my head did set the diadem.

*Glo.* Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide outright:  
 Presumptuous dame, ill-nurtur'd Eleanor!  
 Art thou not second woman in the realm,  
 And the protector's wife, belov'd of him?  
 Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,  
 Above the reach or compass of thy thought?  
 And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,  
 To tumble down thy husband and thyself  
 From top of honour to disgrace's feet?  
 Away from me, and let me hear no more!

*Duch.* What, what, my lord! are you so choleric  
 With Eleanor for telling but her dream?  
 Next time I'll keep my dreams unto myself,  
 And not be check'd.

*Glo.* Nay, be not angry, I am pleas'd again.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure  
 You do prepare to ride unto Saint Albans,  
 Whereas the king and queen do mean to hawk.

*Glo.* I go.—Come, Nell,—thou wilt ride with us?

*Duch.* Yes, my good lord, I'll follow presently.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and Messenger.*]

Follow I must; I cannot go before  
 While Gloster bears this base and humble mind.  
 Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,  
 I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks,  
 And smooth my way upon their headless necks:  
 And, being a woman, I will not be slack  
 To play my part in fortune's pageant.—  
 Where are you there, Sir John? nay, fear not, man,  
 We are alone; here's none but thee and I.

*Enter HUME.*

*Hume.* Jesus preserve your royal majesty!

*Duch.* What say'st thou? majesty! I am but grace.

*Hume.* But, by the grace of God and Hume's advice,  
 Your grace's title shall be multiplied.

*Duch.* What say'st thou, man? hast thou as yet conferr'd



With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch,  
 With Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?  
 And will they undertake to do me good?

*Hume.* This they have promised,—to show your highness  
 A spirit rais'd from depth of under-ground,  
 That shall make answer to such questions  
 As by your grace shall be propounded him.

*Duch.* It is enough; I'll think upon the questions:  
 When from Saint Albans we do make return  
 We'll see these things effected to the full.  
 Here, Hume, take this reward; make merry, man,  
 With thy confederates in this weighty cause. *[Exit.*

*Hume.* Hume must make merry with the duchess'  
 gold;

Marry, and shall. But, how now, Sir John Hume!  
 Seal up your lips, and give no words but mum:  
 The business asketh silent secrecy.  
 Dame Eleanor gives gold to bring the witch:  
 Gold cannot come amiss were she a devil.  
 Yet have I gold flies from another coast:—  
 I dare not say from the rich cardinal,  
 And from the great and new-made Duke of Suffolk;  
 Yet I do find it so: for, to be plain,  
 They, knowing Dame Eleanor's aspiring humour,  
 Have hired me to undermine the duchess,  
 And buzz these conjurations in her brain.  
 They say,—A crafty knave does need no broker;  
 Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker.  
 Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go near  
 To call them both a pair of crafty knaves.  
 Well, so it stands; and thus, I fear, at last  
 Hume's knavery will be the duchess' wreck,  
 And her attainure will be Humphrey's fall:  
 Sort how it will, I shall have gold for all. *[Exit.*

SCENE III.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter PETER and other Petitioners.*

*1 Pet.* My masters, let's stand close: my lord protector  
 will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver  
 our supplications in the quill.

*2 Pet.* Marry, the Lord protect him, for he's a good  
 man! Jesu bless him!

*1 Pet.* Here 'a comes, methinks, and the queen with  
 him. I'll be the first, sure.

*Enter SUFFOLK and QUEEN MARGARET.*

**2 Pet.** Come back, fool; this is the Duke of Suffolk, and not my lord protector.

*Suf.* How now, fellow! wouldst anything with me?

**1 Pet.** I pray, my lord, pardon me; I took ye for my lord protector.

*Q. Mar.* [*glancing at the superscriptions.*] *To my Lord Protector!* Are your supplications to his lordship? Let me see them:—what is thine?

**1 Pet.** Mine is, an't please your grace, against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's man, for keeping my house, and lands, and wife and all, from me.

*Suf.* Thy wife too! that is some wrong indeed.—What's yours?—What's here! [*Reads.*] *Against the Duke of Suffolk, for enclosing the commons of Melford.*—How now, sir knave!

**2 Pet.** Alas, sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township.

*Peter.* [*presenting his petition.*] Against my master, Thomas Horner, for saying that the Duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

*Q. Mar.* What say'st thou? did the Duke of York say he was rightful heir to the crown?

*Peter.* That my master was? no, forsooth: my master said that he was; and that the king was an usurper.

*Suf.* Who is there? [*Enter Servants.*]—Take this fellow in, and send for his master with a pursuivant presently:—we'll hear more of your matter before the king.

[*Exeunt Servants with PETER.*]

*Q. Mar.* And as for you, that love to be protected Under the wings of our protector's grace, Begin your suits anew, and sue to him. [*Tears the petitions.* Away, base cullions!—Suffolk, let them go.

*All.* Come, let's be gone. [*Exeunt Petitioners.*]

*Q. Mar.* My Lord of Suffolk, say, is this the guise, Is this the fashion in the court of England? Is this the government of Britain's isle, And this the royalty of Albion's king? What, shall King Henry be a pupil still, Under the surly Gloster's governance? Am I a queen in title and in style, And must be made a subject to a duke? I tell thee, Poole, when in the city Tours Thou rann'st a tilt in honour of my love, And stol'st away the ladies' hearts of France,

I thought King Henry had resembled thee  
 In courage, courtship, and proportion:  
 But all his mind is bent to holiness,  
 To number *Ave-Maries* on his beads:  
 His champions are, the prophets and apostles;  
 His weapons, holy saws of sacred writ;  
 His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves  
 Are brazen images of canoniz'd saints.  
 I would the college of the cardinals  
 Would choose him pope, and carry him to Rome,  
 And set the triple crown upon his head:—  
 That were a state fit for his holiness.

*Suf.* Madam, be patient: as I was cause  
 Your highness came to England, so will I  
 In England work your grace's full content.

*Q. Mar.* Beside the haughty protector, have we Beaufort  
 The imperious churchman, Somerset, Buckingham,  
 And grumbling York; and not the least of these  
 But can do more in England than the king.

*Suf.* And he of these that can do most of all  
 Cannot do more in England than the Nevils:  
 Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers.

*Q. Mar.* Not all these lords do vex me half so much  
 As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.  
 She sweeps it through the court with troops of ladies,  
 More like an empress than Duke Humphrey's wife:  
 Strangers in court do take her for the queen:  
 She bears a duke's revenues on her back,  
 And in her heart she scorns our poverty:  
 Shall I not live to be aveng'd on her?  
 Contemptuous base-born callet as she is,  
 She vaunted 'mongst her minions t'other day  
 The very train of her worst wearing gown  
 Was better worth than all my father's lands,  
 Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter.

*Suf.* Madam, myself have lim'd a bush for her,  
 And plac'd a quire of such entieing birds  
 That she will light to listen to the lays,  
 And never mount to trouble you again.  
 So, let her rest: and, madam, list to me;  
 For I am bold to counsel you in this.  
 Although we fancy not the cardinal,  
 Yet must we join with him and with the lords,  
 Till we have brought Duke Humphrey in disgrace.  
 As for the Duke of York,—this late complaint  
 Will make but little for his benefit.

So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last,  
And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

*Enter* KING HENRY, YORK, and SOMERSET; DUKE and  
DUCHESS OF GLOSTER, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BUCKING-  
HAM, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.

*K. Hen.* For my part, noble lords, I care not which;  
Or Somerset or York, all's one to me.

*York.* If York have ill demean'd himself in France,  
Then let him be deny'd the regentship.

*Som.* If Somerset be unworthy of the place,  
Let York be regent; I will yield to him.

*War.* Whether your grace be worthy, yea or no,  
Dispute not that: York is the worthier.

*Car.* Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters speak.

*War.* The cardinal's not my better in the field.

*Buck.* All in this presence are thy betters, Warwick.

*War.* Warwick may live to be the best of all.

*Sal.* Peace, son!—and show some reason, Buckingham,  
Why Somerset should be preferr'd in this.

*Q. Mar.* Because the king, forsooth, will have it so.

*Glo.* Madam, the king is old enough himself  
To give his censure: these are no women's matters.

*Q. Mar.* If he be old enough, what needs your grace  
To be protector of his excellence?

*Glo.* Madam, I am protector of the realm;  
And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.

*Suf.* Resign it then, and leave thine insolence.  
Since thou wert king,—as who is king but thou?—  
The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck;  
The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas;  
And all the peers and nobles of the realm  
Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty.

*Car.* The commons hast thou rack'd; the clergy's  
bags  
Are lank and lean with thy extortions.

*Som.* Thy sumptuous buildings and thy wife's attire  
Have cost a mass of public treasury.

*Buck.* Thy cruelty in execution  
Upon offenders hath exceeded law,  
And left thee to the mercy of the law.

*Q. Mar.* Thy sale of offices and towns in France,—  
If they were known, as the suspect is great,—  
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head.

[*Exit* GLOSTER. *The QUEEN drops her Fan.*]

Give me my fan: what, minion! can you not?

[Gives the DUCHESS a box on the ear.]

I cry you mercy, madam; was it you?

*Duch.* Was't I? yea, I it was, proud Frenchwoman:  
Could I come near your beauty with my nails,  
I'd set my ten commandments in your face.

*K. Hen.* Sweet aunt, be quiet; 'twas against her will.

*Duch.* Against her will! good king, look to't in time;  
She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby:  
Though in this place most master wear no breeches,  
She shall not strike Dame Eleanor unreveng'd. [Exit.]

*Buck.* Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor,  
And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:  
She's tickled now; her fume needs no spurs,  
She'll gallop fast enough to her destruction. [Exit.]

*Re-enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Now, lords, my choler being over-blown  
With walking once about the quadrangle,  
I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.  
As for your spiteful false objections,  
Prove them, and I lie open to the law:  
But God in mercy so deal with my soul  
As I in duty love my king and country!  
But to the matter that we have in hand:—  
I say, my sovereign, York is meetest man  
To be your regent in the realm of France.

*Suf.* Before we make election, give me leave  
To show some reason, of no little force,  
That York is most unmeet of any man.

*York.* I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet:  
First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride;  
Next, if I be appointed for the place,  
My Lord of Somerset will keep me here,  
Without discharge, money, or furniture,  
Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands:  
Last time, I danc'd attendance on his will  
Till Paris was besieg'd, famish'd, and lost.

*War.* That can I witness; and a fouler fact  
Did never traitor in the land commit.

*Suf.* Peace, headstrong Warwick!

*War.* Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

*Enter Servants of SUFFOLK, bringing in HORNER and PETER.*

*Suf.* Because here is a man accus'd of treason:  
Pray God the Duke of York excuse himself!

*York.* Doth any one accuse York for a traitor ?

*K. Hen.* What mean'st thou, Suffolk ? tell me, what are these ?

*Suf.* Please it your majesty, this is the man  
That doth accuse his master of high treason :  
His words were these,—that Richard Duke of York  
Was rightful heir unto the English crown,  
And that your majesty was an usurper.

*K. Hen.* Say, man, were these thy words ?

*Hor.* An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor  
thought any such matter : God is my witness, I am falsely  
accused by the villain.

*Pet.* By these ten bones, my lords [*holding up his hands.*]  
he did speak them to me in the garret one night, as we  
were scouring my Lord of York's armour.

*York.* Base dunghill villain and mechanical,  
I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech.—  
I do beseech your royal majesty,  
Let him have all the rigour of the law.

*Hor.* Alas, my lord, hang me if ever I spake the words.  
My accuser is my prentice ; and when I did correct him for  
his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would  
be even with me : I have good witness of this ; therefore I  
beseech your majesty, do not cast away an honest man  
for a villain's accusation.

*K. Hen.* Uncle, what shall we say to this in law ?

*Glo.* This doom, my lord, if I may judge :  
Let Somerset be regent o'er the French,  
Because in York this breeds suspiciou ;  
And let these have a day appointed them  
For single combat in convenient place,  
For he hath witness of his servant's malice :  
This is the law, and this Duke Humphrey's doom.

*K. Hen.* Then be it so.—My Lord of Somerset,  
We make your grace regent over the French.

*Som.* I humbly thank your royal majesty.

*Hor.* And I accept the combat willingly.

*Pet.* Alas, my lord, I cannot fight ; for God's sake, pity  
my case ! the spite of man prevaieth against me. O Lord,  
have mercy upon me ! I shall never be able to fight a  
blow : O Lord, my heart !

*Glo.* Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang'd.

*K. Hen.* Away with them to prison ; and the day  
Of combat shall be the last of the next month.—  
Come, Somerset, we'll see thee sent away.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *The Duke of Gloster's Garden.*

*Enter* MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTHWELL, *and*  
BOLINGBROKE.

*Hume.* Come, my masters; the duchess, I tell you, expects performance of your promises.

*Boling.* Master Hume, we are therefore provided: will her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms?

*Hume.* Ay, what else? fear you not her courage.

*Boling.* I have heard her reported to be a woman of an invincible spirit: but it shall be convenient, Master Hume, that you be by her aloft, while we be busy below; and so, I pray you, go in God's name, and leave us. [*Exit* HUME.] Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate, and grovel on the earth;—John Southwell, read you;—and let us to our work.

*Enter* DUCHESS *above, and presently* HUME.

*Duch.* Well said, my masters; and welcome all. To this gear,—the sooner the better.

*Boling.* Patience, good lady; wizards know their times: Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night, The time of night when Troy was set on fire; The time when screech-owls cry, and ban-dogs howl, And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their graves,— That time best fits the work we have in hand. Madam, sit you, and fear not: whom we raise We will make fast within a hallow'd verge.

[*Here they perform the ceremonies appertaining, and make the circle; BOLINGBROKE or SOUTHWELL reads, "Conjuro te," &c. It thunders and lightens terribly; then the Spirit riseth.*

*Spir.* *Adsum.*

*M. Jourd.* Asmath,

By the eternal God, whose name and power  
Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;  
For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

*Spir.* Ask what thou wilt: that I had said and done!

*Boling.* *First of the king: what shall of him become?*

[*Reading out of a paper.*

*Spir.* The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose;  
But him outlive, and die a violent death.

[*As the Spirit speaks, SOUTH. writes the answers.*

*Boling.* *What fates await the Duke of Suffolk?*

*Spir.* By water shall he die and take his end.

*Boling.* *What shall befall the Duke of Somerset?*

*Spir.* Let him shun castles;  
Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains  
Than where castles mounted stand.—  
Have done, for more I hardly can endure.

*Boling.* Descend to darkness and the burning lake!  
False fiend, avoid!

[*Thunder and lightning.* Spirit descends.]

*Enter YORK and BUCKINGHAM hastily, with their Guards and others.*

*York.* Lay hands upon these traitors and their trash.—  
Beldam, I think we watch'd you at an inch.—  
What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal  
Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains:  
My lord protector will, I doubt it not,  
See you well guerdon'd for these good deserts.

*Duch.* Not half so bad as thine to England's king,  
Injurious duke, that threatest where's no cause.

*Buck.* True, madam, none at all:—what call you this?

[*Showing her the papers.*]

Away with them! let them be clapp'd up close,  
And kept asunder.—You, madam, shall with us.—  
Stafford, take her to thee.—

We'll see your trinkets here all forthcoming.—  
All, away!

[*Exeunt, above, DUCHESS and HUME, guarded;*  
*below, SOUTH., BOLING., &c., guarded.*]

*York.* Lord Buckingham, methinks you watch'd her well:  
A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon!  
Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ.  
What have we here?

[*Reads.*]

*The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose;*  
*But him outlive, and die a violent death.*

Why, this is just,  
*Aio te, Æacida, Romanos vincere posse.*

Well, to the rest:

*Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk?*

*By water shall he die and take his end.—*

*What shall betide the Duke of Somerset?*

*Let him shun castles;*

*Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains*  
*Than where castles mounted stand.*

Come, come, my lords;  
These oracles are hardly attain'd,  
And hardly understood.

The king is now in progress toward Saint Albans,



With him the husband of this lovely lady :  
Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them,—  
A sorry breakfast for my lord protector.

*Buck.* Your grace shall give me leave, my Lord of York,  
To be the post, in hope of his reward.

*York.* At your pleasure, my good lord.—Who's within  
there, ho!

*Enter a Servant.*

Invite my Lords of Salisbury and Warwick  
To sup with me to-morrow night.—Away!

*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*Saint Albans.*

*Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, GLOSTER, CAR-  
DINAL, and SUFFOLK, with Falconers hollaing.*

*Q. Mar.* Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook,  
I saw not better sport these seven years' day :  
Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high ;  
And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.

*K. Hen.* But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,  
And what a pitch she flew above the rest !—  
To see how God in all his creatures works !  
Yea, man and birds are fain of climbing high.

*Suf.* No marvel, an it like your majesty,  
My lord protector's hawks do tower so well ;  
They know their master loves to be aloft,  
And bears his thoughts above his falcon's pitch.

*Glo.* My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind  
That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

*Car.* I thought as much ; he would be above the clouds.

*Glo.* Ay, my lord cardinal,—how think you by that ?  
Were it not good your grace could fly to heaven ?

*K. Hen.* The treasury of everlasting joy !

*Car.* Thy heaven is on earth ; thine eyes and thoughts  
Beat on a crown, the treasure of thy heart ;  
Pernicious protector, dangerous peer,  
That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal !

*Glo.* What, cardinal, is your priesthood grown peremptory ?

*Tantæne animis cælestibus ire ?*

Churchmen so hot ? good uncle, hide such malice ;  
With such holiness can you do it ?

*Suf.* No malice, sir; no more than well becomes  
So good a quarrel and so bad a peer.

*Glo.* As who, my lord?

*Suf.* Why, as you, my lord,  
An't like your lordly lord-protectorship.

*Glo.* Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence.

*Q. Mar.* And thy ambition, Gloster.

*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee, peace,  
Good queen, and whet not on these furious peers;  
For blessed are the peacemakers on earth.

*Car.* Let me be blessed for the peace I make,  
Against this proud protector, with my sword!

*Glo.* Faith, holy uncle, would 'twere come to that!

*Car.* Marry, when thou dar'st. [*Aside to CAR.*]

*Glo.* Make up no factious numbers for the matter;  
In thine own person answer thy abuse. [*Aside to CAR.*]

*Car.* Ay, where thou dar'st not peep: an if thou dar'st,  
This evening on the east side of the grove. [*Aside to GLO.*]

*K. Hen.* How now, my lords!

*Car.* Believe me, cousin Gloster,  
Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly,  
We had had more sport.—Come with thy two-hand sword. [*Aside to GLO.*]

*Glo.* True, uncle.

*Car.* Are ye advis'd?—the east side of the grove?

*Glo.* Cardinal, I am with you. [*Aside to GLO.*]

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, uncle Gloster!

*Glo.* Talking of hawking; nothing else, my lord—  
Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave your crown for this,  
Or all my fence shall fail. [*Aside to CAR.*]

*Car.* *Medice teipsum;*  
Protector, see to't well, protect yourself. [*Aside to GLO.*]

*K. Hen.* The winds grow high; so do your stomachs,  
lords.

How irksome is this music to my heart!  
When such strings jar, what hope of harmony?  
I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

*Enter a Townsman of Saint Albans, crying*  
"A Miracle."

*Glo.* What means this noise?  
Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim?

*Towns.* A miracle! a miracle!

*Suf.* Come to the king, and tell him what miracle.

*Towns.* Forsooth, a blind man at St. Albans' shrine,  
Within this half hour, hath receiv'd his sight;  
A man that ne'er saw in his life before.

*K. Hen.* Now, God be prais'd that to believing souls  
Gives light in darkness, comfort in despair!

*Enter the Mayor of St. Albans and his brethren; and SIMPCOX, borne between two persons in a chair, his Wife and a multitude following.*

*Car.* Here come the townsmen on procession,  
To present your highness with the man.

*K. Hen.* Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,  
Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.

*Glo.* Stand by, my masters:—bring him near the king;  
His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.

*K. Hen.* Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,  
That we for thee may glorify the Lord.

What, hast thou been long blind and now restor'd?

*Simp.* Born blind, an't please your grace.

*Wife.* Ay, indeed, was he.

*Suf.* What woman is this?

*Wife.* His wife, an't like your worship.

*Glo.* Hadst thou been his mother, thou couldst have  
better told.

*K. Hen.* Where wert thou born?

*Simp.* At Berwick in the north, an't like your grace.

*K. Hen.* Poor soul, God's goodness hath been great to  
Let never day nor night unhallow'd pass, [thee:  
But still remember what the Lord hath done.

*Q. Mar.* Tell me, good fellow, cam'st thou here by  
Or of devotion, to this holy shrine? [chance,

*Simp.* God knows, of pure devotion; being call'd  
A hundred times and oftener, in my sleep,  
By good Saint Alban; who said, *Simpcox, come,—*  
*Come, offer at my shrine, and I will help thee.*

*Wife.* Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft  
Myself have heard a voice to call him so.

*Car.* What, art thou lame?

*Simp.* Ay, God Almighty help me!

*Suf.* How cam'st thou so?

*Simp.* A fall off a tree.

*Wife.* A plum-tree, master.

*Glo.* How long hast thou been blind?

*Simp.* O, born so, master.

*Glo.* What, and wouldst climb a tree?

*Simp.* But that in all my life, when I was a youth.

*Wife.* Too true; and bought his climbing very dear.

*Glo.* Mass, thou lov'dst plums well that wouldst venture  
so.

*Simp.* Alas, good master, my wife desir'd some damsons,  
And made me climb, with danger of my life.

*Glo.* A subtle knave! but yet it shall not serve.—  
Let me see thine eyes:—wink now;—now open them:—  
In my opinion yet thou see'st not well.

*Simp.* Yes, master, clear as day, I thank God and Saint  
Alban.

*Glo.* Say'st thou me so? What colour is this cloak of?

*Simp.* Red, master; red as blood.

*Glo.* Why, that's well said. What colour is my gown of?

*Simp.* Black, forsooth; coal-black as jet.

*K. Hen.* Why, then, thou know'st what colour jet is of?

*Suf.* And yet, I think, jet did he never see.

*Glo.* But cloaks and gowns, before this day, a many.

*Wife.* Never, before this day, in all his life.

*Glo.* Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?

*Simp.* Alas, master, I know not.

*Glo.* What's his name?

*Simp.* I know not.

*Glo.* Nor his?

*Simp.* No, indeed, master.

*Glo.* What's thine own name?

*Simp.* Saunder Simpecox, an if it please you, master.

*Glo.* Then, Saunder, sit there, the lyingest knave in  
Christendom. If thou hadst been born blind, thou mightst  
as well have known all our names as thus to name the  
several colours we do wear. Sight may distinguish of  
colours, but suddenly to nominate them all, it is impos-  
sible.—My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle;  
and would ye not think his cunning to be great that could  
restore this cripple to his legs again?

*Simp.* O master, that you could!

*Glo.* My masters of Saint Albans, have you not beadles  
in your town, and things called whips?

*May.* Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.

*Glo.* Then send for one presently.

*May.* Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither straight.

[*Exit an Attendant.*]

*Glo.* Now fetch me a stool hither by and by. [*A stool  
brought out.*] Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself  
from whipping, leap me over this stool and run away.

*Simp.* Alas, master, I am not able to stand alone:  
You go about to torture me in vain.

*Re-enter Attendant, with the Beadle.*

*Glo.* Well, sir, we must have you find your legs.— Sirrah beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

*Bead.* I will, my lord.—Come on, sirrah; off with your doublet quickly.

*Simp.* Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand.

*[After the Beadle has hit him once, he leaps over the stool and runs away; and the people follow and cry "A Miracle!"*

*K. Hen.* O God, seest thou this, and bear'st so long?

*Q. Mar.* It made me laugh to see the villain run.

*Glo.* Follow the knave; and take this drab away.

*Wife.* Alas, sir, we did it for pure need.

*Glo.* Let them be whipped through every market town, till they come to Berwick, whence they came.

*[Exeunt Mayor, Beadle, Wife, &c.]*

*Car.* Duke Humphrey has done a miracle to-day.

*Suf.* True; made the lame to leap and fly away.

*Glo.* But you have done more miracles than I; You made in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*K. Hen.* What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

*Buck.* Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold.

A sort of naughty persons, lewdly bent,—

Under the countenance and confederacy

Of Lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,

The ringleader and head of all this rout,—

Have practis'd dangerously against your state,

Dealing with witches and with conjurers:

Whom we have apprehended in the fact;

Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,

Demanding of King Henry's life and death,

And other of your highness' privy council,

As more at large your grace shall understand.

*Car.* And so, my lord protector, by this means

Your lady is forthcoming yet at London.

This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge;

'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.

*[Aside to GLOSTER.]*

*Glo.* Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart:

Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers;

And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,

Or to the meanest groom.

*K. Hen.* O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones,  
Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby!

*Q. Mar.* Gloster, see here the tainture of thy nest;  
And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.

*Glo.* Madam, for myself to heaven I do appeal,  
How I have lov'd my king and commonweal:  
And for my wife I know not how it stands;  
Sorry I am to hear what I have heard:  
Noble she is; but if she have forgot  
Honour and virtue, and convers'd with such  
As, like to pitch, defile nobility,  
I banish her my bed and company,  
And give her, as a prey, to law and shame,  
That hath dishonour'd Gloster's honest name.

*K. Hen.* Well, for this night we will repose us here:  
To-morrow toward London back again,  
To look into this business thoroughly,  
And call these foul offenders to their answers;  
And poise the cause in justice' equal scales,  
Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause prevails.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—LONDON. *The DUKE OF YORK'S Garden.*

*Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*

*York.* Now, my good Lords of Salisbury and Warwick,  
Our simple supper ended, give me leave,  
In this close walk, to satisfy myself,  
In craving your opinion of my title,  
Which is infallible, to England's crown.

*Sal.* My lord, I long to hear it at full.

*War.* Sweet York, begin: and if thy claim be good,  
The Nevils are thy subjects to command.

*York.* Then thus:—

Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons;  
The first, Edward the Black Prince, Prince of Wales;  
The second, William of Hatfield; and the third,  
Lionel Duke of Clarence; next to whom  
Was John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster;  
The fifth was Edmund Langley, Duke of York;  
The sixth was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloster;  
William of Windsor was the seventh and last.  
Edward the Black Prince, died before his father;  
And left behind him Richard, his only son,  
Who, after Edward the Third's death, reign'd as king,  
Till Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaster,

The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,  
 Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth,  
 Seiz'd on the realm, depos'd the rightful king,  
 Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,  
 And him to Pomfret,—where, as all you know,  
 Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously.

*War.* Father, the duke hath told the truth;  
 Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.

*York.* Which now they hold by force, and not by right;  
 For Richard, the first son's heir, being dead,  
 The issue of the next son should have reign'd.

*Sal.* But William of Hatfield died without an heir.

*York.* The third son, Duke of Clarence,—from whose line  
 I claim the crown,—had issue Philippe, a daughter,  
 Who married Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March:  
 Edmund had issue, Roger Earl of March;  
 Roger had issue, Edmund, Anne, and Eleanor.

*Sal.* This Edmund, in the reign of Bolingbroke,  
 As I have read, laid claim unto the crown;  
 And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king,  
 Who kept him in captivity till he died.  
 But, to the rest.

*York.* His eldest sister, Anne,  
 My mother, being heir unto the crown,  
 Married Richard Earl of Cambridge; who was son  
 To Edmund Langley, Edward the Third's fifth son.  
 By her I claim the kingdom: she was heir  
 To Roger Earl of March; who was the son  
 Of Edmund Mortimer; who married Philippe,  
 Sole daughter unto Lionel Duke of Clarence:  
 So, if the issue of the elder son  
 Succeed before the younger, I am king.

*War.* What plain proceeding is more plain than this?  
 Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,  
 The fourth son; York claims it from the third.  
 Till Lionel's issue fails, his should not reign:  
 It fails not yet, but flourishes in thee,  
 And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.—  
 Then, father Salisbury, kneel we together;  
 And in this private plot be we the first  
 That shall salute our rightful sovereign  
 With honour of his birthright to the crown.

*Both.* Long live our sovereign Richard, England's king!

*York.* We thank you, lords. But I am not your king  
 Till I be crown'd, and that my sword be stain'd  
 With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster;

And that's not suddenly to be perform'd,  
 But with advice and silent secrecy.  
 Do you as I do in these dangerous days:  
 Wink at the Duke of Suffolk's insolence,  
 At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,  
 At Buckingham, and all the crew of them,  
 Till they have snar'd the shepherd of the flock,  
 That virtuous prince, the good Duke Humphrey:  
 'Tis that they seek; and they, in seeking that,  
 Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.

*Sal.* My lord, break we off; we know your mind at full.

*War.* My heart assures me that the Earl of Warwick  
 Shall one day make the Duke of York a king.

*York.* And, Nevil, this I do assure myself,—  
 Richard shall live to make the Earl of Warwick  
 The greatest man in England but the king. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. *A Hall of Justice.*

*Trumpets sounded. Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, GLOSTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, and SALISBURY; the DUCHESS OF GLOSTER, MARGERY JOURDAIN, SOUTHWELL, HUME, and BOLINGBROKE, under guard.*

*K. Hen.* Stand forth, Dame Eleanor Cobham, Gloster's  
 In sight of God and us, your guilt is great: [*wife:*]  
 Receive the sentence of the law, for sins  
 Such as by God's book are adjudg'd to death.—  
 You four, from hence to prison back again; [*To JOUR., &c.*]  
 From thence unto the place of execution:  
 The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to ashes,  
 And you three shall be strangled on the gallows.—  
 You, madam, for you are more nobly born,  
 Despoiled of your honour in your life,  
 Shall, after three days' open penance done,  
 Live in your country here, in banishment,  
 With Sir John Stanley, in the Isle of Man.

*Duch.* Welcome is banishment; welcome were my death.

*Glo.* Eleanor, the law, thou seest, hath judged thee:  
 I cannot justify whom the law condemns.—

[*Exeunt the DUCHESS and the other Prisoners, guarded.*]  
 Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.  
 Ah, Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age  
 Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground!—  
 I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go:  
 Sorrow would solace, and mine age would ease.



*K. Hen.* Stay, Humphrey Duke of Gloster: ere thou go,  
Give up thy staff: Henry will to himself  
Protector be; and God shall be my hope,  
My stay, my guide, and lantern to my feet:  
And go in peace, Humphrey,—no less belov'd  
Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

*Q. Mar.* I see no reason why a king of years  
Should be to be protected like a child.—  
God and King Henry govern England's helm!  
Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm.

*Glo.* My staff! here, noble Henry, is my staff:  
As willingly do I the same resign

As ere thy father Henry made it mine;  
And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it  
As others would ambitiously receive it.  
Farewell, good king: when I am dead and gone,  
May honourable peace attend thy throne!

[*Erit*

*Q. Mar.* Why, now is Henry king, and Margaret queen;  
And Humphrey Duke of Gloster scarce himself,  
That bears so shrewd a main; two pulls at once,—  
His lady banish'd and a limb lopp'd off:  
This staff of honour raught, there let it stand  
Where it best fits to be,—in Henry's hand.

*Suf.* Thus droops this lofty pine, and hangs his sprays;  
Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest days.

*York.* Lords, let him go.—Please it your majesty,  
This is the day appointed for the combat;  
And ready are the appellant and defendant,  
The armourer and his man, to enter the lists,  
So please your highness to behold the fight.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord; for purposely therefore  
Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried.

*K. Hen.* O' God's name, see the lists and all things fit:  
Here let them end it; and God defend the right!

*York.* I never saw a fellow worse bested,  
Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant,  
The servant of this armourer, my lords.

*Enter, on one side, HORNER and his Neighbours, drinking to him so much that he is drunk; and he enters bearing his staff with a sand-bag fastened to it; a drum before him: at the other side, PETER, with a drum and a similar staff; accompanied by Prentices drinking to him.*

1 *Neigh.* Here, neighbour Horner, I drink to you in a cup  
of sack; and fear not, neighbour, you shall do well enough.

2 *Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup of charnecco.

3 *Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double beer, neighbour: drink, and fear not your man.

*Hor.* Let it come, i'faith, and I'll pledge you all; and a fig for Peter!

1 *Pren.* Here, Peter, I drink to thee: and be not afraid.

2 *Pren.* Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy master: fight for credit of the prentices.

*Peter.* I thank you all: drink, and pray for me, I pray you; for I think I have taken my last draught in this world.—Here, Robin, an if I die, I give thee my apron:—and, Will, thou shalt have my hammer:—and here, Tom, take all the money that I have.—O Lord bless me, I pray God! for I am never able to deal with my master, he hath learnt so much fence already.

*Sal.* Come, leave your drinking, and fall to blows.—Sirrah, what's thy name?

*Peter.* Peter, forsooth.

*Sal.* Peter! what more?

*Peter.* Thump.

*Sal.* Thump! then see thou thump thy master well.

*Hor.* Masters, I am come hither, as it were, upon my man's instigation, to prove him a knave and myself an honest man: and touching the Duke of York, I will take my death, I never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the queen: and therefore, Peter, have at thee with a downright blow!

*York.* Despatch:—this knave's tongue begins to double.—Sound, trumpets, alarum to the combatants!

[*Alarum.* They fight, and PETER strikes down HORNER.]

*Hor.* Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess treason. [*Dies.*]

*York.* Take away his weapon.—Fellow, thank God, and the good wine in thy master's way.

*Peter.* O God, have I overcome mine enemy in this presence? O Peter, thou hast prevailed in right!

*K. Hen.* Go, take hence that traitor from our sight;

For by his death we do perceive his guilt:

And God in justice hath reveal'd to us

The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,

Which he had thought to have murder'd wrongfully.—

Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward. [*Eccunt.*]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. A Street.

*Enter GLOSTER and Servants, in mourning cloaks.*

*Glo.* Thus sometimes hath the brightest day a cloud;  
And after summer evermore succeeds

Barren winter, with his wrathful nipping cold:  
So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet.—  
Sirs, what 's o'clock?

*Serv.* Ten, my lord.

*Glo.* Ten is the hour that was appointed me  
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess:  
Uneath may she endure the flinty streets,  
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.  
Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind abrook  
The abject people gazing on thy face,  
With envious looks, laughing at thy shame,  
That erst did follow thy proud chariot wheels  
When thou didst ride in triumph through the streets.  
But, soft! I think she comes; and I'll prepare  
My tear-stain'd eyes to see her miseries.

*Enter the DUCHESS OF GLOSTER in a white sheet, with papers pinned upon her back, her feet bare, and a taper burning in her hand; SIR JOHN STANLEY, a Sheriff, and Officers.*

*Serv.* So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff.

*Glo.* No, stir not, for your lives; let her pass by.

*Duch.* Come you, my lord, to see my open shame?  
Now thou dost penance too. Look how they gaze?  
See how the giddy multitude do point,  
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on me!  
Ah, Gloster, hide thee from their hateful looks,  
And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame  
And ban mine enemies,—both mine and thine!

*Glo.* Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief.

*Duch.* Ah, Gloster, teach me to forget myself!  
For, whilst I think I am thy married wife  
And thou a prince, protector of this land,  
Methinks I should not thus be led along,  
Mail'd up in shame, with papers on my back,  
And follow'd with a rabble that rejoice  
To see my tears and hear my deep-fet groans.  
The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet;  
And when I start the envious people laugh,  
And bid me be advis'd how I tread.  
Ah, Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke?  
Trow'st thou that e'er I'll look upon the world,  
Or count them happy that enjoy the sun?  
No; dark shall be my light and night my day;  
To think upon my pomp shall be my hell.  
Sometime I'll say, I am Duke Humphrey's wife,  
And he a prince, and ruler of the land:

Yet so he rul'd, and such a prince he was,  
 As he stood by whilst I, his forlorn duchess,  
 Was made a wonder and a pointing-stock  
 To every idle rascal follower.  
 But be thou mild, and blush not at my shame;  
 Nor stir at nothing, till the axe of death  
 Hang over thee, as sure it shortly will;  
 For Suffolk,—he that can do all in all  
 With her that hateth thee and hates us all,—  
 And York, and impious Beaufort, that false priest,  
 Have all lim'd bushes to betray thy wings,  
 And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle thee:  
 But fear not thou, until thy foot be snar'd,  
 Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.

*Glo.* Ah, Nell, forbear! thou aimest all awry;  
 I must offend before I be attained:  
 And had I twenty times so many foes,  
 And each of them had twenty times their power,  
 All these could not procure me any seathe,  
 So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeless.  
 Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach?  
 Why, yet thy scandal were not wip'd away  
 But I in danger for the breach of law.  
 Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell:  
 I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience;  
 These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

*Enter a Herald.*

*Her.* I summon your grace to his majesty's Parliament,  
 holden at Bury the first of this next month.

*Glo.* And my consent ne'er ask'd herein before!  
 This is close dealing.—Well, I will be there. [*Exit Herald.*  
 My Nell, I take my leave:—and, master sheriff,  
 Let not her penance exceed the king's commission.

*Sher.* An't please your grace, here my commission stays;  
 And Sir John Stanley is appointed now  
 To take her with him to the Isle of Man.

*Glo.* Must you, Sir John, protect my lady here?

*Stan.* So am I given in charge, may't please your grace.

*Glo.* Entreat her not the worse in that I pray  
 You use her well: the world may laugh again;  
 And I may live to do you kindness, if  
 You do it her: and so, Sir John, farewell.

*Duch.* What, gone, my lord, and bid me not farewell!

*Glo.* Witness my tears, I cannot stay to speak.

[*Exit GLOSTER and Servants.*

*Duch.* Art thou gone too? all comfort go with thee!  
For none abides with me: my joy is death,—  
Death, at whose name I oft have been afeard,  
Because I wish'd this world's eternity.—  
Stanley, I pr'ythee go, and take me hence;  
I care not whither, for I beg no favour,  
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

*Stan.* Why, madam, that is to the Isle of Man;  
There to be us'd according to your state.

*Duch.* That's bad enough, for I am but reproach,—  
And shall I, then, be us'd reproachfully?

*Stan.* Like to a duchess and Duke Humphrey's lady;  
According to that state you shall be us'd.

*Duch.* Sheriff, farewell, and better than I fare,—  
Although thou hast been conduct of my shame.

*Sher.* It is my office; and, madam, pardon me.

*Duch.* Ay, ay, farewell; thy office is discharg'd.—  
Come, Stanley, shall we go?

*Stan.* Madam, your penance done, throw off this sheet,  
And go we to attire you for our journey.

*Duch.* My shame will not be shifted with my sheet:  
No, it will hang upon my richest robes,  
And show itself, attire me how I can.  
Go, lead the way; I long to see my prison. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—*The Abbey at Bury.*

*Flourish.* Enter to the Parliament KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK, YORK, BUCKINGHAM, and others.

*K. Hen.* I muse my Lord of Gloster is not come:  
'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,  
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.

*Q. Mar.* Can you not see? or will you not observe  
The strangeness of his alter'd countenance?  
With what a majesty he bears himself;  
How insolent of late he is become,  
How proud, how peremptory, and unlike himself?  
We know the time since he was mild and affable;  
And if we did but glance a far-off look  
Immediately he was upon his knee,

That all the court admir'd him for submission :  
 But meet him now, and he it in the morn,  
 When every one will give the time of day,  
 He knits his brow, and shows an angry eye,  
 And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,  
 Disdaining duty that to us belongs.  
 Small curs are not regarded when they grin ;  
 But great men tremble when the lion roars, —  
 And Humphrey is no little man in England.  
 First note that he is near you in descent ;  
 And should you fall he as the next will mount.  
 Me seemeth, then, it is no policy, —  
 Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears,  
 And his advantage following your decease, —  
 That he should come about your royal person,  
 Or be admitted to your highness' council.  
 By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts ;  
 And when he please to make commotion,  
 'Tis to be fear'd they all will follow him.  
 Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted ;  
 Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the garden,  
 And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.  
 The reverent care I bear unto my lord  
 Made me collect these dangers in the duke.  
 If it be fond, call it a woman's fear ;  
 Which fear, if better reasons can supplant,  
 I will subscribe, and say I wrong'd the duke.  
 My Lord of Suffolk, — Buckingham, — and York, —  
 Reprove my allegation if you can ;  
 Or else conclude my words effectual.

*Suf.* Well hath your highness seen into this duke ;  
 And had I first been put to speak my mind,  
 I think I should have told your grace's tale.  
 The duchess, by his subornation,  
 Upon my life, began her devilish practices :  
 Or, if he were not privy to those faults,  
 Yet, by reputed of his high descent, —  
 As, next the king, he was successive heir,  
 And such high vaunts of his nobility, —  
 Did instigate the bedlam brainsick duchess  
 By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall.  
 Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep ;  
 And in his simple snow he harbours treason.  
 The fox barks not when he would steal the lamb.  
 No, no, my sovereign ; Gloster is a man  
 Unsounded yet, and full of deep deceit.

*Car.* Did he not, contrary to form of law,  
Devise strange deaths for small offences done?

*York.* And did he not, in his protectorship,  
Levy great sums of money through the realm  
For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it?  
By means whereof the towns each day revolted.

*Buck.* Tut, these are petty faults to faults unknown,  
Which time will bring to light in smooth Duke Humphrey.

*K. Hen.* My lords, at once:—the care you have of us,  
To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,  
Is worthy praise: but shall I speak my conscience?  
Our kinsman Gloster is as innocent  
From meaning treason to our royal person  
As is the sucking lamb or harmless dove:  
The duke is virtuous, mild, and too well given  
To dream on evil or to work my downfall.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, what's more dangerous than this fond  
affiance?

Seems he a dove? his feathers are but borrow'd,  
For he's disposed as the hateful raven:  
Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,  
For he's inclin'd as is the ravenous wolf.  
Who cannot steal a shape that means deceit?  
Take heed, my lord; the welfare of us all  
Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man.

*Enter SOMERSET.*

*Som.* All health unto my gracious sovereign!

*K. Hen.* Welcome, Lord Somerset. What news from

*Som.* That all your interest in those territories [France?  
Is utterly bereft you; all is lost.

*K. Hen.* Cold news, Lord Somerset: but God's will be  
done!

*York.* Cold news for me; for I had hope of France  
As firmly as I hope for fertile England.  
Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud,  
And caterpillars eat my leaves away:  
But I will remedy this gear ere long,  
Or sell my title for a glorious grave.

[*Aside.*

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* All happiness unto my lord the king!  
Pardon, my liege, that I have stay'd so long.

*Suf.* Nay, Gloster, know that thou art come too soon,  
Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art:  
I do arrest thee of high treason here.

*Glo.* Well, Suffolk, thou shalt not see me blush  
 Nor change my countenance for this arrest:  
 A heart unspotted is not easily daunted.  
 The purest spring is not so free from mud  
 As I am clear from treason to my sovereign:  
 Who can accuse me? wherein am I guilty?

*York.* 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took bribes of  
 And, being protector, stay'd the soldiers' pay; [France,  
 By means whereof his highness hath lost France.

*Glo.* Is it but thought so? what are they that think it?  
 I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay,  
 Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.  
 So help me God, as I have watch'd the night,—  
 Ay, night by night,—in studying good for England!  
 That do it that e'er I wrested from the king,  
 Or any groat I hoarded to my use,  
 Be brought against me at my trial-day!  
 No; many a pound of mine own proper store,  
 Because I would not tax the needy commons,  
 Have I dispursed to the garrisons,  
 And never ask'd for restitution.

*Car.* It serves you well, my lord, to say so much.

*Glo.* I say no more than truth, so help me God!

*York.* In your protectorship you did devise  
 Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of,  
 That England was defam'd by tyranny.

*Glo.* Why, 'tis well known that, whiles I was protector,  
 Pity was all the fault that was in me;  
 For I should melt at an offender's tears,  
 And lowly words were ransom for their fault.  
 Unless it were a bloody murderer,  
 Or foul felonious thief that fleec'd poor passengers,  
 I never gave them condign punishment:  
 Murder, indeed, that bloody sin, I tortur'd  
 Above the felon or what trespass else.

*Suf.* My lord, these faults are easy, quickly answer'd:  
 But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,  
 Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself.  
 I do arrest you in his highness' name;  
 And here commit you to my lord cardinal  
 To keep, until your further time of trial.

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Gloster, 'tis my special hope  
 That you will clear yourself from all suspect:  
 My conscience tells me you are innocent.

*Glo.* Ah, gracious lord, these days are dangerous!  
 Virtue is chok'd with foul ambition,



And charity chas'd hence by rancour's hand ;  
 Foul subornation is predominant,  
 And equity exil'd your highness' land.  
 I know their complot is to have my life ;  
 And if my death might make this island happy,  
 And prove the period of their tyranny,  
 I would expend it with all willingness :  
 But mine is made the prologue to their play ;  
 For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,  
 Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.  
 Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,  
 And Suffolk's cloudy brow his stormy hate ;  
 Sharp Buckingham unburdens with his tongue  
 The envious load that lies upon his heart ;  
 And dogged York, that reaches at the moon,  
 Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,  
 By false accuse doth level at my life : —  
 And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest,  
 Causeless have laid disgraces on my head,  
 And with your best endeavour have stirr'd up  
 My liefest liege to be mine enemy : —  
 Ay, all of you have laid your heads together, —  
 Myself had notice of your conventicles, —  
 And all to make away my guiltless life.  
 I shall not want false witness to condemn me,  
 Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt :  
 The ancient proverb will be well effected, —  
 A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.

*Car.* My liege, his railing is intolerable :  
 If those that care to keep your royal person  
 From treason's secret knife and traitors' rage  
 Be thus upbraided, chid, and rated at,  
 And the offender granted scope of speech,  
 'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.

*Suf.* Hath he not twit our sovereign lady here  
 With ignominious words, though clerkly couch'd,  
 As if she had suborned some to swear  
 False allegations to o'erthrow his state ?

*Q. Mar.* But I can give the loser leave to chide.

*Glo.* Far truer spoke than meant : I lose, indeed ; —  
 Beshrew the winners, for they play'd me false !  
 And well such losers may have leave to speak.

*Buck.* He'll wrest the sense, and hold us here all day : —  
 Lord cardinal, he is your prisoner.

*Car.* Sirs, take away the duke, and guard him sure.

*Glo.* Ah, thus King Henry throws away his crutch

Before his legs be firm to bear his body!  
 Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side,  
 And wolves are gnarling who shall gnaw thee first.  
 Ah, that my fear were false! ah, that it were!  
 For, good King Henry, thy decay I fear.

[*Exeunt Attendants with GLOSTER.*]

*K. Hen.* My lords, what to your wisdoms seemeth best  
 Do or undo, as if ourself were here.

*Q. Mar.* What, will your highness leave the Parliament?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Margaret; my heart is drown'd with grief,  
 Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes;  
 My body round engirt with misery, --  
 For what's more miserable than discontent? --  
 Ah, uncle Humphrey, in thy face I see  
 The map of honour, truth, and loyalty!  
 And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to come  
 That e'er I prov'd thee false or fear'd thy faith.  
 What lowering star now envies thy estate,  
 That these great lords, and Margaret our queen,  
 Do seek subversion of thy harmless life?  
 Thou never didst them wrong, nor no man wrong:  
 And as the butcher takes away the calf,  
 And binds the wretch, and beats it when it strays,  
 Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house;  
 Even so, remorseless, have they borne him hence:  
 And as the dam runs lowing up and down,  
 Looking the way her harmless young one went,  
 And can do naught but wail her darling's loss;  
 Even so myself bewails good Gloster's case  
 With sad unhelpful tears; and with dimm'd eyes  
 Look after him, and cannot do him good, --  
 So mighty are his vowed enemies.

His fortunes I will weep; and 'twixt each groan,  
 Say, *Who's a traitor? Gloster he is none.*

[*Exit.*]

*Q. Mar.* Free lords, cold snow melts with the sun's hot  
 Henry my lord is cold in great affairs, [beams.  
 Too full of foolish pity: and Gloster's show  
 Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile  
 With sorrow snares relenting passengers;  
 Or as the snake, roll'd in a flowering bank,  
 With shining checker'd slough, doth sting a child,  
 That for the beauty thinks it excellent.  
 Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I, --  
 And yet herein I judge mine own wit good, --  
 This Gloster should be quickly rid the world,  
 To rid us from the fear we have of him.

*Car.* That he should die is worthy policy ;  
But yet we want a colour for his death :  
'Tis meet he be condemn'd by course of law.

*Suf.* But, in my mind, that were no policy :  
The king will labour still to save his life ;  
The commons haply rise to save his life ;  
And yet we have but trivial argument,  
More than mistrust, that shows him worthy death.

*York.* So that, by this, you would not have him  
die.

*Suf.* Ah, York, no man alive so fain as I !

*York.* 'Tis York that hath more reason for his death.—  
But, my lord cardinal, and you, my Lord of Suffolk,—  
Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,—  
Wer't not all one an empty eagle were set  
To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,  
As place Duke Humphrey for the king's protector ?

*Q. Mar.* So the poor chicken should be sure of death.

*Suf.* Madam, 'tis true ; and wer't not madness, then,  
To make the fox surveyor of the fold ?  
Who being accus'd a crafty murderer,  
His guilt should be but idly posted over  
Because his purpose is not executed.  
No ; let him die, in that he is a fox,  
By nature prov'd an enemy to the flock,  
Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood,—  
As Humphrey, prov'd by reasons, to my liege.  
And do not stand on quilllets how to slay him :  
Be it by gins, by snares, by subtlety,  
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,  
So he be dead ; for that is good deceit  
Which mates him first that first intends deceit.

*Q. Mar.* Thrice-noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely spoke.

*Suf.* Not resolute, except so much were done ;  
For things are often spoke and seldom meant :  
But, that my heart accordeth with my tongue,—  
Seeing the deed is meriterious,  
And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,—  
Say but the word, and I will be his priest.

*Car.* But I would have him dead, my Lord of Suffolk,  
Ere you can take due orders for a priest :  
Say you consent, and censure well the deed,  
And I'll provide his executioner,—  
I tender so the safety of my liege.

*Suf.* Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.

*Q. Mar.* And so say I.

*York.* And I: and now we three have spoke it,  
It skills not greatly who impugns our doom.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Great lords, from Ireland am I come **again**,  
To signify that rebels there are up,  
And put the Englishmen unto the sword:  
Send succours, lords, and stop the rage betime,  
Before the wound do grow incurable;  
For, being green, there is great hope of help.

*Car.* A breach that craves a quick expedient **stop!**  
What counsel give you in this weighty cause?

*York.* That Somerset be sent as regent thither:  
'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd;  
Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

*Som.* If York, with all his far-fet policy,  
Had been the regent there instead of me,  
He never would have stay'd in France so long.

*York.* No, not to lose it all, as thou hast done:  
I rather would have lost my life betimes  
Than bring a burden of dishonour home,  
By staying there so long till all were lost.  
Show me one scar charácter'd on thy skin:  
Men's flesh preserv'd so whole do seldom win.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, then, this spark will prove a raging fire  
If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with:—  
No more, good York;—sweet Somerset, be still:—  
Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent there,  
Might happily have prov'd far worse than his.

*York.* What, worse than naught? nay, then, a shame  
take all!

*Som.* And in the number, thee that wishest shame!

*Car.* My Lord of York, try what your fortune is.  
The uncivil kerns of Ireland are in arms,  
And temper clay with blood of Englishmen:  
To Ireland will you lead a band of men,  
Collected choicely, from each county some,  
And try your hap against the Irishmen?

*York.* I will, my lord, so please his majesty.

*Suf.* Why, our authority is his consent;  
And what we do establish he confirms:  
Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand.

*York.* I am content: provide me soldiers, lords,  
Whiles I take order for mine own affairs.

*Suf.* A charge, Lord York, that I will see perform'd.  
But now return we to the false Duke Humphrey.

*Car.* No more of him; for I will deal with him,  
That henceforth he shall trouble us no more  
And so break off; the day is almost spent:  
Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event.

*York.* My Lord of Suffolk, within fourteen days  
At Bristol I expect my soldiers;  
For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.

*Suf.* I'll see it truly done, my Lord of York.

[*Exeunt all but York.*]

*York.* Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts,  
And change misdoubt to resolution:  
Be that thou hop'st to be; or what thou art  
Resign to death,—it is not worth the enjoying:  
Let pale-fac'd fear keep with the mean-born man,  
And find no harbour in a royal heart.  
Faster than spring-time showers comes thought on thought;  
And not a thought but thinks on dignity.  
My brain, more busy than the labouring spider,  
Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies.  
Well, nobles, well, 'tis politicly done,  
To send me packing with an host of men:  
I fear me you but warm the starved snake,  
Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts.  
'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me:  
I take it kindly; yet be well assur'd  
You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands.  
Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band,  
I will stir up in England some black storm  
Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell;  
And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage  
Until the golden circuit on my head,  
Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,  
Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw.  
And for a minister of my intent  
I have seduc'd a headstrong Kentishman,  
John Cade of Ashford,  
To make commotion, as full well he can,  
Under the title of John Mortimer.  
In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade  
Oppose himself against a troop of kerns,  
And fought so long till that his thighs with darts  
Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porpentine;  
And in the end being rescu'd, I have seen him  
Caper upright like a wild Morisco,  
Shaking the bloody darts as he his bells.  
Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty kern,

Hath he conversed with the enemy,  
 And, undiscovered, come to me again,  
 And given me notice of their villainies.  
 This devil here shall be my substitute;  
 For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,  
 In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble:  
 By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,  
 How they affect the house and claim of York.  
 Say he be taken, rack'd, and tortured,  
 I know no pain they can inflict upon him  
 Will make him say I mov'd him to those arms.  
 Say that he thrive,—as 'tis great like he will,—  
 Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength,  
 And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd;  
 For Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,  
 And Henry put apart, the next for me. [Exit.

SCENE II.—BURY. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter certain Murderers, hastily.*

1 *Mur.* Run to my Lord of Suffolk; let him know  
 We have despatch'd the duke, as he commanded.

2 *Mur.* O that it were to do!—What have we done?  
 Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

1 *Mur.* Here comes my lord.

*Enter SUFFOLK.*

*Suf.* Now, sirs, have you despatch'd this thing?

1 *Mur.* Ay, my good lord, he's dead.

*Suf.* Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house;  
 I will reward you for this venturous deed.

The king and all the peers are here at hand:—

Have you laid fair the bed? are all things well,  
 According as I gave directions?

1 *Mur.* 'Tis, my good lord.

*Suf.* Away! be gone. [Exit Murderers.

*Trumpets sounded.* *Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, Lords, and others.*

*K. Hen.* Go, call our uncle to our presence straight;

Say we intend to try his grace to-day,

If he be guilty, as 'tis published.

*Suf.* I'll call him presently, my noble lord. [Exit.

*K. Hen.* Lords, take your places; and, I pray you all,

Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloster  
Than from true evidence, of good esteem,  
He be approv'd in practice culpable.

*Q. Mar.* God forbid any malice should prevail  
That faultless may condemn a nobleman!  
Pray God he may acquit him of suspicion!

*K. Hen.* I thank thee, Margaret; these words content  
me much.—

*Re-enter SUFFOLK.*

How now! why look'st thou pale? why tremblest thou?  
Where is our uncle? what's the matter, Suffolk?

*Suf.* Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloster is dead.

*Q. Mar.* Marry, God forfend!

*Car.* God's secret judgment:—I did dream to-night  
The duke was dumb, and could not speak a word.

*Q. Mar.* How fares my lord?—Help, lords! the king is  
dead. *[The KING swoons.]*

*Som.* Rear up his body; wring him by the nose.

*Q. Mar.* Run, go, help, help!—O Henry, ope thine eye!

*Suf.* He doth revive again:—madam, be patient.

*K. Hen.* O heavenly God!

*Q. Mar.* How fares my gracious lord?

*Suf.* Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry, comfort!

*K. Hen.* What, doth my Lord of Suffolk comfort me?

Came he right now to sing a raven's note,  
Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;  
And thinks he that the chirping of a wren,  
By crying comfort from a hollow breast,  
Can chase away the first conceived sound?  
Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words:  
Lay not thy hands on me; forbear. I say;  
Their touch affrights me, as a serpent's sting.  
Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!  
Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny  
Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world.  
Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding:—  
Yet do not go away:—come, basilisk,  
And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight;  
For in the shade of death I shall find joy,—  
In life but double death, now Gloster's dead.

*Q. Mar.* Why do you rate my Lord of Suffolk thus?  
Although the duke was enemy to him,  
Yet he, most Christian-like, laments his death:  
And for myself,—foe as he was to me,—

Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans,  
Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,  
I would be blind with weeping, sick with groans,  
Look pale as primrose with blood-drinking sighs,  
And all to have the noble duke alive.

What know I how the world may deem of me?

For it is known we were but hollow friends:

It may be judg'd I made the duke away;

So shall my name with slander's tongue be wounded,

And princes' courts be fill'd with my reproach.

This get I by his death: ah me, unhappy!

To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!

*K. Hen.* Ah, woe is me for Gloster, wretched man!

*Q. Mar.* Be woe for me, more wretched than he is.

What, dost thou turn away, and hide thy face?

I am no loathsome leper,—look on me.

What, art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?

Be poisonous too, and kill thy forlorn queen.

Is all thy comfort shut in Gloster's tomb?

Why, then, Dame Margaret was ne'er thy joy:

Erect his statua, and worship it,

And make my image but an alehouse sign.

Was I for this nigh wreck'd upon the sea,

And twice by awkward wind from England's bank

Drove back again unto my native clime?

What boded this but well-forewarning wind

Did seem to say,—Seek not a scorpion's nest,

Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?

What did I then but curs'd the gentle gusts,

And he that loos'd them forth their brazen caves:

And bid them blow towards England's blessed shore,

Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?

Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,

But left that hateful office unto thee:

The pretty-vaulting sea refus'd to drown me;

Knowing that thou wouldst have me drown'd on shore,

With tears as salt as sea, through thy unkindness:

The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands,

And would not dash me with their ragged sides;

Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,

Might in thy palace perish Margaret.

As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,

When from the shore the tempest beat us back,

I stood upon the hatches in the storm:

And when the dusky sky began to robe

My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view,



I took a costly jewel from my neck,—  
 A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,—  
 And threw it towards thy land:—the sea receiv'd it;  
 And so I wish'd thy body might my heart:  
 And even with this I lost fair England's view,  
 And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart,  
 And call'd them blind and dusky spectacles,  
 For losing ken of Albion's wished coast.  
 How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue,—  
 The agent of thy foul inconstancy,—  
 To sit and witch me, as Ascanius did  
 When he to madding Dido would unfold  
 His father's acts, commenc'd in burning Troy!  
 Am I not witch'd like her? or thou not false like him?  
 Ah me, I can no more! die, Margaret!  
 For Henry weeps that thou dost live so long.

*Noise within. Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY. The Commons press to the door.*

*War.* It is reported, mighty sovereign,  
 That good Duke Humphrey traitorously is murder'd  
 By Suffolk and the Cardinal Beaufort's means.  
 The commons, like an angry hive of bees  
 That want their leader, scatter up and down,  
 And care not who they sting in his revenge.  
 Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny  
 Until they hear the order of his death.

*K. Hen.* That he is dead, good Warwick, 'tis too true;  
 But how he died God knows, not Henry:  
 Enter his chamber, view his breathless corpse,  
 And comment then upon his sudden death.

*War.* That I shall do, my liege.—Stay, Salisbury,  
 With the rude multitude till I return.

[*WAR. goes into an inner room; SAL. retires to the Commons at the door.*]

*K. Hen.* O Thou that judgest all things, stay my thoughts,—  
 My thoughts that labour to persuade my soul  
 Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's life!  
 If my suspect be false, forgive me, God;  
 For judgment only doth belong to thee.  
 Fain would I go to chafe his pa'y lips  
 With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain  
 Upon his face an ocean of salt tears;  
 To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,  
 And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling;  
 But all in vain are these mean obsequies;

And to survey his dead and earthly image,  
What were it but to make my sorrow greater?

[*The folding doors of an inner Chamber are thrown open, and GLOSTER is discovered dead in his bed; WARWICK and others standing by it.*

*War.* Come hither, gracious sovereign, view this body.

*K. Hen.* That is to see how deep my grave is made;  
For with his soul fled all my worldly solace;  
For seeing him, I see my life in death.

*War.* As surely as my soul intends to live  
With that dread King that took our state upon him  
To free us from his Father's wrathful curse,  
I do believe that violent hands were laid  
Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke.

*Suf.* A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue!  
What instance gives Lord Warwick for his vow?

*War.* See how the blood is settled in his face!  
Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,  
Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale, and bloodless,  
Being all descended to the labouring heart;  
Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,  
Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy;  
Which with the heart there cools, and ne'er returneth  
To blush and beautify the cheek again.  
But see, his face is black and full of blood;  
His eye-balls further out than when he liv'd,  
Staring full ghastly like a strangled man:  
His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretch'd with struggling;  
His hands abroad display'd, as one that grasp'd  
And tugg'd for life, and was by strength subdu'd:  
Look, on the sheets his hair, you see, is sticking;  
His well-proportioned beard made rough and rugged,  
Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodg'd.  
It cannot be but he was murder'd here;  
The least of all these signs were probable.

*Suf.* Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death?  
Myself and Beaufort had him in protection;  
And we, I hope, sir, are no murderers.

*War.* But both of you were vow'd Duke Humphrey's foes.  
And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep:  
'Tis like you would not feast him like a friend;  
And 'tis well seen he found an enemy.

*Q. Mar.* Then you, belike, suspect these noblemen  
As guilty of Duke Humphrey's timeless death.

*War.* Who finds the heifer dead and bleeding fresh,  
And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,

But will suspect 'twas he that made the slaughter?  
 Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,  
 But may imagine how the bird was dead,  
 Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak?  
 Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

*Q. Mar.* Are you the butcher, Suffolk?—where's your  
 Is Beaufort term'd a kite?—where are his talons? [knife?

*Suf.* I wear no knife to slaughter sleeping men;  
 But here 's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,  
 That shall be scoured in his rancorous heart  
 That slanders me with murder's crimson badge:—  
 Say, if thou dar'st, proud Lord of Warwickshire,  
 That I am faulty in Duke Humphrey's death.

[*Exeunt CAR., SOM., and others.*]

*War.* What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare him?

*Q. Mar.* He dares not calm his contumelious spirit,  
 Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,  
 Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.

*War.* Madam, be still,—with reverence may I say;  
 For every word you speak in his behalf  
 Is slander to your royal dignity.

*Suf.* Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour!  
 If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,  
 Thy mother took into her blameful bed  
 Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock  
 Was graft with crab-tree slip; whose fruit thou art,  
 And never of the Nevils' noble race.

*War.* But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,  
 And I should rob the deathman of his fee,  
 Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,  
 And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild,  
 I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee  
 Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech,  
 And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st,  
 That thou thyself wast born in bastardy;  
 And, after all this fearful homage done,  
 Give thee thy hire, and send thy soul to hell,  
 Pernicious blood-sucker of sleeping men!

*Suf.* Thou shalt be waking while I shed thy blood,  
 If from this presence thou dar'st go with me.

*War.* Away even now, or I will drag thee hence:  
 Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee,  
 And do some service to Duke Humphrey's ghost.

[*Exeunt SUFFOLK and WARWICK.*]

*K. Hen.* What stronger breastplate than a heart untainted!  
 Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just;

And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,  
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

[*A noise within.*]

*Q. Mar.* What noise is this?

*Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their weapons drawn.*

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, lords! your wrathful weapons drawn

Here in our presence! dare you be so bold?—

Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

*Suf.* The traitorous Warwick, with the men of Bury,  
Set all upon me, mighty sovereign.

*Sal.* [*to the Commons at the door.*] Sirs, stand apart: the  
king shall know your mind.— [*He comes forward.*]

Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,  
Unless false Suffolk straight be done to death,  
Or banished fair England's territories,  
They will by violence tear him from your palace,  
And torture him with grievous lingering death.  
They say, by him the good Duke Humphrey died;  
They say, in him they fear your highness' death;  
And mere instinct of love and loyalty,—  
Free from a stubborn opposite intent,  
As being thought to contradict your liking,—  
Makes them thus forward in his banishment.  
They say, in care of your most royal person,  
That if your highness should intend to sleep,  
And charge that no man should disturb your rest,  
In pain of your dislike, or pain of death;  
Yet, notwithstanding such a strait edict,  
Were there a serpent seen, with forked tongue,  
That slyly glided towards your majesty,  
It were but necessary you were wak'd;  
Lest, being suffered in that harmful slumber,  
The mortal worm might make the sleep eternal:  
And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,  
That they will guard you, wh'er you will or no,  
From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is;  
With whose envenomed and fatal sting  
Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,  
They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

*Commons.* [*within.*] An answer from the king, my Lord  
of Salisbury!

*Suf.* 'Tis like the commons, rude unpolish'd hinds,  
Could send such message to their sovereign:

But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,  
To show how quaint an orator you are:  
But all the honour Salisbury hath won  
Is, that he was the lord ambassador  
Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king.

*Commons.* [*within.*] An answer from the king, or we will  
all break in!

*K. Hen.* Go, Salisbury, and tell them all from me,  
I thank them for their tender loving care;  
And had I not been cited so by them,  
Yet did I purpose as they do entreat;  
For, sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy  
Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means:  
And therefore,—by His majesty I swear,  
Whose far unworthy deputy I am,—  
He shall not breathe infection in this air  
But three days longer, on the pain of death. [*Exit SAL.*]

*Q. Mar.* O Henry, let me plead for gentle Suffolk!

*K. Hen.* Ungentle queen, to call him gentle Suffolk!  
No more, I say: if thou dost plead for him,  
Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath.  
Had I but said, I would have kept my word;  
But when I swear, it is irrevocable.—  
If after three days' space thou here be'st found  
On any ground that I am ruler of,  
The world shall not be ransom for thy life.—  
Come, Warwick, come, good Warwick, go with me;  
I have great matters to impart to thee.

[*Exeunt K. HEN., WAR., Lords, &c.*]

*Q. Mar.* Mischance and sorrow go along with you!  
Heart's discontent and sour affliction  
Be playfellows to keep you company!  
There's two of you; the devil make a third!  
And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!

*Suf.* Cease, gentle queen, these execrations,  
And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

*Q. Mar.* Fie, coward woman and soft-hearted wretch!  
Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemies?

*Suf.* A plague upon them! wherefore should I curse them?  
Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's groan,  
I would invent as bitter-searching terms,  
As curst, as harsh, and horrible to hear,  
Deliver'd strongly through my fixed teeth,  
With full as many signs of deadly hate  
As lean-fac'd Envy in her loathsome cave:  
My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words;

Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint ;  
 Mine hair be fix'd on end, as one distract ;  
 Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban :  
 And even now my burden'd heart would break,  
 Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink !  
 Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they taste !  
 Their sweetest shade a grove of cypress trees !  
 Their chiefest prospect murdering basilisks !  
 Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings !  
 Their music frightful as the serpent's hiss ;  
 And boding screech-owls make the concert full !  
 All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell—

*Q. Mar.* Enough, sweet Suffolk ; thou torment'st thyself ;  
 And these dread curses,—like the sun 'gainst glass,  
 Or like an overcharged gun,—recoil,  
 And turn the force of them upon thyself.

*Suf.* You bade me ban, and will you bid me leave ?  
 Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from,  
 Well could I curse away a winter's night,  
 Though standing naked on a mountain top,  
 Where biting cold would never let grass grow,  
 And think it but a minute spent in sport.

*Q. Mar.* O, let me entreat thee, cease ! Give me thy hand,  
 That I may dew it with my mournful tears ;  
 Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,  
 To wash away my woeful monuments.  
 O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand, [*Kisses his hand.*]  
 That thou mightst think upon these by the seal,  
 Through whom a thousand sighs are breath'd for thee !  
 So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief ;  
 'Tis but surmis'd whilst thou art standing by,  
 As one that surfeits thinking on a want.  
 I will repeal thee, or, be well assur'd,  
 Adventure to be banished myself :  
 And banished I am, if but from thee.

Go ; speak not to me ; even now be gone.—  
 O, go not yet !—Even thus two friends condemn'd  
 Embrace, and kiss, and take ten thousand leaves,  
 Loather a hundred times to part than die.  
 Yet now, farewell ; and farewell life with thee !

*Suf.* Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banished,—  
 Once by the king and three times thrice by thee.  
 'Tis not the land I care for, wert thou hence ;  
 A wilderness is populous enough,  
 So Suffolk had thy heavenly company :  
 For where thou art, there is the world itself,

With every several pleasure in the world;  
 And where thou art not, desolation.  
 I can no more :—live thou to joy thy life;  
 Myself to joy in naught but that thou liv'st.

*Enter VAUX.*

*Q. Mar.* Whither goes Vaux so fast? what news, I

*Vaux.* To signify unto his majesty [pr'ythee?  
 That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death;  
 For suddenly a grievous sickness took him,  
 That makes him gasp, and stare, and catch the air,  
 Blaspheming God, and cursing men on earth.  
 Sometime he talks as if Duke Humphrey's ghost  
 Were by his side; sometime he calls the king,  
 And whispers to his pillow, as to him,  
 The secrets of his overcharged soul:  
 And I am sent to tell his majesty  
 That even now he cries aloud for him.

*Q. Mar.* Go tell this heavy message to the king.

[*Exit VAUX.*

Ah me! what is this world! what news are these!  
 But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,  
 Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?  
 Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,  
 And with the southern clouds contend in tears,—  
 Theirs for the earth's increase, mine for my sorrows?  
 Now get thee hence: the king, thou know'st, is coming;—  
 If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.

*Suf.* If I depart from thee I cannot live:  
 And in thy sight to die, what were it else  
 But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap?  
 Here could I breathe my soul into the air,  
 As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe  
 Dying with mother's dug between its lips:  
 Where, from thy sight, I should be raging mad,  
 And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes,  
 To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;  
 So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,  
 Or I should breathe it so into thy body,  
 And then it liv'd in sweet Elysium.  
 To die by thee were but to die in jest;  
 From thee to die were torture more than death:  
 O, let me stay, befall what may befall!

*Q. Mar.* Away! though parting be a fretful corrosive,  
 It is applied to a deathful wound.  
 To France, sweet Suffolk: let me hear from thee;

For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe  
I'll have an Iris that shall find thee out.

*Suf.* I go.

*Q. Mar.* And take my heart with thee.

*Suf.* A jewel, lock'd into the woefull'st cask  
That ever did contain a thing of worth.

Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we;

This way fall I to death.

*Q. Mar.*

This way for me. [*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. CARDINAL BEAUFORT'S  
*Bedchamber.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, SALISBURY, WARWICK, *and others.*  
*The* CARDINAL *in bed; Attendants with him.*

*K. Hen.* How fares my lord? speak, Beaufort, to thy  
sovereign.

*Car.* If thou be'st death I'll give thee England's treasure,  
Enough to purchase such another island,  
So thou wilt let me live and feel no pain.

*K. Hen.* Ah, what a sign it is of evil life  
Where death's approach is seen so terrible!

*War.* Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks to thee.

*Car.* Bring me unto my trial when you will.

Died he not in his bed? where should he die?

Can I make men live, whe'r they will or no?

O, torture me no more! I will confess.—

Alive again? then show me where he is:

I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him.—

He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.—

Comb down his hair; look, look! it stands upright,

Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul!—

Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary

Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.

*K. Hen.* O thou eternal Mover of the heavens,

Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch!

O, beat away the busy meddling fiend

That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul,

And from his bosom purge this black despair!

*War.* See how the pangs of death do make him grin!

*Sal.* Disturb him not, let him pass peaceably.

*K. Hen.* Peace to his soul, if God's good pleasure be!

Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,

Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.—

He dies, and makes no sign:—O God, forgive him!



*War.* So bad a death argues a monstrous life.

*K. Hen.* Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.—  
Close up his eyes, and draw the curtain close;  
And let us all to meditation. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—KENT. *The Sea-shore near Dover.*

*Firing heard at sea. Then enter, from a boat, a Captain, a Master, a Master's Mate, WALTER WHITMORE, and others; with them SUFFOLK, disguised, and other Gentlemen, prisoners.*

*Cap.* The gaudy, blabbing, and remorseful day  
Is crept into the bosom of the sea;  
And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades  
That drag the tragic melancholy night;  
Who with their drowsy, slow, and flagging wings,  
Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty jaws  
Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.  
Therefore bring forth the soldiers of our prize;  
For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs,  
Here shall they make their ransom on the sand,  
Or with their blood stain this discolour'd shore.—  
Master, this prisoner freely give I thee;—  
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this;—  
The other [*pointing to SUFFOLK*], Walter Whitmore, is thy  
share.

*1 Gent.* What is my ransom, master? let me know.

*Mast.* A thousand crowns, or else lay down your head.

*Mate.* And so much shall you give, or off goes yours.

*Cap.* What, think you much to pay two thousand  
crowns,

And bear the name and port of gentlemen?—

Cut both the villains' throats;—for die you shall:—

The lives of those which we have lost in fight

Cannot be counterpois'd with such a petty sum.

*1 Gent.* I'll give it, sir; and therefore spare my life.

*2 Gent.* And so will I, and write home for it straight.

*Whit.* I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard,

And therefore, to revenge it, shalt thou die; [*To SUFFOLK.*

And so should these, if I might have my will.

*Cap.* Be not so rash; take ransom, let him live.

*Suf.* Look on my George,—I am a gentleman:  
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.

*Whit.* And so am I; my name is Walter Whitmore.  
How now! why start'st thou? what, doth death affright?

*Suf.* Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is death.  
A cunning man did calculate my birth,  
And told me that by *Water* I should die:  
Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded;  
Thy name is *Gaultier*, being rightly sounded.

*Whit.* *Gaultier* or *Walter*, which it is I care not  
Never yet did base dishonour blur our name  
But with our sword we wip'd away the blot;  
Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,  
Broke be my sword, my arms torn and defac'd,  
And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!

[*Lays hold on SUFFOLK.*]

*Suf.* Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is a prince,  
The Duke of Suffolk, William de la Poole.

*Whit.* The Duke of Suffolk muffled up in rags!

*Suf.* Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke:  
Jove sometime went disguis'd, and why not I?

*Cap.* But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.

*Suf.* Obscure and lowly swain, King Henry's blood,  
The honourable blood of Lancaster,  
Must not be shed by such a jaded groom.  
Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand and held my stirrup?  
Bareheaded plodded by my foot-cloth mule,  
And thought thee happy when I shook my head?  
How often hast thou waited at my cup,  
Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,  
When I have feasted with Queen Margaret?  
Remember it, and let it make thee crest-fall'n;  
Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride:  
How in our voiding-lobby hast thou stood,  
And duly waited for my coming forth?  
This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,  
And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue.

*Whit.* Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?

*Cap.* First let my words stab him, as he hath me.

*Suf.* Base slave, thy words are blunt, and so art thou.

*Cap.* Convey him hence, and on our long-boat's side  
Strike off his head.

*Suf.* Thou dar'st not, for thy own.

*Cap.* Yes, Poole.

*Suf.* Poole!

*Cap.* Poole! Sir Poole! lord!

Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and dirt  
Troubles the silver spring where England drinks.  
Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth  
For swallowing the treasure of the realm:  
Thy lips, that kiss'd the queen, shall sweep the ground;  
And thou, that smil'dst at good Duke Humphrey's death,  
Against the senseless winds shalt grin in vain,  
Who, in contempt, shall hiss at thee again:  
And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,  
For daring to affy a mighty lord  
Unto the daughter of a worthless king,  
Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.  
By devilish policy art thou grown great,  
And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorg'd  
With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart.  
By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France;  
The false revolting Normans thorough thee  
Disdain to call us lord; and Picardy  
Hath slain their governors, surpris'd our forts,  
And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home.  
The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,—  
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in vain,—  
As hating thee, are rising up in arms:  
And now the house of York,—thrust from the crown  
By shameful murder of a guiltless king  
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,—  
Burns with revenging fire; whose hopeful colours  
Advance our half-fac'd sun, striving to shine,  
Under the which is writ *Invitis nubibus*.  
The commons here in Kent are up in arms:  
And, to conclude, reproach and beggary  
Is crept into the palace of our king,  
And all by thee.—Away! convey him hence.

*Suf.* O that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder  
Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges!  
Small things make base men proud; this villain here,  
Being captain of a pinnacc, threatens more  
Than Bargulus the strong Illyrian pirate.  
Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob bee-hives:  
It is impossible that I should die  
By such a lowly vassal as thyself.  
Thy words move rage and not remorse in me:  
I go of message from the queen to France;  
I charge thee, waft me safely cross the Channel.

*Cap.* Walter,—

*Whit.* Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death.

*Suf.* *Gelidus timor occupat artus*:—'tis thee I fear.

*Whit.* Thou shalt have cause to fear before I leave thee.  
What, are ye daunted now? now will ye stoop?

*I Gent.* My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him fair.

*Suf.* Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,  
Us'd to command, untaught to plead for favour.  
Far be it we should honour such as these  
With humble suit: no, rather let my head  
Stoop to the block than these knees bow to any,  
Save to the God of heaven and to my king;  
And sooner dance upon a bloody pole  
Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.  
True nobility is exempt from fear:—  
More can I bear than you dare execute.

*Cap.* Hale him away, and let him talk no more.

*Suf.* Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,  
That this my death may never be forgot!—

Great men oft die by vile bezonians:

A Roman sworder and banditto slave  
Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand  
Stabb'd Julius Cæsar; savage islanders  
Pompey the Great; and Suffolk dies by pirates.

[*Exit Suf., with Whit. and others.*]

*Cap.* And as for these, whose ransom we have set,  
It is our pleasure one of them depart:—  
Therefore come you with us, and let him go.

[*Exeunt all but the first Gentleman.*]

*Re-enter WHITMORE with SUFFOLK's body.*

*Whit.* There let his head and lifeless body lie,  
Until the queen his mistress bury it. [*Exit.*]

*I Gent.* O barbarous and bloody spectacle!  
His body will I bear unto the king;  
If he revenge it not, yet will his friends;  
So will the queen, that, living, held him dear.

[*Exit with the body.*]

## SCENE II.—*Blackheath.*

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS and JOHN HOLLAND.*

*Geo.* Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a  
lath: they have been up these two days.

*John.* They have the more need to sleep now, then.

*Geo.* I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to dress  
the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

*John.* So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say it was never merry world in England since gentlemen came up.

*Geo.* O miserable age! Virtue is not regarded in handicraftsmen.

*John.* The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

*Geo.* Nay, more, the king's council are no good workmen.

*John.* True; and yet it is said,—Labour in thy vocation; which is as much to say as,—Let the magistrates be labouring men; and therefore should we be magistrates.

*Geo.* Thou hast hit it; for there's no better sign of a brave mind than a hard hand.

*John.* I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham,—

*Geo.* He shall have the skins of our enemies to make dog's leather of.

*John.* And Dick the butcher,—

*Geo.* Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf.

*John.* And Smith the weaver,—

*Geo.* Argo, their thread of life is spun.

*John.* Come, come, let's fall in with them.

*Drum.* Enter CADE, DICK the Butcher, SMITH the Weaver, and others in great number.

*Cade.* We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father,—

*Dick.* Or, rather, of stealing a cade of herrings. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* For our enemies shall fall before us,—inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes.—Command silence.

*Dick.* Silence!

*Cade.* My father was a Mortimer,—

*Dick.* He was an honest man and a good bricklayer. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* My mother a Plantagenet,—

*Dick.* I knew her well; she was a midwife. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* My wife descended of the Lacies,—

*Dick.* She was, indeed, a pedlar's daughter, and sold many laces. [*Aside.*]

*Smith.* But now of late, not able to travel with her furred pack, she washes bucks here at home. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* Therefore am I of an honourable house.

*Dick.* Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there was he born under a hedge,—for his father had never a house but the cage. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* Valiant I am.

*Smith.* 'A must needs; for beggary is valiant. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* I am able to endure much.

*Dick.* No question of that; for I have seen him whipped three market days together. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* I fear neither sword nor fire.

*Smith.* He need not fear the sword; for his coat is of proof. [*Aside.*

*Dick.* But methinks he should stand in fear of fire, being burnt i' the hand for stealing of sheep. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Be brave, then; for your captain is brave, and vows reformation. There shall be in England seven half-penny loaves sold for a penny: the three-hooped pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer: all the realm shall be in common; and in Cheapside shall my palfrey go to grass: and when I am king,—as king I will be,—

*All.* God save your majesty!

*Cade.* I thank you, good people:—there shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score; and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worship me their lord.

*Dick.* The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

*Cade.* Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? that parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say the bee stings; but I say 'tis the bee's wax; for I did but seal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since.—How now! who's there?

*Enter some, bringing in the Clerk of Chatham.*

*Smith.* The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read and cast account.

*Cade.* O monstrous!

*Smith.* We took him setting of boys' copics.

*Cade.* Here's a villain!

*Smith.* Has a book in his pocket with red letters in't.

*Cade.* Nay, then, he is a conjurer.

*Dick.* Nay, he can make obligations and write court-hand.

*Cade.* I am sorry for't: the man is a proper man, on mine honour: unless I find him guilty, he shall not die.—Come hither, sirrah, I must examine thee: what is thy name?

*Clerk.* Emmanuel.

*Dick.* They use to write it on the top of letters: 'twill go hard with you.

*Cade.* Let me alone.—Dost thou use to write thy name?

or hast thou a mark to thyself, like an honest plain-dealing man?

*Clerk.* Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up that I can write my name.

*All.* He hath confessed: away with him! he's a villain and a traitor.

*Cade.* Away with him, I say! hang him with his pen and inkhorn about his neck. [*Exeunt some with the Clerk.*]

*Enter MICHAEL.*

*Mich.* Where's our general?

*Cade.* Here I am, thou particular fellow.

*Mich.* Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the king's forces.

*Cade.* Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee down. He shall be encountered with a man as good as himself: he is but a knight, is 'a'?

*Mich.* No.

*Cade.* To equal him, I will make myself a knight presently. [*Kneels.*] Rise up Sir John Mortimer. [*Rises.*] Now have at him!

*Enter SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD and WILLIAM his Brother, with drum and Forces.*

*Staf.* Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum of Kent,  
Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons down;  
Home to your cottages, forsake this groom:—  
The king is merciful if you revolt.

*W. Staf.* But angry, wrathful, and inclin'd to blood  
If you go forward; therefore yield or die.

*Cade.* As for these silken-coated slaves, I pass not:  
It is to you, good people, that I speak,  
O'er whom, in time to come, I hope to reign;  
For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

*Staf.* Villain, thy father was a plasterer;  
And thou thyself a shearman,—art thou not?

*Cade.* And Adam was a gardener.

*W. Staf.* And what of that?

*Cade.* Marry, this:—Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March,  
Married the Duke of Clarence' daughter,—did he not?

*Staf.* Ay, sir.

*Cade.* By her he had two children at one birth.

*W. Staf.* That's false.

*Cade.* Ay, there's the question; but I say 'tis true:  
The elder of them, being put to nurse,  
Was by a beggar-woman stol'n away;

And, ignorant of his birth and parentage,  
Became a bricklayer when he came to age:  
His son am I; deny it, if you can.

*Dick.* Nay, 'tis too true; therefore he shall be king.

*Smith.* Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house, and the bricks are alive at this day to testify it; therefore deny it not.

*Staf.* And will you credit this base drudge's words,  
That speaks he knows not what?

*All.* Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

*W. Staf.* Jack Cade, the Duke of York hath taught you this.

*Cade.* He lies, for I invented it myself. [*Aside.*—Go to, sirrah, tell the king from me, that, for his father's sake, Henry the Fifth, in whose time boys went to span-counter for French crowns, I am content he shall reign; but I'll be protector over him.

*Dick.* And furthermore, we'll have the Lord Say's head, for selling the dukedom of Maine.

*Cade.* And good reason; for thereby is England maimed, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up. Fellow kings, I tell you that that Lord Say hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it an eunuch: and more than that, he can speak French; and therefore he is a traitor.

*Staf.* O gross and miserable ignorance!

*Cade.* Nay, answer, if you can:—the Frenchmen are our enemies; go to, then, I ask but this,—can he that speaks with the tongue of an enemy be a good counsellor, or no?

*All.* No, no; and therefore we'll have his head.

*W. Staf.* Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail,  
Assail them with the army of the king.

*Staf.* Herald, away; and throughout every town  
Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade;  
That those which fly before the battle ends  
May, even in their wives' and children's sight,  
Be hang'd up for example at their doors:—  
And you that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two STAFFORDS and Forces.*]

*Cade.* And you that love the commons, follow me.—  
Now show yourselves men; 'tis for liberty.  
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman:  
Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon;  
For they are thrifty honest men, and such  
As would—but that they dare not—take our parts.

*Dick.* They are all in order, and march toward us.



*Cade.* But then are we in order when we are most out of order. Come, march forward. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Another part of Blackheath.*

*Alarums.* *The two parties enter and fight, and both the STAFFORDS are slain.*

*Cade.* Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?

*Dick.* Here, sir.

*Cade.* They fell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behavedst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house: therefore thus will I reward thee,—the Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a license to kill for a hundred lacking one, a week.

*Dick.* I desire no more.

*Cade.* And, to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear [*putting on part of SIR H. STAFFORD'S armour*]; and the bodies shall be dragged at my horse's heels till I do come to London, where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us.

*Dick.* If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the gaols, and let out the prisoners.

*Cade.* Fear not that, I warrant thee.—Come, let's march towards London. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter KING HENRY, reading a supplication; the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and LORD SAY with him: at a distance, QUEEN MARGARET mourning over SUFFOLK'S head.*

*Q. Mar.* Oft have I heard that grief softens the mind,  
And makes it fearful and degenerate;

Think therefore on revenge, and cease to weep.

But who can cease to weep, and look on this?

Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast:

But where's the body that I should embrace?

*Buck.* What answer makes your grace to the rebels' supplication?

*K. Hen.* I'll send some holy bishop to entreat;

For God forbid so many simple souls

Should perish by the sword! And I myself,

Rather than bloody war shall cut them short,

Will parley with Jack Cade their general:—

But stay, I'll read it over once again.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, barbarous villains! hath this lovely face  
Rul'd, like a wandering planet, over me,  
And could it not enforce them to relent  
That were unworthy to behold the same?

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy  
head.

*Say.* Ay, but I hope your highness shall have his.

*K. Hen.* How now, madam!  
Still lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?  
I fear, my love, if that I had been dead,  
Thou wouldest not have mourn'd so much for me.

*Q. Mar.* No, my love, I should not mourn, but die for  
thee.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*K. Hen.* How now! what news? why com'st thou in  
such haste?

*Mess.* The rebels are in Southwark; fly, my lord!  
Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer,  
Descended from the Duke of Clarence' house;  
And calls your grace usurper openly,  
And vows to crown himself in Westminster.  
His army is a ragged multitude  
Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless:  
Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death  
Hath given them heart and courage to proceed:  
All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,  
They call false caterpillars, and intend their death.

*K. Hen.* O graceless men! they know not what they  
do.

*Buck.* My gracious lord, retire to Killingworth  
Until a power be rais'd to put them down.

*Q. Mar.* Ah! were the Duke of Suffolk now alive,  
These Kentish rebels would be soon appeas'd.

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, the traitors hate thee;  
Therefore away with us to Killingworth.

*Say.* So might your grace's person be in danger;  
The sight of me is odious in their eyes:  
And therefore in this city will I stay,  
And live alone as secret as I may.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*2 Mess.* Jack Cade hath gotten London Bridge;  
The citizens fly and forsake their houses;  
The rascal people, thirsting after prey,  
Join with the traitor; and they jointly swear  
To spoil the city and your royal court.

*Buck.* Then linger not, my lord; away, take horse.

*K. Hen.* Come, Margaret; God, our hope, will succour us.

*Q. Mar.* My hope is gone, now Suffolk is deceas'd.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my lord [*to LORD SAY*]: trust not the Kentish rebels.

*Buck.* Trust nobody, for fear you be betray'd.

*Say.* The trust I have is in mine innocence,  
And therefore am I bold and resolute. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE V.—LONDON. *The Tower.*

*Enter LORD SCALES and others, on the Walls. Then enter certain Citizens, below.*

*Scales.* How now! is Jack Cade slain?

*1 Cit.* No, my lord, nor likely to be slain; for they have won the bridge, killing all those that withstand them: the lord mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower, to defend the city from the rebels.

*Scales.* Such aid as I can spare, you shall command;  
But I am troubled here with them myself,—  
The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower.  
But get you to Smithfield, and gather head,  
And thither I will send you Matthew Gough;  
Fight for your king, your country, and your lives;  
And so, farewell, for I must hence again. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE VI.—LONDON. *Cannon Street.*

*Enter JACK CADE and his Followers. He strikes his staff on London stone.*

*Cade.* Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London stone, I charge and command that, of the city's cost, the pissing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now henceforward it shall be treason for any that calls me other than Lord Mortimer.

*Enter a Soldier, running.*

*Sold.* Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

*Cade.* Kneek him down there. [*They kill him.*]

*Smith.* If this fellow be wise, he'll never call you Jack Cade more; I think he hath a very fair warning.

*Dick.* My lord, there 's an army gathered together in Smithfield.

*Cade.* Come, then, let's go fight with them: but first, go and set London Bridge on fire; and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let's away. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—LONDON. *Smithfield.*

*Alarums.* *Enter, on one side, CADE and his Company; on the other, Citizens, and the KING'S Forces, headed by MATTHEW GOUGH. They fight; the Citizens are routed, and MATTHEW GOUGH is slain.*

*Cade.* So, sirs:—now go some and pull down the Savoy; others to the inns of court; down with them all.

*Dick.* I have a suit unto your lordship.

*Cade.* Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that word.

*Dick.* Only, that the laws of England may come out of your mouth.

*John.* Mass, 'twill be sore law then; for he was thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis not whole yet. [*Aside.*]

*Smith.* Nay, John, it will be stinking law; for his breath stinks with eating toasted cheese. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away, burn all the records of the realm: my mouth shall be the Parliament of England.

*John.* Then we are like to have biting statutes, unless his teeth be pulled out. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* And henceforward all things shall be in common.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, a prize, a prize! here's the Lord Say, which sold the towns in France; he that made us pay one-and-twenty fifteens, and one shilling to the pound, the last subsidy.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS, with the LORD SAY.*

*Cade.* Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times.—Ah, thou say, thou serge, nay, thou buckram lord! now art thou within point blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst thou answer to my majesty for giving up of Normandy unto Monsieur Basimecu, the Dauphin of France? Be it known unto thee by these presence, even the presence of Lord Mortimer, that I am the besom that must sweep the court clean of such filth as thou art. Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm in erecting a grammar school: and whereas, before, our forefathers





H. GOOSE, PINX.

JACK CADE AND LORD JAI

*Second Part of King Henry VI. Act II. Scene III*







had no other books but the score and the tally, thou hast caused printing to be used; and, contrary to the king, his crown, and dignity, thou hast built a paper-mill. It will be proved to thy face that thou hast men about thee that usually talk of a noun and a verb, and such abominable words as no Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put them in prison; and because they could not read, thou hast hanged them; when, indeed, only for that cause they have been most worthy to live. Thou dost ride in a footcloth, dost thou not?

*Say.* What of that?

*Cade.* Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy horse wear a cloak, when honest men than thou go in their hose and doublets.

*Dick.* And work in their shirt too; as myself, for example, that am a butcher.

*Say.* You men of Kent,—

*Dick.* What say you of Kent?

*Say.* Nothing but this,—'tis *bona terra, mala gens.*

*Cade.* Away with him, away with him! he speaks Latin.

*Say.* Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.

Kent, in the Commentaries Cæsar writ,  
Is term'd the civill'st place of all this isle:  
Sweet is the country, because full of riches;  
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;  
Which makes me hope you are not void of pity.  
I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy;  
Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.  
Justice with favour have I always done;  
Prayers and tears have mov'd me, gifts could never.  
When have I aught exacted at your hands,  
But to maintain the king, the realm, and you?  
Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks,  
Because my book prefer'd me to the king,  
And seeing ignorance is the curse of God,  
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven.  
Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,  
You cannot but forbear to murder me:  
This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings  
For your behoof,—

*Cade.* Tut, when struck'st thou one blow in the field?

*Say.* Great men have reaching hands: oft have I struck  
Those that I never saw, and struck them dead.

*Geo.* O monstrous coward! what, to come behind folks?

*Say.* These cheeks are pale for watching for your good.

*Cade.* Give him a box o' the ear, and that will make 'em red again.

*Say.* Long sitting to determine poor men's causes Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

*Cade.* Ye shall have a hempen caudle, then, and the help of hatchet.

*Dick.* Why dost thou quiver, man?

*Say.* The palsy, and not fear, provokes me.

*Cade.* Nay, he nods at us, as who should say, I'll be even with you: I'll see if his head will stand steadier on a pole, or no. Take him away, and behead him.

*Say.* Tell me wherein have I offended most?

Have I affected wealth or honour,—speak?

Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold?

Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?

Whom have I injur'd, that ye seek my death?

These hands are free from guiltless blood-shedding,

This breast from harbouring foul deceitful thoughts.

O let me live!

*Cade.* I feel remorse in myself with his words; but I'll bridle it: he shall die, an it be but for pleading so well for his life. [*Aside.*] Away with him! he has a familiar under his tongue; he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him away, I say, and strike off his head presently; and then break into his son-in-law's house, Sir James Cromer, and strike off his head, and bring them both upon two poles hither.

*All.* It shall be done.

*Say.* Ah, countrymen! if when you make your prayers, God should be so obdurate as yourselves,

How would it fare with your departed souls?

And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

*Cade.* Away with him, and do as I command ye.

[*Exeunt some with LORD SAY.*]

The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a head on his shoulders, unless he pay me tribute; there shall not a maid be married, but she shall pay to me her maidenhead ere they have it: men shall hold of me *in capite*; and we charge and command that their wives be as free as heart can wish or tongue can tell.

*Dick.* My lord, when shall we go to Cheapside, and take up commodities upon our bills?

*Cade.* Marry, presently.

*All.* O brave!

*Re-enter Rebels, with the heads of LORD SAY and his Son-in-law.*

*Cade.* But is not this braver?—Let them kiss one another, for they loved well when they were alive. Now, part them again, lest they consult about the giving up of some more towns in France. Soldiers, defer the spoil of the city until night: for with these borne before us, instead of maces, will we ride through the streets; and at every corner have them kiss.—Away! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII.—*Southwark.*

*Alarum. Enter CADE and all his Rabblement.*

*Cade.* Up Fish Street! down Saint Magnus' corner! kill and knock down! throw them into Thames!—[*A parley sounded, then a retreat.*] What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley, when I command them kill?

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and LORD CLIFFORD, with Forces.*

*Buck.* Ay, here they be that dare and will disturb thee: Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king Unto the commons whom thou hast misled; And here pronounce free pardon to them all That will forsake thee and go home in peace.

*Clif.* What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent, And yield to mercy whilst 'tis offer'd you; Or let a rebel lead you to your deaths? Who loves the king, and will embrace his pardon, Fling up his cap, and say, God save his majesty! Who hateth him, and honours not his father, Henry the Fifth, that made all France to quake, Shake he his weapon at us and pass by.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Cade.* What, Buckingham and Clifford, are ye so brave?—And you, base peasants, do ye believe him? will you needs be hanged with your pardons about your necks? Hath my sword therefore broke through London gates, that you should leave me at the White Hart in Southwark? I thought ye would never have given out these arms till you had recovered your ancient freedom: but you are all recreants and dastards, and delight to live in slavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs with burdens, take your houses over your heads, ravish your wives and daughters before

your faces: for me, I will make shift for one; and so, God's curse light upon you all!

*All.* We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade!

*Clif.* Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth,  
That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him?  
Will he conduct you through the heart of France,  
And make the meanest of you earls and dukes?  
Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to;  
Nor knows he how to live, but by the spoil,  
Unless by robbing of your friends and us.  
Were't not a shame, that whilst you live at jar,  
The fearful French, whom you late vanquished,  
Should make a start o'er seas and vanquish you?  
Methinks already in this civil broil  
I see them lording it in London streets,  
Crying *Viliaco!* unto all they meet.  
Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry  
Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's mercy.  
To France, to France, and get what you have lost;  
Spare England, for it is your native coast:  
Henry hath money, you are strong and manly;  
God on our side, doubt not of victory.

*All.* A Clifford! a Clifford! we'll follow the king and Clifford.

*Cade.* Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro as this multitude? The name of Henry the Fifth hales them to an hundred mischiefs, and makes them leave me desolate. I see them lay their heads together to surprise me: my sword make way for me, for here is no staying [*aside*].—In despite of the devils and hell, have through the very midst of you! and heavens and honour be witness that no want of resolution in me, but only my followers' base and ignominious treasons, makes me betake me to my heels. [*Exit.*]

*Buck.* What! is he fled? go some and follow him;  
And he that brings his head unto the king  
Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.— [*Exeunt some.*]  
Follow me, soldiers: we'll devise a mean  
To reconcile you all unto the king. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IX.—*Killingworth Castle.*

*Trumpets sounded.* Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, and SOMERSET, on the terrace of the Castle.

*K. Hen.* Was ever king that joy'd an earthly throne,  
And could command no more content than I?

No sooner was I crept out of my cradle  
 But I was made a king, at nine months old:  
 Was never subject long'd to be a king  
 As I do long and wish to be a subject.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM and LORD CLIFFORD.

*Buck.* Health and glad tidings to your majesty!

*K. Hen.* Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surpris'd?  
 Or is he but retir'd to make him strong?

*Enter, below, a number of CADE'S Followers, with halters  
 about their necks.*

*Clif.* He is fled, my lord, and all his powers do yield;  
 And humbly thus, with halters on their necks,  
 Expect your highness' doom of life or death.

*K. Hen.* Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates,  
 To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!  
 Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives,  
 And show'd how well you love your prince and country:  
 Continue still in this so good a mind,  
 And Henry, though he be infortunate,  
 Assure yourselves, will never be unkind:  
 And so, with thanks and pardon to you all,  
 I do dismiss you to your several countries.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Please it your grace to be advértised  
 The Duke of York is newly come from Ireland;  
 And with a puissant and a mighty power  
 Of Gallowglasses and stout kerns  
 Is marching hitherward in prond array:  
 And still proclaimeth, as he comes along,  
 His arms are only to remove from thee  
 The Duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor.

*K. Hen.* Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade and York  
 distress'd;

Like to a ship that, having 'scap'd a tempest,  
 Is straightway calm'd, and boarded with a pirate:  
 But now is Cade driven back, his men dispers'd;  
 And now is York in arms to second him.—  
 I pray thee, Buckingham, go thou and meet him;  
 And ask him what's the reason of these arms.  
 Tell him I'll send Duke Edmund to the Tower;—  
 And, Somerset, we will commit thee thither,  
 Until his army be dismiss'd from him.

*Som.* My lord,  
I'll yield myself to prison willingly,  
Or unto death, to do my country good.

*K. Hen.* In any case be not too rough in terms;  
For he is fierce, and cannot brook hard language.

*Buck.* I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal  
As all things shall redound unto your good.

*K. Hen.* Come, wife, let's in, and learn to govern better;  
For yet may England curse my wretched reign. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE X.—KENT. IDEN'S Garden.

*Enter CADE.*

*Cade.* Fie on ambition! fie on myself, that have a sword,  
and yet am ready to famish! These five days have I hid me  
in these woods, and durst not peep out, for all the country  
is laid for me; but now am I so hungry that if I might have  
a lease of my life for a thousand years, I could stay no longer.  
Wherefore, on a brick wall have I climbed into this garden,  
to see if I can eat grass or pick a sallet another while, which  
is not aniss to cool a man's stomach this hot weather. And  
I think this word *sallet* was born to do me good: for many  
a time, but for a sallet, my brain-pan had been cleft with  
a brown bill; and many a time, when I have been dry, and  
bravely marching, it hath served me instead of a quart-pot  
to drink in; and now the word *sallet* must serve me to feed  
on.

*Enter IDEN, with Servants behind.*

*Iden.* Lord, who would live turmoiled in the court,  
And may enjoy such quiet walks as these?  
This small inheritance my father left me  
Contenteth me, and 's worth a monarchy.  
I seek not to wax great by others' waning,  
Or gather wealth I care not with what envy:  
Sufficeth that I have maintains my state,  
And sends the poor well pleased from my gate.

*Cade.* Here's the lord of the soil come to seize me for a  
stray, for entering his fee-simple without leave [*aside*]. Ah,  
villain, thou wilt betray me, and get a thousand crowns  
of the king by carrying my head to him! but I'll make  
thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swallow my sword like  
a great pin, ere thou and I part.

*Iden.* Why, rude companion, whatsoe'er thou be,  
I know thee not; why, then, should I betray thee?

Is't not enough to break into my garden,  
 And like a thief to come to rob my grounds,  
 Climbing my walls in spite of me the owner,  
 But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms?

*Cade.* Brave thee! ay, by the best blood that ever was  
 broached, and beard thee too. Look on me well: I have  
 eat no meat these five days; yet, come thou and thy five  
 men, and if I do not leave you all as dead as a door nail, I  
 pray God I may never eat grass more.

*Iden.* Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while England stands,  
 That Alexander Iden, an esquire of Kent,  
 Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.  
 Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine,  
 See if thou canst outface me with thy looks:  
 Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;  
 Thy hand is but a finger to my fist;  
 Thy leg a stick compared with this truncheon;  
 My foot shall fight with all the strength thou hast;  
 And if mine arm be heaved in the air,  
 Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.

As for words, whose greatness answers words,  
 Let this my sword report what speech forbears.

*Cade.* By my valour, the most complete champion that ever  
 I heard.—Steel, if thou turn the edge, or cut not out the  
 burley-boned clown in chines of beef ere thou sleep in thy  
 sheath, I beseech Jove, on my knees, thou mayest be turned  
 to hobnails. [*They fight, CADE falls.*] O, I am slain!  
 Famine and no other hath slain me: let ten thousand devils  
 come against me, and give me but the ten meals I have lost,  
 and I'd defy them all. Wither, garden; and be henceforth  
 a burying-place to all that do dwell in this house, because  
 the unconquered soul of Cade is fled.

*Iden.* Is't Cade that I have slain, that monstrous traitor?  
 Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,  
 And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead:  
 Ne'er shall this blood be wiped from thy point;  
 But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat,  
 To emblaze the honour that thy master got.

*Cade.* Iden, farewell; and be proud of thy victory. Tell  
 Kent from me, she hath lost her best man; and exhort all  
 the world to be cowards,—for I, that never feared any, am  
 vanquished by famine, not by valour. [*Dies.*]

*Iden.* How much thou wrongst me, heaven be my judge.  
 Die, damned wretch, the curse of her that bare thee!  
 And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,  
 So wish I, I might thrust thy soul to hell.

Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels  
 Unto a dunghill, which shall be thy grave,  
 And there cut off thy most ungracious head;  
 Which I will bear in triumph to the king,  
 Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon.

[*Exeunt, dragging out the body.*]

---

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.*

*The KING's Camp on one side. On the other, enter YORK attended, with drum and colours: his Forces at some distance.*

*York.* From Ireland thus comes York to claim his right,  
 And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's head:  
 Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and bright;  
 To entertain great England's lawful king.  
 Ah, *sancta majestas!* who would not buy thee dear?  
 Let them obey that know not how to rule;  
 This hand was made to handle naught but gold.  
 I cannot give due action to my words  
 Except a sword or sceptre balance it:  
 A sceptre shall it have,—have I a soul,—  
 On which I'll toss the flower-de-luce of France.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb me?  
 The king hath sent him, sure: I must dissemble. [*Aside.*]

*Buck.* York, if thou meanest well, I greet thee well.

*York.* Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept thy greeting.  
 Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?

*Buck.* A messenger from Henry, our dread liege,  
 To know the reason of these arms in peace;  
 Or why thou, being a subject as I am,  
 Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn,  
 Shouldst raise so great a power without his leave,  
 Or dare to bring thy force so near the court.

*York.* Scarce can I speak, my choler is so great:  
 O, I could hew up rocks and fight with flint,  
 I am so angry at these abject terms;  
 And now, like Ajax Telamonius,  
 On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury!



I am far better born than is the king ;  
 More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts :  
 But I must make fair weather yet awhile,  
 Till Henry be more weak and I more strong. [Aside  
 Buckingham, I pry'thee, pardon me,  
 That I have given no answer all this while ;  
 My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.  
 The cause why I have brought this army hither  
 Is to remove proud Somerset from the king,  
 Seditious to his grace and to the state.

*Buck.* That is too much presumption on thy part :  
 But if thy arms be to no other end,  
 The king hath yielded unto thy demand ;  
 The Duke of Somerset is in the Tower.

*York.* Upon thine honour, is he prisoner ?

*Buck.* Upon mine honour, he is prisoner.

*York.* Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my powers.—  
 Soldiers, I thank you all ; disperse yourselves ;  
 Meet me to-morrow in Saint George's field,  
 You shall have pay and everything you wish.—  
 And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,  
 Command my eldest son, nay, all my sons,  
 As pledges of my fealty and love ;  
 I'll send them all as willing as I live :  
 Lands, goods, horse, armour, anything I have,  
 Is his to use, so Somerset may die.

*Buck.* York, I commend this kind submission :  
 We twain will go into his highness' tent.

*Enter KING HENRY, attended.*

*K. Hen.* Buckingham, doth York intend no harm to us,  
 That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm ?

*York.* In all submission and humility  
 York doth present himself unto your highness.

*K. Hen.* Then what intend these forces thou dost bring ?

*York.* To heave the traitor Somerset from hence,  
 And fight against that monstrous rebel Cade,  
 Who since I heard to be discomfited.

*Enter IDEN, with CADE'S head.*

*Iden.* If one so rude and of so mean condition  
 May pass into the presence of a king,  
 Lo, I present your grace a traitor's head,  
 The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

*K. Hen.* The head of Cade!—Great God, how just art  
 thou!—

O, let me view his visage, being dead,  
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble.—  
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?

*Iden.* I was, an't like your majesty.

*K. Hen.* How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?

*Iden.* Alexander Iden, that's my name;  
A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.

*Buck.* So please it you, my lord, 'twere not amiss  
He were created knight for his good service.

*K. Hen.* Iden, kneel down. [*He kneels.*] Rise up a knight.  
We give thee for reward a thousand marks;  
And will that thou henceforth attend on us.

*Iden.* May Iden live to merit such a bounty,  
And never live but true unto his liege!

*K. Hen.* See, Buckingham! Somerset comes with the  
queen:

Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET and SOMERSET.*

*Q. Mar.* For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,  
But boldly stand and front him to his face.

*York.* How now! is Somerset at liberty?  
Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison'd thoughts,  
And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.  
Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?—

False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,  
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?

King did I call thee? no, thou art not king;

Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,

Which dar'st not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor.

That head of thine doth not become a crown;

Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,

And not to grace an awful princely sceptre.

That gold must round engirt these brows of mine,

Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,

Is able with the change to kill and cure.

Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,

And with the same to act controlling laws.

Give place: by heaven, thou shalt rule no more

O'er him whom heaven created for thy ruler.

*Som.* O monstrous traitor!—I arrest thee, York,

Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:

Obeys, audacious traitor; kneel for grace.

*York.* Wouldst have me kneel? first let me ask of these,  
If they can brook I bow a knee to man.—

Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail: [*Exit an Attendant.*]

I know, ere they will have me go to ward,  
They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchisement.

*Q. Mar.* Call hither Clifford; bid him come amain,  
To say if that the bastard boys of York  
Shall be the surety for their traitor father. [*Exit an Attendant.*]

*York.* O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,  
Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!  
The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,  
Shall be their father's bail; and bane to those  
That for my surety will refuse the boys!  
See where they come: I'll warrant they'll make it good.

*Q. Mar.* And here comes Clifford to deny their bail.

*Enter EDWARD and RICHARD PLANTAGENET, with Forces, at one side; at the other, with Forces also, LORD CLIFFORD and his Son.*

*Clif.* Health and all happiness to my lord the king!

[*Kneels.*]

*York.* I thank thee, Clifford: say, what news with thee?  
Nay, do not fright us with an angry look;  
We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;  
For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee.

*Clif.* This is my king, York, I do not mistake;  
But thou mistak'st me much to think I do:—  
To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious humour  
Makes him oppose himself against his king.

*Clif.* He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,  
And chop away that factious pate of his.

*Q. Mar.* He is arrested, but will not obey;  
His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.

*York.* Will you not, sons?

*Edw.* Ay, noble father, if our words will serve.

*Rich.* And if words will not, then our weapons shall.

*Clif.* Why, what a brood of traitors have we here!

*York.* Look in a glass, and call thy image so:  
I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor.—  
Call hither to the stake my two brave bears,  
That with the very shaking of their chains  
They may astonish these fell-lurking curs:  
Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me.

*Drums.* *Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY, with Forces.*

*Clif.* Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death,  
And manacle the bear-ward in their chains,  
If thou dar'st bring them to the baiting-place.

*Rich.* Oft have I seen a hot o'erweeping cur  
Run back and bite, because he was withheld;  
Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,  
Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs and cried:  
And such a piece of service will you do,  
If you oppose yourselves to match Lord Warwick.

*Clif.* Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested lump,  
As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

*York.* Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon.

*Clif.* Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.

*K. Hen.* Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow?—  
Old Salisbury,—shame to thy silver hair,  
Thou mad misleader of thy brainsick son!—  
What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,  
And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?—  
O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?  
If it be banish'd from the frosty head,  
Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?—  
Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,  
And shame thine honourable age with blood?  
Why art thou old, and want'st experience?  
Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?  
For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me,  
That bows unto the grave with nickle age.

*Sal.* My lord, I have consider'd with myself  
The title of this most renowned duke;  
And in my conscience do repute his grace  
The rightful heir to England's royal seat.

*K. Hen.* Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?

*Sal.* I have.

*K. Hen.* Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an  
oath?

*Sal.* It is great sin to swear unto a sin;  
But greater sin to keep a sinful oath.  
Who can be bound by any solemn vow  
To do a murderous deed, to rob a man,  
To force a spotless virgin's chastity,  
To reave the orphan of his patrimony,  
To wring the widow from her custom'd right;  
And have no other reason for this wrong  
But that he was bound by a solemn oath?

*Q. Mar.* A subtle traitor needs no sophister.

*K. Hen.* Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.

*York.* Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast,  
I am resolv'd for death or dignity.

*Clif.* The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true.

*War.* You were best to go to bed and dream again,  
To keep thee from the tempest of the field.

*Clif.* I am resolv'd to bear a greater storm  
Than any thou canst conjure up to-day;  
And that I'll write upon thy burgonet,  
Might I but know thee by thy household badge.

*War.* Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,  
The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,  
This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet,—  
As on a mountain-top the cedar shows,  
That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm,—  
Even to affright thee with the view thereof.

*Clif.* And from thy burgonet I'll read thy bear,  
And tread it under foot with all contempt,  
Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear.

*Y. Clif.* And so to arms, victorious father,  
To quell the rebels and their complices.

*Rich.* Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite,  
For you shall sup with *Jesu Christ* to-night.

*Y. Clif.* Foul stigmatic, that's more than thou canst tell.

*Rich.* If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II.—*Saint Albans.*

*Alarums: excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls!  
And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear,  
Now,—when the angry trumpet sounds alarum,  
And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,—  
Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me!  
Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland,  
Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.

*Enter YORK.*

How now, my noble lord! what, all a-foot?

*York.* The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed;  
But match to match I have encounter'd him,  
And made a prey for carrion kites and crows  
Even of the bonny beast he lov'd so well.

*Enter LORD CLIFFORD.*

*War.* Of one or both of us the time is come.

*York.* Hold, Warwick, seek thee out some other chase,  
For I myself must hunt this deer to death.

*War.* Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st.—

As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,  
It grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd. [Exit.

*Clif.* What see'st thou in me, York? why dost thou pause?

*York.* With thy brave bearing should I be in love,  
But that thou art so fast mine enemy.

*Clif.* Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem,  
But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason.

*York.* So let it help me now against thy sword,  
As I in justice and true right express it!

*Clif.* My soul and body on the action both!

*York.* A dreadful lay!—address thee instantly.

*Clif.* *La fin couronne les œuvres.*

[*They fight, and CLIFFORD falls and dies.*

*York.* Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art still  
Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! [Exit

*Enter YOUNG CLIFFORD.*

*Y. Clif.* Shame and confusion! all is on the rout;

Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds

Where it should guard. O war, thou son of hell,

Whom angry heavens do make their minister,

Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part

Hot coals of vengeance!—Let no soldier fly:

He that is truly dedicate to war

Hath no self-love; nor he that loves himself

Hath not essentially, but by circumstance,

The name of valour.—O, let the vile world end,

[*Seeing his father's body*

And the premised flames of the last day

Knit earth and heaven together!

Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,

Particularities and petty sounds

To cease!—Wast thou ordain'd, dear father,

To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve

The silver livery of advised age,

And in thy reverence and thy chair-days thus

To die in ruffian battle?—Even at this sight

My heart is turn'd to stone: and while 'tis mine

It shall be stony. York not our old men spares;

No more will I their babes: tears virginal

Shall be to me even as the dew to fire;

And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclains,

Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.

Henceforth I will not have to do with play:

Meet I an infant of the house of York,

Into as many gobbets will I cut it

As wild Medea young Absyrtus did:  
 In cruelty will I seek out my fame.—  
 Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house:

[*Taking up the body.*]

As wild Æneas old Anchises bear,  
 So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;  
 But then Æneas bare a living load,  
 Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter* RICHARD PLANTAGENET *and* SOMERSET, *fighting, and*  
 SOMERSET *is killed.*

*Rich.* So, lie thou there;—  
 For underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,  
 The Castle in Saint Albans, Somerset  
 Hath made the wizard famous in his death.—  
 Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful still:  
 Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill.

[*Exit.*]

*Alarums: excursions. Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN  
 MARGARET, *and others, retreating.*

*Q. Mar.* Away, my lord! you are slow; for shame, away!

*K. Hen.* Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret,  
 stay.

*Q. Mar.* What are you made of? you'll nor fight nor fly:  
 Now is it manhood, wisdom, and defence,  
 To give the enemy way; and to secure us  
 By what we can, which can no more but fly.

[*Alarum afar off.*]

If you be ta'en, we then should see the bottom  
 Of all our fortunes: but if we haply scape,—  
 As well we may, if not through your neglect,—  
 We shall to London get: where you are lov'd;  
 And where this breach, now in our fortunes made,  
 May readily be stopp'd.

*Re-enter* YOUNG CLIFFORD.

*Y. Clif.* But that my heart's on future mischief set,  
 I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly:  
 But fly you must; uncurable discomfit  
 Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.  
 Away, for your relief! and we will live  
 To see their day, and them our fortune give:  
 Away, my lord, away!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Fields near Saint Albans.*

*Alarum: retreat. Flourish; then enter YORK, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, WARWICK, and Soldiers, with drum and colours.*

*York.* Of Salisbury, who can report of him,—  
That winter lion, who in rage forgets  
Aged contusions and all brush of time,  
And, like a gallant in the brow of youth,  
Repairs him with occasion? This happy day  
Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,  
If Salisbury be lost.

*Rich.* My noble father,  
Three times to-day I help him to his horse,  
Three times bestrid him, thrice I led him off,  
Persuaded him from any further act:  
But still, where danger was, still there I met him;  
And like rich hangings in a homely house,  
So was his will in his old feeble body.  
But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

*Sal.* Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought to-day;  
By the mass, so did we all.—I thank you, Richard:  
God knows how long it is I have to live;  
And it hath pleas'd him that three times to-day  
You have defended me from imminent death.—  
Well, lords, we have not got that which we have:  
'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,  
Being opposites of such repairing nature.

*York.* I know our safety is to follow them;  
For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,  
To call a present court of Parliament.  
Let us pursue him ere the writs go forth:—  
What says Lord Warwick? shall we after them?

*War.* After them! nay, before them, if we can.  
Now, by my hand, lords, 'twas a glorious day:  
Saint Albans battle, won by famous York,  
Shall be eterniz'd in all age to come.—  
Sound drums and trumpets;—and to London all:  
And more such days as these to us befall!

[*Exeunt.*]



THIRD PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.

EDWARD, *Prince of Wales, his Son.*

LOUIS XI., *King of France.*

DUKE OF SOMERSET,

DUKE OF EXETER,

EARL OF OXFORD,

EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND,

EARL OF WESTMORELAND,

LORD CLIFFORD,

} *Lords on KING HENRY'S  
side.*

RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *Duke of York.*

EDWARD, *Earl of March, afterwards*

KING EDWARD IV.

EDMUND, *Earl of Rutland,*

GEORGE, *afterwards Duke of Clarence,*

RICHARD, *afterwards Duke of Gloster,*

} *his Sons.*

DUKE OF NORFOLK,

MARQUIS OF MONTAGUE,

EARL OF WARWICK,

EARL OF PEMBROKE,

LORD HASTINGS,

LORD STAFFORD,

} *of the DUKE OF YORK'S party.*

SIR JOHN MORTIMER,

SIR HUGH MORTIMER,

HENRY, *Earl of Richmond, a youth*

LORD RIVERS, *Brother to LADY GREY.*

} *Uncles to the DUKE OF YORK.*

SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.

SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.

SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.

Tutor to RUTLAND.

Mayor of York.

Lieutenant of the Tower.

A Nobleman.

Two Keepers.

A Huntsman.

A Son *that has killed his Father.*

A Father *that has killed his Son.*

QUEEN MARGARET.

LADY GREY, *afterwards Queen to EDWARD IV.*

BONA, *Sister to the French Queen.*

Soldiers, *and other Attendants on KING HENRY and KING EDWARD, Messengers, Watchmen, &c.*

SCENE,—*During part of the Third Act in FRANCE; during the rest of the Play in ENGLAND.*

THIRD PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *The Parliament House.*

*Drums.* *Some Soldiers of YORK'S Party break in. Then enter the DUKE OF YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and others, with white roses in their hats.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escap'd our hands.

*York.* While we pursu'd the horsemen of the north,  
He slyly stole away, and left his men:  
Whereat the great Lord of Northumberland,  
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat,  
Cheer'd up the drooping army; and himself,  
Lord Clifford, and Lord Stafford, all a-breast,  
Charg'd our main battle's front, and, breaking in,  
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

*Edw.* Lord Stafford's father, Duke of Buckingham,  
Is either slain or wounded dangerous;  
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow:  
That this is true, father, behold his blood.

*Mont.* And, brother, here's the *[Showing his bloody sword.*  
Earl of Wiltshire's blood,  
*[To YORK, showing his.*

Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did.

*[Throwing down SOMERSET'S head.*

*York.* Richard hath best deserv'd of all my sons.—  
But, is your grace dead, my Lord of Somerset?

*Norf.* Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt.

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake King Henry's head.

*War.* And so do I.—Victorious Prince of York,  
Before I see thee seated in that throne  
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,

I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close.

This is the palace of the fearful king,

And this the regal seat: possess it, York;

For this is thine, and not King Henry's heirs'.

*York.* Assist me, then, sweet Warwick, and I will;

For hither we have broken in by force.

*Norfolk.* We'll all assist you; he that flies shall die.

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk:—stay by me, my lords;—

And, soldiers, stay, and lodge by me this night.

*War.* And when the king comes, offer him no violence,  
Unless he seek to thrust you out perforce.

[*The Soldiers retire.*]

*York.* The queen this day here holds her parliament,

But little thinks we shall be of her council:

By words or blows here let us win our right.

*Rich.* Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be call'd,

Unless Plantagenet, Duke of York, be king,

And bashful Henry depos'd, whose cowardice

Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords; be resolute;

I mean to take possession of my right.

*War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,

The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,

Dares stir a wing if Warwick shake his bells.

I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares:—

Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English crown.

[*WAR. leads YORK to the throne, who seats himself.*]

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and others, with red roses in their hats.

*K. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,

Even in the chair of state! belyke he means,—

Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer,—

To aspire unto the crown, and reign as king.—

Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father;

And thine, Lord Clifford; and you both have vow'd revenge

On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends.

*North.* If I be not, heavens be reveng'd on me!

*Clif.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in steel.

*West.* What, shall we suffer this? let's pluck him  
down:

My heart for anger burns; I cannot brook it.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle Earl of Westmoreland.

*Clif.* Patience is for poltroons, and such as he:

He durst not sit there had your father liv'd.  
My gracious lord, here in the parliament  
Let us assail the family of York.

*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin: be it so.

*K. Hen.* Ah, know you not the city favours them,  
And they have troops of soldiers at their beck?

*Exe.* But when the duke is slain they'll quickly fly.

*K. Hen.* Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,  
To make a shambles of the parliament house!  
Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words, and threats  
Shall be the war that Henry means to use.

[*They advance to the DUKE.*]

Thou factious Duke of York, descend my throne,  
And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet;  
I am thy sovereign.

*York.* I am thine.

*Exe.* For shame, come down: he made thee Duke of York.

*York.* It was my inheritance, as the earldom was.

*Exe.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown

In following this usurping Henry.

*Clif.* Whom should he follow but his natural king?

*War.* True, Clifford; and that's Richard Duke of York.

*K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne?

*York.* It must and shall be so: content thyself.

*War.* Be Duke of Lancaster; let him be king.

*West.* He is both king and Duke of Lancaster;

And that the Lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.

*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget  
That we are those which chas'd you from the field,  
And slew your fathers, and with colours spread  
March'd through the city to the palace-gates.

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief;  
And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.

*West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons,  
Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more lives  
Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more: lest that, instead of words,  
I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger  
As shall revenge his death before I stir.

*War.* Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats!

*York.* Will you we show our title to the crown?

If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?  
Thy father was, as thou art, Duke of York;  
Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, Earl of March:

I am the son of Henry the Fifth,  
Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,  
And seiz'd upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all.

*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and not I:  
When I was crown'd I was but nine months old.

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet, methinks, you  
lose.—

Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so; set it on your head.

*Mont.* Good brother [to YORK], as thou lov'st and  
honour'st arms,

Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets and the king will fly.

*York.* Sons, peace!

*K. Hen.* Peace thou! and give King Henry leave to speak.

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first: hear him, lords;  
And be you silent and attentive too,

For he that interrupts him shall not live.

*K. Hen.* Think'st thou that I will leave my kingly  
throne,

Wherein my grandsire and my father sat?

No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;

Ay, and their colours,—often borne in France,

And now in England to our heart's great sorrow,—

Shall be my winding-sheet.—Why faint you, lords?

My title's good, and better far than his.

*War.* But prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.

*K. Hen.* Henry the Fourth by conquest got the crown.

*York.* 'Twas by rebellion against his king.

*K. Hen.* I know not what to say; my title's weak.

[*Aside*]

Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

*York.* What then?

*K. Hen.* An if he may, then am I lawful king;  
For Richard, in the view of many lords,  
Resign'd the crown to Henry the Fourth,  
Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,  
And made him to resign his crown perforce.

*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,  
Think you 'twere prejudicial to his crown?

*Exe.* No; for he could not so resign his crown  
But that the next heir should succeed and reign.

*K. Hen.* Art thou against us, Duke of Exeter?

*Exe.* His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

*York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?

*Exe.* My conscience tells me he is lawful king.

*K. Hen.* All will revolt from me, and turn to him. [*Aside.*]

*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,  
Think not that Henry shall be so depos'd.

*War.* Depos'd he shall be, in despite of all.

*North.* Thou art deceiv'd: 'tis not thy southern power,  
Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,—

Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,—  
Can set the duke up in despite of me.

*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,  
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:

May that ground gape, and swallow me alive,  
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

*K. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown.—  
What mutter you, or what conspire you, lords?

*War.* Do right unto this princely Duke of York;  
Or I will fill the house with armed men,  
And o'er the chair of state, where now he sits,  
Write up his title with usurping blood.

[*He stamps, and the Soldiers show themselves.*]

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Warwick, hear me but one word:—  
Let me for this my life-time reign as king.

*York.* Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,  
And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv'st.

*K. Hen.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet,  
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son!

*War.* What good is this to England and himself!

*West.* Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!

*Clif.* How hast thou injur'd both thyself and us!

*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.

*North.* Nor I.

*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.

*West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king,  
In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.

*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of York,  
And die in bands, for this unmanly deed!

*Clif.* In dreadful war mayst thou be overcome,  
Or live in peace, abandon'd and despis'd!

[*Exeunt NORTH., CLIF., and WEST.*]

*War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.

*Exe.* They seek revenge, and therefore will not yield.

*K. Hen.* Ah, Exeter!

*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord!

*K. Hen.* Not for myself, Lord Warwick, but my son,  
Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.

But be it as it may:—I here entail  
The crown to thee and to thine heirs for ever;  
Conditionally, that here thou take an oath  
To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,  
To honour me as thy king and sovereign,  
And neither by treason nor hostility  
To seek to put me down and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take, and will perform.

[*Coming from the throne.*]

*War.* Long live King Henry!—Plantagenet, embrace him.

*K. Hen.* And long live thou, and these thy forward sons!

*York.* Now York and Lancaster are reconcil'd.

*Exc.* Accurs'd be he that seeks to make them foes!

[*Sennet. The Lords come forward.*]

*York.* Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my castle.

*War.* And I'll keep London with my soldiers.

*Norf.* And I to Norfolk with my followers.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea, from whence I came.

[*Exeunt YORK and his Sons, WAR., NORF.,  
MONT., Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

*K. Hen.* And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court.

*Exc.* Here comes the queen, whose looks bewray her anger:  
I'll steal away. [*Going.*]

*K. Hen.* Exeter, so will I. [*Going.*]

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE OF WALES.*

*Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me; I will follow thee.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

*Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes?

Ah, wretched man! would I had died a maid,  
And never seen thee, never born thee son,  
Seeing thou hast prov'd so unnatural a father!  
Hath he deserv'd to lose his birthright thus?  
Hadst thou but lov'd him half so well as I,  
Or felt that pain which I did for him once,  
Or nourish'd him as I did with my blood,—  
Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart-blood there,  
Rather than made that savage duke thine heir,  
And disinherited thine only son.

*Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me:  
If you be king, why should not I succeed?

*K. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret;—pardon me, sweet son:—  
The Earl of Warwick and the duke enforc'd me.

*Q. Mar.* Enforc'd thee! art thou king, and wilt be forc'd?



I shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous wretch!  
 Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me;  
 And given unto the house of York such head  
 As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.  
 To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,  
 What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,  
 And creep into it far before thy time?  
 Warwick is chancellor and the lord of Calais;  
 Stern Falconbridge commands the narrow seas;  
 The duke is made protector of the realm;  
 And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds  
 The trembling lamb environed with wolves.  
 Had I been there, which am a silly woman,  
 The soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes  
 Before I would have granted to that act.  
 But thou prefer'st thy life before thine honour:  
 And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself  
 Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,  
 Until that act of parliament be repeal'd,  
 Whereby my son is disinherited.

The northern lords that have forsworn thy colours  
 Will follow mine, if once they see them spread;  
 And spread they shall be,—to thy foul disgrace,  
 And utter ruin of the house of York.  
 Thus do I leave thee.—Come, son, let's away;  
 Our army is ready; come, we'll after them.

*K. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already: get thee gone.

*K. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.

*Prince.* When I return with victory from the field  
 I'll see your grace: till then I'll follow her.

*Q. Mar.* Come, son, away; we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt* QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE.]

*K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me and to her son  
 Hath made her break out into terms of rage!  
 Reveng'd may she be on that hateful duke,  
 Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,  
 Will cost my crown, and like an empty eagle  
 Tire on the flesh of me and of my son!  
 The loss of those three lords torments my heart:  
 I'll write unto them, and entreat them fair:—  
 Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

*Exe.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in Sandal Castle, near Wakefield, in Yorkshire.*

*Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and MONTAGUE.*

*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.

*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.

*Enter YORK.*

*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strife?  
What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what?

*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace and us,—

The crown of England, father, which is yours.

*York.* Mine, boy? not till King Henry be dead.

*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life or death.

*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:

By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,  
It will outrun you, father, in the end.

*York.* I took an oath that he should quietly reign.

*Edw.* But, for a kingdom, any oath may be broken:

I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year.

*Rich.* No; God forbid your grace should be forsworn.

*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.

*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak.

*York.* Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.

*Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not took

Before a true and lawful magistrate,

That hath authority over him that swears:

Henry had none, but did usurp the place;

Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,

Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.

Therefore, to arms. And, father, do but think

How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;

Within whose circuit is Elysium,

And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.

Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest

Until the white rose that I wear be dy'd

Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.

*York.* Richard, enough; I will be king, or die.—

Brother, thou shalt to London presently,

And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.—

Thou, Richard, shalt to the Duke of Norfolk,

And tell him privily of our intent,—  
 You, Edward, shall unto my Lord Cobham,  
 With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:  
 In them I trust; for they are soldiers,  
 Witty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit.—  
 While you are thus employ'd, what resteth more,  
 But that I seek occasion how to rise,  
 And yet the king not privy to my drift,  
 Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

*Enter a Messenger.*

But, stay: what news? Why com'st thou in such post?

*Mess.* The queen with all the northern earls and lords

Intend here to besiege you in your castle:  
 She is hard by with twenty thousand men;  
 And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

*York.* Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou that we fear them?—

Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;—  
 My brother Montague shall post to London:  
 Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,  
 Whom we have left protectors of the king,  
 With powerful policy strengthen themselves,  
 And trust not simple Henry nor his oaths.

*Mont.* Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not:  
 And thus most humbly I do take my leave. *[Exit.]*

*Enter SIR JOHN and SIR HUGH MORTIMER.*

*York.* Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles!  
 You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;  
 The army of the queen mean to besiege us.

*Sir John.* She shall not need, we'll meet her in the field.

*York.* What, with five thousand men?

*Kich.* Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need:  
 A woman's general; what should we fear?

*[A march afar off.]*

*Edw.* I hear their drums: let's set our men in order,  
 And issue forth, and bid them battle straight.

*York.* Five men to twenty!—though the odds be great,  
 I doubt not, uncle, of our victory.  
 Many a battle have I won in France,  
 Whenas the enemy hath been ten to one:  
 Why should I not now have the like success? *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—*Plains near Sandal Castle.*

*Alarum.* Enter RUTLAND and his Tutor.

*Rut.* Ah, whither shall I fly to 'scape their hands?  
Ah, tutor, look where bloody Clifford comes!

*Enter CLIFFORD and Soldiers.*

*Clif.* Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves thy life.  
As for the brat of this accursed duke,  
Whose father slew my father,—he shall die.

*Tut.* And I, my lord, will bear him company.

*Clif.* Soldiers, away with him!

*Tut.* Ah, Clifford, murder not this innocent child,  
Lest thou be hated both of God and man.

*[Exit, forced off by Soldiers]*

*Clif.* How now! is he dead already? or is it fear  
That makes him close his eyes?—I'll open them.

*Rut.* So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch  
That trembles under his devouring paws;  
And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey,  
And so he comes, to rend his limbs asunder.—  
Ah, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,  
And not with such a cruel threat'ning look!  
Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die!—  
I am too mean a subject for thy wrath:  
Be thou reveng'd on men, and let me live.

*Clif.* In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my father's blood  
Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter.

*Rut.* Then let my father's blood open it again:  
He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

*Clif.* Had I thy brethren here, their lives and thine  
Were not revenge sufficient for me;  
No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,  
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,  
It could not slake mine ire nor ease my heart.  
The sight of any of the house of York  
Is as a fury to torment my soul;  
And till I root out their accursed line,  
And leave not one alive, I live in hell.  
Therefore,—

*[Lifting his hand.]*

*Rut.* O, let me pray before I take my death!  
To thee I pray; sweet Clifford, pity me!

*Clif.* Such pity as my rapier's point affords.

*Rut.* I never did thee harm: why wilt thou slay me?

*Clif.* Thy father hath.

*Rut.* But 'twas ere I was born,  
 Thou hast one son,—for his sake pity me;  
 Lest in revenge thereof, —sith God is just,—  
 He be as miserably slain as I.  
 Ah, let me live in prison all my days;  
 And when I give occasion of offence  
 Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause.

*Clif.* No cause!  
 Thy father slew my father; therefore, die.

[CLIFFORD stabs him.

*Rut.* *Dii faciant, laudis summa sit ista tuæ!* [Dies.

*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!  
 And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade  
 Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,  
 Congeal'd with this, do make me wipe off both. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—*Another part of the Plains near Sandal Castle.*

*Alarum.* Enter YORK.

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field  
 My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;  
 And all my followers to the eager foe  
 Turn back, and fly, like ships before the wind,  
 Or lambs pursu'd by hunger-starved wolves.  
 My sons,—God knows what hath bechanced them:  
 But this I know,—they have demean'd themselves  
 Like men born to renown by life or death.  
 Three times did Richard make a lane to me;  
 And thrice cried, *Courage, father! fight it out!*  
 And full as oft came Edward to my side,  
 With purple falchion, painted to the hilt  
 In blood of those that had encounter'd him:  
 And when the hardiest warriors did retire,  
 Richard cried, *Charge! and give no foot of ground!*  
 And cried, *A crown, or else a glorious tomb!*  
*A sceptre, or an earthly sepulchre!*  
 With this we charg'd again: but, out, alas!  
 We bodg'd again; as I have seen a swan  
 With bootless labour swim against the tide,  
 And spend her strength with over-matching waves.

[A short alarum within.

Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue;  
 And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury:  
 And were I strong, I would not shun their fury:

The sands are number'd that make up my life;  
Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

*Enter* QUEEN MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND  
and Soldiers.

Come, bloody Clifford,—rough Northumberland,—  
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage:  
I am your butt, and I abide your shot.

*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plantagenet.

*Clif.* Ay, to such mercy as his ruthless arm,  
With downright payment, show'd unto my father.  
Now Phaeton hath tumbled from his car,  
And made an evening at the noontide prick.

*York.* My ashes, as the phoenix, may bring forth  
A bird that will revenge upon you all:  
And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven,  
Scorning whate'er you can afflict me with.

Why come you not? what! multitudes, and fear?

*Clif.* So cowards fight when they can fly no further;  
So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;  
So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,  
Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.

*York.* O Clifford, but bethink thee once again,  
And in thy thought o'errun my former time;  
And, if thou canst, for blushing, view this face,  
And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice  
Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this!

*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for word,  
But buckle with thee blows, twice two for one. [*Draws.*]

*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes  
I would prolong awhile the traitor's life.—  
Wrath makes him deaf:—speak thou, Northumberland.

*North.* Hold, Clifford! do not honour him so much  
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart:  
What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,  
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,  
When he might spurn him with his foot away?  
It is war's prize to take all 'vantages;  
And ten to one is no impeach of valour.

[*They lay hands on YORK, who struggles.*]

*Clif.* Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with the gin.

*North.* So doth the cony struggle in the net.

[*YORK is taken prisoner.*]

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;  
So true men yield, with robbers so o'ermatch'd.

*North.* What would your grace have done unto him now?

*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,  
 Come, make him stand upon this molehill here,  
 That raught at mountains with outstretched arms,  
 Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.—  
 What, was it you that would be England's king?  
 Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,  
 And made a preachment of your high descent?  
 Where are your mess of sons to back you now?  
 The wanton Edward and the lusty George?  
 And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,  
 Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice  
 Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?  
 Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?  
 Look, York: I stain'd this napkin with the blood  
 That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point,  
 Made issue from the bosom of the boy;  
 And if thine eyes can water for his death,  
 I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.  
 Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,  
 I should lament thy miserable state.  
 I prythee, grieve, to make me merry. York.  
 What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails  
 That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?  
 Why art thou patient, man? thou shouldst be mad;  
 And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.  
 Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance.  
 Thou wouldst be fee'd, I see, to make me sport;  
 York cannot speak unless he wear a crown.—  
 A crown for York!—and, lords, bow low to him;—  
 Hold you his hands whilst I do set it on.

*[Putting a paper crown on his head.]*

Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king!  
 Ay, this is he that took King Henry's chair;  
 And this is he was his adopted heir.—  
 But how is it that great Plantagenet  
 Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath?  
 As I bethink me, you should not be king  
 Till our King Henry had shook hands with death.  
 And will you pale your head in Henry's glory,  
 And rob his temples of the diadem  
 Now in his life, against your holy oath?  
 O, 'tis a fault too, too unpardonable!—  
 Off with the crown; and, with the crown, his head;  
 And whilst we breathe take time to do him dead.

*Clif.* That is my office, for my father's sake.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, stay; let's hear the orisons he makes.

*York.* She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of France,  
 Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's tooth!  
 How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex  
 To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,  
 Upon their woes whom fortune captivates!  
 But that thy face is, visard-like, unchanging,  
 Made impudent with use of evil deeds,  
 I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush:  
 To tell thee whence thou cam'st, of whom deriv'd,  
 Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not shameless.  
 Thy father bears the type of King of Naples,  
 Of both the Sicils, and Jerusalem;  
 Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.  
 Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?  
 It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen;  
 Unless the adage must be verified,—  
 That beggars mounted run their horse to death.  
 'Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud;  
 But, God he knows, thy share thereof is small:  
 'Tis virtue that doth make them most admir'd;  
 The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at:  
 'Tis government that makes them seem divine;  
 The want thereof makes thee abominable:  
 Thou art as opposite to every good  
 As the antipodes are unto us,  
 Or as the south to the septentrion.  
 O tiger's heart wrapp'd in a woman's hide!  
 How couldst thou drain the life-blood of the child,  
 To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,  
 And yet be seen to bear a woman's face?  
 Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible;  
 Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless.  
 Bidd'st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy wish:  
 Wouldst have me weep? why, now thou hast thy will:  
 For raging wind blows up incessant showers,  
 And when the rage allays, the rain begins.  
 These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies;  
 And every drop cries vengeance for his death  
 'Gainst thee, fell Clifford, and thee, false Frenchwoman.

*North.* Beshrew me, but his passions move me so  
 That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

*York.* That face of his the hungry cannibals  
 Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd with blood:  
 But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,—  
 O, ten times more,—than tigers of Hyrcania.  
 See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:



This cloth thou dipp'dst in blood of my sweet boy,  
 And I with tears do wash the blood away.  
 Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this:

[*He gives back the handkerchief.*]

And if thou tell'st the heavy story right,  
 Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;  
 Yea, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,  
 And say, *Alas, it was a piteous deed!*—

There, take 'the crown, and, with the crown, my curse;

[*Giving back the paper crown.*]

And in thy need such comfort come to thee

As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!—

Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world:

My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads!

*North.* Had he been slaughter-man to all my kin,

I should not for my life but weep with him,

To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.

*Q. Mar.* What, weeping-ripe, my Lord Northumoerland?

Think but upon the wrong he did us all,

And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

*Clif.* Here's for my oath, here's for my father's death.

[*Stabbing him.*]

*Q. Mar.* And here's to right our gentle-hearted king.

[*Stabbing him.*]

*York.* Open thy gate of mercy, gracious God!

My soul flies through these wounds to seek out thee. [*Dies.*]

*Q. Mar.* Off with his head, and set it on York gates;

So York may overlook the town of York.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*A Plain near Mortimer's Cross in Herefordshire.*

*Drums.* Enter EDWARD and RICHARD, with their Forces,  
*marching.*

*Edw.* I wonder how our princely father 'scap'd,  
 Or whether he be 'scap'd away or no  
 From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit:  
 Had he been ta'en we should have heard the news;  
 Had he been slain we should have heard the news;  
 Or had he 'scap'd, methinks we should have heard

The happy tidings of his good escape.—  
How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

*Rich.* I cannot joy, until I be resolv'd  
Where our right valiant father is become.  
I saw him in the battle range about;  
And watch'd him how he singled Clifford forth.  
Methought he bore him in the thickest troop  
As doth a lion in a herd of neat;  
Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs,—  
Who having pinch'd a few, and made them cry,  
The rest stand all aloof and bark at him.  
So far'd our father with his enemies;  
So fled his enemies my warlike father:  
Methinks 'tis prize enough to be his son.—  
See how the morning ope's her golden gates,  
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun!  
How well resembles it the prime of youth,  
Trimm'd like a younker prancing to his love!

*Edw.* Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three suns?

*Rich.* Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun;  
Not separated with the racking clouds,  
But sever'd in a pale clear-shining sky.  
See, see! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,  
As if they vow'd some league inviolable:  
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.  
In this the heaven figures some event.

*Edw.* 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet never heard of.  
I think it cites us, brother, to the field,—  
That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet,  
Each one already blazing by our meeds,  
Should, notwithstanding, join our lights together,  
And overshine the earth, as this the world.  
Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear  
Upon my target three fair shining suns.

*Rich.* Nay, bear three daughters:—by your leave I speak  
it,

You love the breeder better than the male.

*Enter a Messenger.*

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell  
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

*Mess.* Ah, one that was a woeful looker-on  
Whenas the noble Duke of York was slain,  
Your princely father and my loving lord!

*Edw.* O, speak no more! for I have heard too much.

*Rich.* Say how he died, for I will hear it all.

*Mess.* Environed he was with many foes;  
 And stood against them as the hope of Troy  
 Against the Greeks that would have enter'd Troy.  
 But Hercules himself must yield to odds;  
 And many strokes, though with a little axe,  
 Hew down and fell the hardest-timber'd oak.  
 By many hands your father was subdu'd;  
 But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm  
 Of unrelenting Clifford, and the queen,—  
 Who crown'd the gracious duke in high despite,—  
 Laugh'd in his face; and when with grief he wept,  
 The ruthless queen gave him to dry his cheeks  
 A napkin steeped in the harmless blood  
 Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain:  
 And after many scorns, many foul taunts,  
 They took his head, and on the gates of York  
 They set the same; and there it doth remain,  
 The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

*Edw.* Sweet Duke of York, our prop to lean upon,—  
 Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay!—  
 O Clifford, boisterous Clifford, thou hast slain  
 The flower of Europe for his chivalry;  
 And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,  
 For hand to hand he would have vanquish'd thee!—  
 Now my soul's palace is become a prison:  
 Ah, would she break from hence, that this my body  
 Might in the ground be closed up in rest!  
 For never henceforth shall I joy again,  
 Never, O never shall I see more joy.

*Rich.* I cannot weep; for all my body's moisture  
 Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning heart:  
 Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burden;  
 For self-same wind that I should speak withal  
 Is kindling coals, that fire all my breast,  
 And burn me up with flames, that tears would quench.  
 To weep is to make less the depth of grief:  
 Tears, then, for babes; blows and revenge for me!—  
 Richard, I bear thy name; I'll venge thy death,  
 Or die renowned by attempting it.

*Edw.* His name that valiant duke hath left with thee;  
 His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

*Rich.* Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's bird,  
 Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun:  
 For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom say:  
 Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

*March.* Enter WARWICK and MONTAGUE, with Forces.

*War.* How now, fair lords! What fare? what news abroad?

*Rich.* Great Lord of Warwick, if we should recount  
Our baleful news, and at each word's deliverance  
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,  
The words would add more anguish than the wounds.  
O valiant lord, the Duke of York is slain!

*Edw.* O Warwick, Warwick! that Plantagenet  
Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption  
Is by the stern Lord Clifford done to death.

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears;  
And now, to add more measure to your woes,  
I come to tell you things since then befall'n.  
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,  
Where your brave father breath'd his latest gasp,  
Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,  
Were brought me of your loss and his depart.  
I, then in London, keeper of the king,  
Muster'd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,  
And very well appointed, as I thought,  
March'd toward Saint Albans to intercept the queen,  
Bearing the king in my behalf along,  
For by my scouts I was advertised  
That she was coming with a full intent  
To dash our late decree in parliament  
Touching King Henry's oath and your succession.  
Short tale to make,—we at St. Albaus met,  
Our battles join'd, and both sides fiercely fought:  
But whether 'twas the coldness of the king,  
Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,  
That robb'd my soldiers of their heated spleen;  
Or whether 'twas report of her success;  
Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,  
Who thunders to his captives, Blood and death,  
I cannot judge: but, to conclude with truth,  
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;  
Our soldiers',—like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
Or like a lazy thrasher with a flail,—  
Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.  
I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,  
With promise of high pay and great rewards:  
But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,  
And we in them no hope to win the day;  
So that we fled; the king unto the queen;  
Lord George your brother, Norfolk, and myself,

In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;  
For in the marches here we heard you were  
Making another head to fight again.

*Edw.* Where is the Duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick?  
And when came George from Burgundy to England?

*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers;

And for your brother, he was lately sent  
From your kind aunt, Duchess of Burgundy,  
With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled:  
Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,  
But ne'er till now his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear;  
For thou shalt know this strong right hand of mine  
Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,  
And wring the awful sceptre from his fist,  
Were he as famous and as bold in war  
As he is fam'd for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, Lord Warwick; blame me not:  
'Tis love I bear thy glories makes me speak.  
But in this troublous time what's to be done?  
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,  
And wrap our bodies in black mourning-gowns,  
Numbering our Ave-Maries with our beads?  
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes  
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?  
If for the last, say Ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out;  
And therefore comes my brother Montague.  
Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,  
With Clifford and the haught Northumberland,  
And of their feather many more proud birds,  
Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.  
He swore consent to your succession,  
His oath enrolled in the parliament;  
And now to London all the crew are gone,  
To frustrate both his oath and what beside  
May make against the house of Lancaster.  
Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong:  
Now if the help of Norfolk and myself,  
With all the friends that thou, brave Earl of March,  
Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure,  
Will but amount to five-and-twenty thousand,  
Why, *Via!* to London will we march again;  
And once again bestride our foaming steeds,

And once again cry, Charge upon our foes!  
But never once again turn back and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now methinks I hear great Warwick speak:  
Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day  
That cries Retire, if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edw.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean;  
And when thou fail'st,—as God forbid the hour!—  
Must Edward fall, which peril heaven forefend!

*War.* No longer Earl of March, but Duke of York:  
The next degree is England's royal throne;  
For King of England shalt thou be proclaim'd  
In every borough as we pass along;  
And he that throws not up his cap for joy,  
Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.  
King Edward,—valiant Richard,—Montague,—  
Stay we no longer, dreaming of renown,  
But sound the trumpets and about our task.

*Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel,—  
As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds,—  
I come to pierce it,—or to give thee mine. [for us!

*Edw.* Then strike up drums:—God and Saint George

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* How now! what news?

*Mess.* The Duke of Norfolk sends you word by me,  
The queen is coming with a puissant host;  
And craves your company for speedy counsel.

*War.* Why, then it sorts, brave warriors: let's away.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Before York.*

*Flourish.* *Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, the  
PRINCE OF WALES, CLIFFORD, and NORTHUMBERLAND,  
with Forces.

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York.  
Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy  
That sought to be encompass'd with your crown:  
Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord?

*K. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their  
wreck:—

To see this sight, it irks my very soul.—  
Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault,  
Nor wittingly have I infring'd my vow.

*Clif.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity  
And harmful pity must be laid aside.

To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?  
Not to the beast that would usurp their den.  
Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?  
Not his that spoils her young before her face.  
Who scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?  
Not he that sets his foot upon her back.  
The smallest worm will turn, being trodden on,  
And doves will peck in safeguard of their brood.  
Ambitious York did level at thy crown,  
Thou smiling while he knit his angry brows:  
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,  
And raise his issue, like a loving sire;  
Thou, being a king, bless'd with a goodly son,  
Didst yield consent to disinherit him,  
Which argu'd thee a most unloving father.  
Unreasonable creatures feed their young;  
And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,  
Yet, in protection of their tender ones,  
Who hath not seen them,—even with those wings  
Which sometime they have us'd with fearful flight,—  
Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest,  
Offering their own lives in their young's defence?  
For shame, my liege, make them your precedent!  
Were it not pity that this goodly boy  
Should lose his birthright by his father's fault,  
And long hereafter say unto his child,  
*What my great-grandfather and grandsire got  
My careless father fondly gave away?*  
Ah, what a shame were this! Look on the boy;  
And let his manly face, which promiseth  
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart  
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with him.

*K. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,  
Inferring arguments of mighty force.  
But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear  
That things ill got had ever bad success?  
And happy always was it for that son  
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?  
I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind;  
And would my father had left me no more!  
For all the rest is held at such a rate  
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep  
Than in possession any jot of pleasure.—  
Ah, cousin York! would thy best friends did know  
How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!

*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits: our foes are nigh,

And this soft courage makes your followers faint.  
 You promis'd knighthood to our forward son :  
 Unsheathe your sword, and dub him presently.—  
 Edward, kneel down.

*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight ;  
 And learn this lesson,—draw thy sword in right.

*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kingly leave,  
 I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,  
 And in that quarrel use it to the death.

*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a toward prince.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness :  
 For with a band of thirty thousand men  
 Comes Warwick, backing of the Duke of York ;  
 And in the towns, as they do march along,  
 Proclaims him king, and many fly to him :  
 Darraign your battle, for they are at hand.

*Clif.* I would your highness would depart the field :  
 The queen hath best success when you are absent.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord, and leave us to our fortune.

*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too ; therefore I'll stay.

*North.* Be it with resolution, then, to fight.

*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these noble lords,  
 And hearten those that fight in your defence :  
 Unsheathe your sword, good father ; cry, *Saint George!*

*March.* *Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, WARWICK,  
 NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now, perjurd Henry ! wilt thou kneel for grace,  
 And set thy diadem upon my head ;  
 Or bide the mortal fortune of the field ?

*Q. Mar.* Go, rate thy minions, proud insulting boy !  
 Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms  
 Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king ?

*Edw.* I am his king, and he should bow his knee ;  
 I was adopted heir by his consent :  
 Since when, his oath is broke ; for, as I hear,  
 You, that are king, though he do wear the crown,  
 Have caus'd him, by new act of parliament,  
 To blot out me and put his own son in.

*Clif.* And reason too :  
 Who should succeed the father but the son ?

*Rich.* Are you there, butcher ?—O, I cannot speak !

*Clif.* Ay, crook-back, here I stand to answer thee,  
 Or any he the proudest of thy sort.



*Rich.* 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland, was it not?

*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied.

*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal to the fight.

*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou yield the crown?

*Q. Mar.* Why, how now, long-tongu'd Warwick! dare you speak?

When you and I met at Saint Albans last,  
Your legs did better service than your hands.

*War.* Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 'tis thine.

*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet you fled.

*War.* 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove me thence.

*North.* No, nor your manhood that durst make you stay.

*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee reverently.—

Break off the parley; for scarce I can refrain

The execution of my big-swoln heart

Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

*Clif.* I slew thy father,—call'st thou him a child?

*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard and a treacherous coward,  
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland;

But ere sunset I'll make thee curse the deed. [speak.

*K. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords, and hear me

*Q. Mar.* Defy them, then, or else hold close thy lips.

*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee give no limits to my tongue:

I am a king, and privileg'd to speak.

*Clif.* My liege, the wound that bred this meeting here  
Cannot be cur'd by words; therefore be still.

*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheathe thy sword:  
By him that made us all, I am resolv'd

That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.

*Edw.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right, or no?

A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day

That ne'er shall dine unless thou yield the crown.

*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;  
For York in justice puts his armour on.

*Prince.* If that be right which Warwick says is right,  
There is no wrong, but everything is right.

*Rich.* Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;  
For, weil I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire nor dam;  
But like a foul misshapen stigmatic,

Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,  
As venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.

*Rich.* Iron of Naples hid with English gilt,  
Whose father bears the title of a king,—

As if a channel should be call'd the sea,—

Sham'st thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught,  
To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart?

*Edw.* A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns,  
To make this shameless callet know herself.—  
Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,  
Although thy husband may be Menelaus;  
And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd  
By that false woman as this king by thee.  
His father revell'd in the heart of France,  
And tam'd the king, and made the dauphin stoop;  
And had he match'd according to his state,  
He might have kept that glory to this day;  
But when he took a beggar to his bed,  
And grac'd thy poor sire with his bridal-day,  
Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him  
That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France,  
And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.  
For what hath broach'd this tumult but thy pride?  
Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept;  
And we, in pity of the gentle king,  
Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

*Geo.* But when we saw our sunshine made thy spring,  
And that thy summer bred us no increase,  
We set the axe to thy usurping root;  
And though the edge hath something hit ourselves,  
Yet, know thou, since we have begun to strike,  
We'll never leave till we have hewn thee down,  
Or bath'd thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edw.* And in this resolution I defy thee;  
Not willing any longer conference,  
Since thou deniest the gentle king to speak.—  
Sound trumpets!—let our bloody colours wave!—  
And either victory or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward.

*Edw.* No, wrangling woman, we'll no longer stay:  
These words will cost ten thousand lives this day. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE III.—*A Field of Battle between Towton and  
Saxton, in Yorkshire.*

*Alarums: excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Forspent with toil, as runners with a race,  
I lay me down a little while to breathe;  
For strokes receiv'd and many blows repaid

Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their strength,  
 And, spite of spite, needs must I rest awhile.

*Enter EDWARD, running.*

*Edw.* Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, ungentle death!  
 For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is clouded.

*War.* How now, my lord! what hap? what hope of good?

*Enter GEORGE.*

*Geo.* Our hap is loss, our hope but sad despair;  
 Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us:  
 What counsel give you, whither shall we fly?

*Edw.* Bootless is flight,—they follow us with wings;  
 And weak we are, and cannot shun pursuit.

*Enter RICHARD.*

*Rich.* Ah, Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?  
 Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk,  
 Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance;  
 And in the very pangs of death he cried,  
 Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,  
*Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my death!*  
 So, underneath the belly of their steeds,  
 That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,  
 The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

*War.* Then let the earth be drunken with our blood:  
 I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.  
 Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,  
 Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;  
 And look upon, as if the tragedy  
 Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors?  
 Here on my knee I vow to God above  
 I'll never pause again, never stand still,  
 Till either death hath clos'd these eyes of mine  
 Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

*Edw.* O Warwick, I do bend my knee with thine;  
 And in this vow do chain my soul to thine!—  
 And ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face  
 I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,  
 Thou setter-up and plucker-down of kings,—  
 Beseeching thee, if with thy will it stands  
 That to my foes this body must be prey,  
 Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,  
 And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!—  
 Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,  
 Where'er it be, in heaven or in earth.

*Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand ;—and, gentle Warwick,  
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms :  
I, that did never weep, now melt with woe  
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

*War.* Away, away ! Once more, sweet lords, farewell.

*Geo.* Yet let us all together to our troops,  
And give them leave to fly that will not stay ;  
And call them pillars that will stand to us ;  
And if we thrive, promise them such rewards  
As victors wear at the Olympian games :  
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts ;  
For yet is hope of life and victory.—  
Forslow no longer, make we hence amain.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another part of the Field.*

*Excursions.* Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD.

*Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone :  
Suppose this arm is for the Duke of York,  
And this for Rutland ; both bound to revenge,  
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

*Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone :  
This is the hand that stab'd thy father York ;  
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland ;  
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death,  
And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and brother  
To execute the like upon thyself ;  
And so, have at thee !

[*They fight.* WAR. enters ; CLIF. flies.

*Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase ;  
For I myself will hunt this wolf to death.

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Field.*

*Alarum.* Enter KING HENRY.

*K. Hen.* This battle fares like to the morning's war,  
When dying clouds contend with growing light,  
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,  
Can neither call it perfect day nor night.  
Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea  
Forc'd by the tide to combat with the wind ;  
Now sways it that way, like the self same sea  
Forc'd to retire by fury of the wind :  
Sometime the flood prevails, and then the wind ;

Now one the better, then another best;  
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,  
Yet neither conqueror nor conquered:  
So is the equal poise of this fell war.  
Here on this molehill will I sit me down.  
To whom God will, there be the victory!  
For Margaret my queen, and Clifford too,  
Have chid me from the battle; swearing both  
They prosper best of all when I am thence.  
Would I were dead! if God's good will were so;  
For what is in this world but grief and woe?  
O God! methinks it were a happy life  
To be no better than a homely swain;  
To sit upon a hill, as I do now,  
To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,  
Thereby to see the minutes how they run,—  
How many make the hour full complete;  
How many hours bring about the day;  
How many days will finish up the year;  
How many years a mortal man may live.  
When this is known, then to divide the times,—  
So many hours must I tend my flock;  
So many hours must I take my rest;  
So many hours must I contemplate;  
So many hours must I sport myself;  
So many days my ewes have been with young;  
So many weeks ere the poor fools will yean;  
So many years ere I shall shear the fleece:  
So minutes, hours, days, months, and years,  
Pass'd over to the end they were created,  
Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.  
Ah, what a life were this! how sweet! how lovely!  
Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade  
To shepherds, looking on their silly sheep,  
Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy  
To kings that fear their subjects' treachery?  
O, yes, it doth; a thousand-fold it doth.  
And to conclude,—the shepherd's homely curds,  
His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,  
His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,  
All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,  
Is far beyond a prince's delicates,  
His viands sparkling in a golden cup,  
His body couched in a curious bed,  
When care, mistrust, and treason wait on him.

*Alarum. Enter a Son that has killed his Father, bringing in the dead body.*

*Son.* Ill blows the wind that profits nobody.  
 This man, whom hand to hand I slew in fight,  
 May be possessed with some store of crowns;  
 And I, that haply take them from him now,  
 May yet ere night yield both my life and them  
 To some man else, as this dead man doth me.—  
 Who's this?—O God! it is my father's face,  
 Whom in this conflict I unwares have kill'd.  
 O heavy times, begetting such events!  
 From London by the king was I press'd forth:  
 My father, being the Earl of Warwick's man,  
 Came on the part of York, press'd by his master;  
 And I, who at his hands receiv'd my life,  
 Have by my hands of life bereaved him.—  
 Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did!—  
 And pardon, father, for I knew not thee!—  
 My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks;  
 And no more words till they have flow'd their fill.

*K. Hen.* O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!  
 Whilst lions war, and battle for their dens,  
 Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.—  
 Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear;  
 And let our hearts and eyes, like civil war,  
 Be blind with tears, and break o'erchang'd with grief.

*Enter a Father that has killed his Son, with the body in his arms.*

*Fath.* Thou that so stontly hast resisted me,  
 Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold;  
 For I have bought it with an hundred blows.—  
 But let me see: is this our foeman's face?  
 Ah, no, no, no, it is mine only son!  
 Ah, boy, if any life be left in thee,  
 Throw up thine eye! see, see what showers arise,  
 Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,  
 Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart!—  
 O pity, God, this miserable age!—  
 What stratagems, how fell, how butcherly,  
 Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,  
 This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!—  
 O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,  
 And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!

*K. Hen.* Woe above woe! grief more than common grief!

O that my death would stay these ruthless deeds!—  
 O pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity!—  
 The red rose and the white are on his face,  
 The fatal colours of our striving houses:  
 The one his purple blood right well resembles;  
 The other his pale cheeks, methinks, presenteth:  
 Wither one rose, and let the other flourish;  
 If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

*Son.* How will my mother for a father's death  
 Take on with me, and ne'er be satisfied!

*Fath.* How will my wife for slaughter of my son  
 Shed seas of tears, and ne'er be satisfied!

*K. Hen.* How will the country for these woeful chances  
 Misthink the king, and not be satisfied!

*Son.* Was ever son so rued a father's death?

*Fath.* Was ever father so bemoan'd his son?

*K. Hen.* Was ever king so griev'd for subjects' woe?  
 Much is your sorrow; mine ten times so much.

*Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill.

[*Exit with the body.*]

*Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy winding-sheet;  
 My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre,—  
 For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go;  
 My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;  
 And so obsequious will thy father be,  
 E'en for the loss of thee, having no more,  
 As Priam was for all his valiant sons.  
 I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that will,  
 For I have murder'd where I should not kill.

[*Exit with the body.*]

*K. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,  
 Here sits a king more woeful than you are.

*Alarums: excursions. Enter QUEEN MARGARET,  
 PRINCE OF WALES, and EXETER.*

*Prince.* Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,  
 And Warwick rages like a chafed bull:  
 Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

*Q. Mar.* Mount you, my lord; towards Berwick post  
 amain:

Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds  
 Having the fearful flying hare in sight,  
 With fiery eyes sparkling for very wrath,  
 And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,  
 Are at our backs; and therefore hence amain.

*Exe.* Away! for vengeance comes along with them:

Nay, stay not to expostulate,—make speed ;  
Or else come after: I'll away before.

*K. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter:  
Not that I fear to stay, but love to go  
Whither the queen intends. Forward; away! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*Another part of the Field.*

*A loud Alarum. Enter CLIFFORD, wounded.*

*Clif.* Here burns my candle out,—ay, here it dies,  
Which, whiles it lasted, gave King Henry light.  
O Lancaster, I fear thy overthrow  
More than my body's parting with my soul!  
My love and fear glu'd many friends to thee ;  
And, now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt.  
Impairing Henry, strengthening misproud York,  
The common people swarm like summer flies ;  
And whither fly the gnats but to the sun?  
And who shines now but Henry's enemies?  
O Phœbus, hadst thou never given consent  
That Phaeton should check thy fiery steeds,  
Thy burning car never had scorch'd the earth!  
And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should do,  
Or as thy father and his father did,  
Giving no ground unto the house of York,  
They never then had sprung like summer flies ;  
I and ten thousand in this luckless realm  
Had left no mourning widows for our death ;  
And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace.  
For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air?  
And what makes robbers bold but too much lenity?  
Bootless are plaints, and cureless are my wounds ;  
No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:  
The foe is merciless, and will not pity ;  
For at their hands I have deserv'd no pity.  
The air hath got into my deadly wounds,  
And much effuse of blood doth make me faint.  
Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the rest ;  
I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms,—split my breast. [*He faints.*]

*Alarum and retreat. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD,  
MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords: good fortune bids us pause,  
And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.—



Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen,  
That led calm Henry, though he were a king,  
As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,  
Command an argosy to stem the waves.  
But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?

*War.* No, 'tis impossible he should escape;  
For, though before his face I speak the words,  
Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave:  
And, whereso'er he is, he's surely dead.

[CLIFFORD groans, and dies.]

*Edw.* Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?

*Rich.* A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.

*Edw.* See who it is; and, now the battle's ended,  
If friend or foe, let him be gently us'd.

*Rich.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford;  
Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch  
In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,  
But set his murdering knife unto the root  
From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring,—  
I mean our princely father, Duke of York.

*War.* From off the gates of York fetch down the head,  
Your father's head, which Clifford placed there;  
Instead whereof let this supply the room:  
Measure for measure must be answered.

*Edw.* Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our house,  
That nothing sung but death to us and ours:  
Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound,  
And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.

[Soldiers bring the body forward.]

*War.* I think his understanding is bereft.—  
Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee?—  
Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of life,  
And he nor sees nor hears us what we say.

*Rich.* O, would he did! and so, perhaps, he doth:  
'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,  
Because he would avoid such bitter taunts  
Which in the time of death he gave our father.

*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.

*Rich.* Clifford, ask mercy and obtain no grace.

*Edw.* Clifford, repent in bootless penitence.

*War.* Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.

*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.

*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.

*Edw.* Thou pitiedst Rutland, I will pity thee.

*Geo.* Where's Captain Margaret, to fence you now?

*War.* They mock thee, Clifford: swear as thou wast wont.

*Rich.* What, not an oath? nay, then the world goes hard  
 When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath.—  
 I know by that he's dead; and, by my soul,  
 If this right hand would buy two hours' life,  
 That I in all despite might rail at him,  
 This hand should chop it off, and with the issuing blood  
 Stifle the villain whose unstaunched thirst  
 York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

*War.* Ay, but he's dead: off with the traitor's head,  
 And rear it in the place your father's stands.—  
 And now to London with triumphant march,  
 There to be crowned England's royal king,  
 From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,  
 And ask the Lady Bona for thy queen:  
 So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;  
 And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread  
 The scatter'd foe that hopes to rise again;  
 For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,  
 Yet look to have them buzz to offend thine ears.  
 First will I see the coronation;  
 And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea,  
 To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.

*Edw.* Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick, let it be;  
 For in thy shoulder do I build my seat,  
 And never will I undertake the thing  
 Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.—  
 Richard, I will create thee Duke of Gloster;—  
 And George, of Clarence;—Warwick, as ourself,  
 Shall do and undo as him pleaseth best.

*Rich.* Let me be Duke of Clarence, George of Gloster;  
 For Gloster's dukedom is too ominous.

*War.* Tut, that's a foolish observation:  
 Richard, be Duke of Gloster. Now to London,  
 To see these honours in possession.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—*A Chase in the North of England.*

*Enter two Keepers, with cross-bows in their hands.*

1 *Keep.* Under this thick-grown brake we'll shroud our-  
 For through this laund anon the deer will come; [selves;  
 And in this covert will we make our stand,  
 Culling the principal of all the deer.

2 *Keep.* I'll stay above the hill, so both may shoot.

1 *Keep.* That cannot be; the noise of thy cross-bow  
Will scare the herd, and so my shot is lost.

Here stand we both, and aim we at the best:

And, for the time shall not seem tedious,

I'll tell thee what befell me on a day

In this self-place where now we mean to stand.

2 *Keep.* Here comes a man, let's stay till he be past.

*Enter KING HENRY, disguised, with a prayer-book.*

*K. Hen.* From Scotland am I stol'n, even of pure love,  
To greet mine own laud with my wishful sight.

No, Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine;

Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,

Thy balm wash'd off wherewith thou wast anointed:

No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,

No humble suitors press to speak for right,

No, not a man comes for redress of thee;

For how can I help them, and not myself?

1 *Keep.* Ay, here's a deer whose skin's a keeper's fee:  
This is the *quondam* king; let's seize upon him.

*K. Hen.* Let me embrace these sour adversities:

For wise men say it is the wisest course.

2 *Keep.* Why linger we? let us lay hands upon him.

1 *Keep.* Forbear awhile; we'll hear a little more.

*K. Hen.* My queen and son are gone to France for aid;

And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick

Is thither gone, to crave the French king's sister

To wife for Edward: if this news be true,

Poor queen and son, your labour is but lost;

For Warwick is a subtle orator,

And Louis a prince soon won with moving words.

By this account, then, Margaret may win him;

For she's a woman to be pitied much:

Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;

Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;

The tiger will be mild while she doth mourn;

And Nero will be tainted with remorse,

To hear and see her plaints, her brinish tears.

Ay, but she's come to beg; Warwick, to give:

She, on his left side, craving aid for Henry;

He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward.

She weeps, and says her Henry is depos'd;

He smiles, and says his Edward is install'd;

That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no more;

Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the wrong,

Inferreth arguments of mighty strength,  
 And in conclusion wins the king from her,  
 With promise of his sister, and what else,  
 To strengthen and support King Edward's place.  
 O Margaret, thus 'twill be; and thou, poor soul,  
 Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn!

[queens?]

2 *Keep.* Say, what art thou, that talk'st of kings and

*K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than I was born to:  
 A man at least, for less I should not be;  
 And men may talk of kings, and why not I?

2 *Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.

*K. Hen.* Why, so I am—in mind; and that's enough.

2 *Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?

*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on my head;  
 Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,  
 Nor to be seen: my crown is call'd content,—  
 A crown it is that seldom kings enjoy.

2 *Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd with content,  
 Your crown content and you must be contented  
 To go along with us; for, as we think,  
 You are the king King Edward hath depos'd;  
 And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,  
 Will apprehend you as his enemy.

*K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and break an oath?

2 *Keep.* No, never such an oath; nor will not now.

*K. Hen.* Where did you dwell when I was King of Eng-  
 land?

2 *Keep.* Here in this country, where we now remain.

*K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine months old;  
 My father and my grandfather were kings;  
 And you were sworn true subjects unto me:  
 And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths?

1 *Keep.* No;

For we were subjects but while you were king.

*K. Hen.* Why, am I dead? do I not breathe a man

Ah, simple men, you know not what you swear!

Look, as I blow this feather from my face,

And as the air blows it to me again,

Obeying with my wind when I do blow,

And yielding to another when it blows,

Commanded always by the greater gust;

Such is the lightness of you common men.

But do not break your oaths; for of that sin

My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.

Go where you will, the king shall be command'd;

And be you kings; command, and I'll obey.

1 *Keep.* We are true subjects to the king, King Edward.

*K. Hen.* So would you be again to Henry,  
If he were seated as King Edward is.

1 *Keep.* We charge you, in God's name and in the king's,  
To go with us unto the officers.

*K. Hen.* In God's name, lead; your king's name be obey'd:  
And what God will, that let your king perform;  
And what he will, I humbly yield unto. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, CLARENCE, and  
LADY GREY.

*K. Edw.* Brother of Gloster, at Saint Albans' field  
This lady's husband, Sir John Grey, was slain,  
His hands then seiz'd on by the conqueror:  
Her suit is now to repossess those lands;  
Which we in justice cannot well deny,  
Because in quarrel of the house of York  
The worthy gentleman did lose his life.

*Glo.* Your highness shall do well to grant her suit;  
It were dishonour to deny it her.

*K. Edw.* It were no less; but yet I'll make a pause.

*Glo.* Yea, is it so?

I see the lady hath a thing to grant,  
Before the king will grant her humble suit.

[*Aside to CLARENCE.*]

*Clar.* He knows the game: how true he keeps the wind!

[*Aside to GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* Silence!

[*Aside to CLARENCE.*]

*K. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your suit;  
And come some other time to know our mind.

*L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay:  
May it please your highness to resolve me now;  
And what your pleasure is shall satisfy me.

*Glo.* Ay, widow? then I warrant you all your lands,  
An if what pleases him shall pleasure you.  
Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow. [*Aside.*]

*Clar.* I fear her not, unless she chance to fall.

[*Aside to GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* God forbid that! for he'll take vantages.

[*Aside to CLARENCE.*]

*K. Edw.* How many children hast thou, widow? tell me.

*Clar.* I think he means to beg a child of her.

[*Aside to GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* Nay, whip me, then; he'll rather give her two.

[*Aside to CLARENCE.*]

*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.

*Glo.* You shall have four if you'll be ruled by him.

[*Aside.*]

*K. Edw.* 'Twere pity they should lose their father's lands.

*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it, then.

*K. Edw.* Lords, give us leave: I'll try this widow's wit.

*Glo.* Ay, good leave have you; for you will have leave,  
Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch.

[*Aside, and retires with CLARENCE.*]

*K. Edw.* Now tell me, madam, do you love your children?

*L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.

*K. Edw.* And would you not do much to do them good?

*L. Grey.* To do them good I would sustain some harm.

*K. Edw.* Then get your husband's lands, to do them good.

*L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your majesty.

*K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got.

*L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your highness' service.

*K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me if I give them?

*L. Grey.* What you command, that rests in me to do.

*K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.

*L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but thou canst do what I mean to ask.

*L. Grey.* Why, then, I will do what your grace commands.

*Glo.* He plies her hard; and much rain wears the marble.

[*Aside to CLARENCE.*]

*Clar.* As red as fire! nay, then her wax must melt.

[*Aside to GLOSTER.*]

*L. Grey.* Why stops my lord? shall I not hear my task?

*K. Edw.* An easy task; 'tis but to love a king.

*L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee.

*L. Grey.* I take my leave with many thousand thanks.

*Glo.* The match is made; she seals it with a curtsy.

[*Aside.*]

*K. Edw.* But stay thee,—'tis the fruits of love I mean.

*L. Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense.

What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?

*L. Grey.* My love till death, my humble thanks, my prayers;

That love which virtue begs and virtue grants.

*K. Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.

*L. Grey.* Why, then, you mean not as I thought you did.

*K. Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind.

*L. Grey.* My mind will never grant what I perceive  
Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.

*K. Edw.* To tell thee plain, I aim to lie with thee.

*L. Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather lie in prison.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, thou shalt not have thy husband's  
lands.

*L. Grey.* Why, then, mine honesty shall be my dower;  
For by that loss I will not purchase them.

*K. Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily.

*L. Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs both them and me.  
But, mighty lord, this merry inclination  
Accords not with the sadness of my suit:  
Please you dismiss me, either with ay or no.

*K. Edw.* Ay, if thou wilt say ay to my request;  
No, if thou dost say no to my demand.

*L. Grey.* Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

*Glo.* The widow likes him not, she knits her brows.

[*Aside to CLARENCE.*

*Clar.* He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom.

[*Aside to GLOSTER.*

*K. Edw.* Her looks do argue her replete with modesty;  
Her words do show her wit incomparable;  
All her perfections challenge sovereignty:

One way or other, she is for a king;  
And she shall be my love, or else my queen.— [*Aside.*  
Say that King Edward take thee for his queen?

*L. Grey.* 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord:  
I am a subject fit to jest withal,  
But far unfit to be a sovereign.

*K. Edw.* Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee,  
I speak no more than what my soul intends;  
And that is to enjoy thee for my love.

*L. Grey.* And that is more than I will yield unto:  
I know I am too mean to be your queen,  
And yet too good to be your concubine.

*K. Edw.* You cavil, widow: I did mean my queen.

*L. Grey.* 'Twill grieve your grace my sons should call you  
father.

*K. Edw.* No more than when my daughters call thee  
Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children; [mother.  
And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,  
Have other some: why, 'tis a happy thing  
To be the father unto many sons.

Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

*Glo.* The ghostly father now hath done his shrift.

*Clar.* When he was made a shriver, <sup>[*Aside to CLARENCE.*</sup> 'twas for shift.

*K. Edw.* Brothers, you muse what that we two have had. <sup>[*Aside to GLOSTER.*</sup>

*Glo.* The widow likes it not, for she looks very sad.

*K. Edw.* You'd think it strange if I should marry her.

*Clar.* To whom, my lord.

*K. Edw.* Why, Clarence, to myself.

*Glo.* That would be ten days' wonder at the least.

*Clar.* That's a day longer than a wonder lasts.

*G'o.* By so much is the wonder in extremes.

*K. Edw.* Well, jest on, brothers: I can tell you both  
Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

*Enter a Nobleman.*

*Nob.* My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,  
And brought your prisoner to your palace gate.

*K. Edw.* See that he be convey'd unto the Tower:—

And go we, brothers, to the man that took him,

To question of his apprehension.—

Widow, go you along:—lords, use her honourably.

[*Exeunt K. EDW., L. GREY, CLAR., and Nobleman.*]

*Glo.* Ay, Edward will use women honourably.—

Would he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all,

That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,

To cross me from the golden time I look for!

And yet, between my soul's desire and me,—

The lustful Edward's title buried,—

Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward,

And all the unlook'd-for issue of their bodies,

To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:

A cold premeditation for my purpose!

Why, then, I do but dream on sovereignty;

Like one that stands upon a promontory,

And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,

Wishing his foot were equal with his eye;

And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,

Saying he'll lade it dry to have his way:

So do I wish the crown, being so far off;

And so I chide the means that keep me from it;

And so I say I'll cut the causes off,

Flattering me with impossibilities.—

My eye's too quick, my heart o'erweens too much,

Unless my hand and strength could equal them.

Well, say there is no kingdom, then, for Richard;



What other pleasure can the world afford?  
I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,  
And deck my body in gay ornaments,  
And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks.  
O miserable thought! and more unlikely  
Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!  
Why, love forswore me in my mother's womb:  
And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,  
She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe,  
To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub;  
To make an envious mountain on my back,  
Where sits deformity to mock my body;  
To shape my legs of an unequal size;  
To disproportion me in every part,  
Like to a chaos, or an unlied bear-whelp  
That carries no impression like the dam.  
And am I, then, a man to be belov'd?  
O monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought!  
Then, since this earth affords no joy to me  
But to command, to check, to o'erbear such  
As are of better person than myself,  
I'll make my heaven to dream upon the crown,  
And whiles I live to account this world but hell,  
Until my misshap'd trunk that bears this head  
Be round empaled with a glorious crown.  
And yet I know not how to get the crown,  
For many lives stand between me and home:  
And I,—like one lost in a thorny wood,  
That rents the thorns, and is rent with the thorns,  
Seeking a way, and straying from the way;  
Not knowing how to find the open air,  
But toiling desperately to find it out,—  
Torment myself to catch the English crown:  
And from that torment I will free myself,  
Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.  
Why, I can smile, and murder whiles I smile;  
And cry content to that which grieves my heart;  
And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,  
And frame my face to all occasions.  
I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall;  
I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk;  
I'll play the orator as well as Nestor;  
Deceive more slyly than Ulysses could;  
And, like a Sinon, take another Troy:  
I can add colours to theameleon;  
Change shapes with Proteus for advantages;

And set the murderous Machiavel to school.

Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?

Tut, were it further off, I'll pluck it down!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—FRANCE. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Flourish. Enter LOUIS, the French King, and LADY BONA, attended; the KING takes his state. Then enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD her Son, and the EARL OF OXFORD.*

*K. Lou.* Fair Queen of England, worthy Margaret,

[*Rising.*]

Sit down with us: it ill befits thy state

And birth, that thou shouldst stand while Louis doth sit.

*Q. Mar.* No, mighty King of France: now Margaret

Must strike her sail, and learn awhile to serve

Where kings command. I was, I must confess,

Great Albion's queen in former golden days:

But now mischance hath trod my title down,

And with dishonour laid me on the ground;

Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,

And to my humble seat conform myself.

*K. Lou.* Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this deep  
despair?

*Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears,  
And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in cares.

*K. Lou.* Whate'er it be, be thou still like thyself,

And sit thee by our side: yield not thy neck

[*Seats her by him.*]

To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind

Still ride in triumph over all mischance.

Be plain, Queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;

It shall be eas'd, if France can yield relief.

*Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my drooping  
thoughts,

And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to speak.

Now, therefore, be it known to noble Louis

That Henry, sole possessor of my love,

Is, of a king, become a banish'd man,

And forc'd to live in Scotland a forlorn;

While proud ambitious Edward Duke of York

Usurps the regal title and the seat

Of England's true-anointed lawful king.

This is the cause that I, poor Margaret,—

With this my son, Prince Edward, Henry's heir,—

And come to crave thy just and lawful aid;  
 And if thou fail us, all our hope is done:  
 Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;  
 Our people and our peers are both misled,  
 Our treasure seiz'd, our soldiers put to flight,  
 And, as thou see'st, ourselves in heavy plight.

*K. Lou.* Renowned queen, with patience calm the storm,  
 While we bethink a means to break it off.

*Q. Mar.* The more we stay the stronger grows our foe.

*K. Lou.* The more I stay the more I'll succour thee.

*Q. Mar.* O, but impatience waiteth on true sorrow:—  
 And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow!

*Enter WARWICK, attended.*

*K. Lou.* What's he approacheth boldly to our presence?

*Q. Mar.* Our Earl of Warwick, Edward's greatest friend.

*K. Lou.* Welcome, brave Warwick! What brings thee  
 to France?

*[Descending from his state. Q. MAR. rises.]*

*Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to rise;  
 For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

*War.* From worthy Edward, King of Albion,  
 My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,  
 I come, in kindness and unfeigned love,—  
 First, to do greetings to thy royal person;  
 And then to crave a league of amity;  
 And lastly, to confirm that amity  
 With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant  
 That virtuous Lady Bona, thy fair sister,  
 To England's king in lawful marriage.

*Q. Mar.* If that go forward, Henry's hope is done.

*War.* And, gracious madam [*to BONA*], in our king's  
 behalf,

I am commanded, with your leave and favour,  
 Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue  
 To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart;  
 Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,  
 Hath plac'd thy beauty's image and thy virtue.

*Q. Mar.* King Louis,—and Lady Bona,—hear me speak,  
 Before you answer Warwick. His demand  
 Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest love,  
 But from deceit bred by necessity;  
 For how can tyrants safely govern home  
 Unless abroad they purchase great alliance?  
 To prove him tyrant, this reason may suffice,—  
 That Henry liveth still; but were he dead.

Yet here Prince Edward stands, King Henry's son.  
 Look therefore, Louis, that by this league and marriage  
 Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour;  
 For though usurpers sway the rule awhile,  
 Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth wrongs.

*War.* Injurious Margaret!

*Prince.* And why not queen?

*War.* Because thy father Henry did usurp;  
 And thou no more art prince than she is queen.

*Oxf.* Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,  
 Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;  
 And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the Fourth,  
 Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;  
 And, after that wise prince, Henry the Fifth,  
 Who by his prowess conquered all France:  
 From these our Henry lineally descends.

*War.* Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,  
 You told not how Henry the Sixth hath lost  
 All that which Henry the Fifth had gotten?  
 Methinks these peers of France should smile at that.  
 But for the rest,—you tell a pedigree  
 Of threescore and two years; a silly time  
 To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against thy liege,  
 Whom thou obey'dst thirty and six years,  
 And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the right,  
 Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?  
 For shame! leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king by whose injurious doom  
 My elder brother, the Lord Aubrey Vere,  
 Was done to death? and more than so, my father,  
 Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,  
 When nature brought him to the door of death?  
 No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,  
 This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

*War.* And I the house of York.

*K. Lou.* Queen Margaret, Prince Edward, and Oxford,  
 Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside  
 While I use further conference with Warwick.

*Q. Mar.* Heavens grant that Warwick's words bewitch  
 him not! [*Retiring with the PRINCE and OXF.*]

*K. Lou.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy con-  
 science,  
 Is Edward your true king? for I were loth  
 To link with him that were not lawful chosen.

*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour.

*K. Lou.* But is he gracious in the people's eye?

*War.* The more that Henry was unfortunate.

*K. Lou.* Then further,—all dissembling set aside,—  
Tell me for truth the measure of his love  
Unto our sister Bona.

*War.* Such it seems  
As may beseem a monarch like himself.  
Myself have often heard him say, and swear,  
That this his love was an eternal plant,  
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,  
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun;  
Exempt from envy, but not from disdain,  
Unless the Lady Bona quit his pain.

*K. Lou.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.

*Bona.* Your grant or your denial shall be mine:—  
Yet I confess [to WARWICK] that often ere this day,  
When I have heard your king's desert recounted,  
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.

*K. Lou.* Then, Warwick, thus,—Our sister shall be  
Edward's;

And now forthwith shall articles be drawn  
Touching the jointure that your king must make,  
Which with her dowry shall be counterpois'd.—  
Draw near, Queen Margaret, and be a witness  
That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English king.

*Q. Mar.* Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device  
By this alliance to make void my suit:  
Before thy coming, Louis was Henry's friend.

*K. Lou.* And still is friend to him and Margaret:  
But if your title to the crown be weak,—  
As may appear by Edward's good success,—  
Then 'tis but reason that I be releas'd  
From giving aid which late I promised.  
Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand  
That your estate requires and mine can yield.

*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland at his ease,  
Where having nothing, nothing can he lose.  
And as for you yourself, our *quondam* queen,  
You have a father able to maintain you;  
And better 'twere you troubled him than France.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, impudent and shameless Warwick,—  
Proud setter-up and puller-down of kings!  
I will not hence till, with my talk and tears,  
Both full of truth, I make King Louis behold

Thy sly conveyance and thy lord's false love;  
For both of you are birds of self-same feather.

[*A horn sounded within.*]

*K. Lou.* Warwick, this is some post to us or thee.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord ambassador, these letters are for you,  
Sent from your brother, Marquis Montague:—  
These from our king unto your majesty:—  
And, madam, these for you; from whom I know not.

[*To MAR. They all read their letters.*]

*Oxf.* I like it well that our fair queen and mistress  
Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his.

*Prince.* Nay, mark how Louis stamps, as he were  
I hope all's for the best. [nettled:]

*K. Lou.* Warwick, what are thy news?—and yours, fair  
queen?

*Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with unhop'd joys.

*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.

*K. Lou.* What, has your king married the Lady Grey?  
And now, to soothe your forgery and his,  
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?  
Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?  
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?

*Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much before:  
This proveth Edward's love and Warwick's honesty.

*War.* King Louis, I here protest, in sight of heaven,  
And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,  
That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's,—  
No more my king, for he dishonours me,  
But most himself, if he could see his shame.  
Did I forget that by the house of York  
My father came untimely to his death?  
Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?  
Did I impale him with the regal crown?  
Did I put Henry from his native right?  
And am I guerdon'd at the last with shame?  
Shame on himself! for my desert is honour:  
And, to repair my honour lost for him,  
I here renounce him, and return to Henry.—  
My noble queen, let former grudges pass,  
And henceforth I am thy true servitor:  
I will revenge his wrong to Lady Bona,  
And replant Henry in his former state.

*Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to  
love;

And I forgive and quite forget old faults,  
And joy that thou becom'st King Henry's friend.

*War.* So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,  
That if King Louis vouchsafe to furnish us  
With some few bands of chosen soldiers,  
I'll undertake to land them on our coast,  
And force the tyrant from his seat by war.

'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him :

And as for Clarence,—as my letters tell me,—

He's very likely now to fall from him,

For matching more for wanton lust than honour,

Or than for strength and safety of our country.

*Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be reveng'd  
And by thy help to this distressed queen?

*Q. Mar.* Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,  
Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?

*Bona.* My quarrel and this English queen's are one.

*War.* And mine, fair Lady Bona, joins with yours.

*K. Lou.* And mine with hers, and thine, and Margaret's.  
Therefore, at last, I firmly am resolv'd  
You shall have aid.

*Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all at once.

*K. Lou.* Then, England's messenger, return in post,  
And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
That Louis of France is sending over masquers  
To revel it with him and his new bride :  
Thou see'st what's past,—go fear thy king withal.

*Bona.* Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,  
I'll wear the willow-garland for his sake.

*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning-weeds are laid aside,  
And I am ready to put armour on,

*War.* Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong ;  
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.

There's thy reward : be gone. [Exit Messenger.]

*K. Lou.* But, Warwick,

Thou and Oxford, with five thousand men,  
Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle ;  
And, as occasion serves, this noble queen  
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.  
Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt,—  
What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

*War.* This shall assure my constant loyalty,—  
That if our queen and this young prince agree,  
I'll join mine eldest daughter, and my joy,  
To him forthwith in holy wedlock-bands.

*Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion.—

Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,  
Therefore delay not,—give thy hand to Warwick;  
And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,  
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

*Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it;  
And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.

[*He gives his hand to WARWICK.*]

*K. Lou.* Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be  
And thou, Lord Bourbon, our high-admiral, [levied,  
Shalt waft them over with our roval fleet—  
I long till Edward fall by war's mischance,  
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.

[*Exeunt all but WARWICK.*]

*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador,  
But I return his sworn and mortal foe:  
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,  
But dreadful war shall answer his demand.  
Had he none else to make a stale but me?  
Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.  
I was the chief that rais'd him to the crown,  
And I'll be chief to bring him down again:  
Not that I pity Henry's misery,  
But seek revenge on Edward's mockery.

[*Exit.*]

---

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter GLOSTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, MONTAGUE, and others.*

*Glo.* Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you  
Of this new marriage with the Lady Grey?  
Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?

*Clar.* Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France;  
How could he stay till Warwick made return?

*Som.* My lords, forbear this talk; here comes the king.

*Glo.* And his well-chosen bride.

*Clar.* I mind to tell him plainly what I think.

*Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, attended; LADY GREY, as Queen; PEMBROKE, STAFFORD, HASTINGS, and others.*

*K. Edw.* Now, brother of Clarence, how like you our  
choice,  
That you stand pensive, as half malcontent?



*Clar.* As well as Louis of France or the Earl of Warwick;  
Which are so weak of courage and in judgment  
That they'll take no offence at our abuse.

*K. Edw.* Suppose they take offence without a cause,  
They are but Louis and Warwick: I am Edward,  
Your king and Warwick's, and must have my will.

*Glo.* And shall have your will, because our king:  
Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?

*Glo.* Not I:

No, God forbid that I should wish them sever'd  
Whom God hath join'd together; ay, and 'twere pity  
To sunder them that yoke so well together.

*K. Edw.* Setting your scorns and your mislike aside,  
Tell me some reason why the Lady Grey  
Should not become my wife and England's queen:—  
And you too, Somerset and Montague,  
Speak freely what you think.

*Clar.* Then this is mine opinion,—that King Louis  
Becomes your enemy for mocking him  
About the marriage of the Lady Bona.

*Glo.* And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge,  
Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.

*K. Edw.* What if both Louis and Warwick be pleas'd  
By such invention as I can devise?

*Mont.* Yet, to have join'd with France in such alliance  
Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth  
'Gainst foreign storms than any home-bred marriage.

*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague that of itself  
England is safe, if true within itself?

*Mont.* But the safer when 'tis back'd with France.

*Hast.* 'Tis better using France than trusting France:  
Let us be back'd with God, and with the seas  
Which he hath given for fence impregnable,  
And with their helps only defend ourselves;  
In them and in ourselves our safety lies.

*Clar.* For this one speech Lord Hastings well deserves  
To have the heir of the Lord Hungerford.

*K. Edw.* Ay, what of that? it was my will and grant;  
And for this once my will shall stand for law.

*Glo.* And yet methinks your grace hath not done well,  
To give the heir and daughter of Lord Scales  
Unto the brother of your loving bride;  
She better would have fitted me or Clarence:  
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.

*Clar.* Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir

Of the Lord Bonville on your new wife's son,  
And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.

*K. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence! is it for a wife  
That thou art malcontent? I will provide thee.

*Clar.* In choosing for yourself you show'd your judgment,  
Which being shallow, you shall give me leave  
To play the broker in mine own behalf;  
And to that end I shortly mind to leave you.

*K. Edw.* Leave me or tarry, Edward will be king,  
And not be tied unto his brother's will.

*Q. Eliz.* My lords, before it pleas'd his majesty  
To raise my state to title of a queen,  
Do me but right, and you must all confess  
That I was not ignoble of descent;  
And meaner than myself have had like fortune.  
But as this title honours me and mine,  
So your dislikes, to whom I would be pleasing,  
Do cloud my joys with danger and with sorrow.

*K. Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon their frowns:  
What danger or what sorrow can befall thee,  
So long as Edward is thy constant friend  
And their true sovereign, whom they must obey?  
Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee too,  
Unless they seek for hatred at my hands;  
Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,  
And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

*Glo.* I hear, yet say not much, but think the more. [*Aside.*]

*Enter a Messenger.*

*K. Edw.* Now, messenger, what letters or what news  
From France?

*Mess.* My sovereign liege, no letters; and few words  
But such as I, without your special pardon,  
Dare not relate.

*K. Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in brief,  
Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess them.  
What answer makes King Louis unto our letters?

*Mess.* At my depart, these were his very words:  
*Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
That Louis of France is sending over masquers  
To revel it with him and his new bride.*

*K. Edw.* Is Louis so brave? belike he thinks me Henry.  
But what said Lady Bona to my marriage?

*Mess.* These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain:  
*Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,  
I'll wear the willow-garland for his sake.*

*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less;  
She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen?  
For I have heard that she was there in place.

*Mess.* Tell him, quoth she, *my mourning-weeds are done,*  
*And I am ready to put armour on.*

*K. Edw.* Belike she minds to play the Amazon.  
But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Mess.* He, more incens'd against your majesty  
Than all the rest, discharg'd me with these words:  
*Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong;*  
*And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.*

*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud  
words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd:  
They shall have wars, and pay for their presumption.  
But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

*Mess.* Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in  
friendship

That young Prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

*Clar.* Belike the elder; Clarence will have the younger.  
Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,  
For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter;  
That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage  
I may not prove inferior to yourself.—  
You that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[*Exit, and SOMERSET follows.*]

*Glo.* Not I:

My thoughts aim at a further matter; I  
Stay not for the love of Edward, but the crown. [*Aside.*]

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!  
Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen;  
And haste is needful in this desperate case.—  
Pembroke and Stafford, you in our behalf  
Go levy men, and make prepare for war,  
They are already, or quickly will be landed:  
Myself in person will straight follow you.

[*Excunt PEM. and STAF.*]

But ere I go, Hastings and Montague,  
Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest,  
Are near to Warwick by blood and by alliance:  
Tell me if you love Warwick more than me?  
If it be so, then both depart to him;  
I rather wish you foes than hollow friends:  
But if you mind to hold your true obedience,  
Give me assurance with some friendly vow,  
That I may never have you in suspect.

*Mont.* So God help Montague as he proves true!

*Hast.* And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause!

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

*Glo.* Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

*K. Edw.* Why, so! then am I sure of victory.

Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour

Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Plain in Warwickshire.*

*Enter* WARWICK and OXFORD, with French and other Forces.

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well;  
The common people by numbers swarm to us.—  
But see where Somerset and Clarence come!

*Enter* CLARENCE and SOMERSET.

Speak suddenly, my lords,—are we all friends?

*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.

*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;—  
And welcome, Somerset.—I hold it cowardice  
To rest mistrustful where a noble heart  
Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love;  
Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's brother,  
Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings:  
But welcome, sweet Clarence; my daughter shall be thine.  
And now, what rests but, in night's coverture,  
Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,  
His soldiers lurking in the towns about,  
And but attended by a simple guard,  
We may surprise and take him at our pleasure?  
Our scouts have found the adventure very easy:  
That as Ulysses and stout Diomede  
With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus' tents,  
And brought from thence the Thracian fatal steeds,  
So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,  
At unawares may beat down Edward's guard  
And seize himself; I say not, slaughter him,  
For I intend but only to surprise him.  
You that will follow me to this attempt,  
Applaud the name of Henry with your leader.

[*They all cry* "Henry!"

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort:

For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George!

[*Exeunt.*]





MADAMO FINX

WINIFRED AND KING EDWARD

*Third Part of King Henry VI. Act IV, Scene III*







SCENE III.—EDWARD'S *Camp, near Warwick.**Enter certain Watchmen, before the KING'S tent.*

1 *Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stand:  
The king by this has set him down to sleep.

2 *Watch.* What, will he not to bed?

1 *Watch.* Why, no: for he hath made a solemn vow  
Never to lie and take his natural rest  
Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd.

2 *Watch.* To-morrow then, belike, shall be the day,  
If Warwick be so near as men report.

3 *Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that  
That with the king here resteth in his tent?

1 *Watch.* 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the king's chiefest  
friend.

3 *Watch.* O, is it so? But why commands the king  
That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,  
While he himself keeps in the cold field?

2 *Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous.

3 *Watch.* Ay, but give me worship and quietness;  
I like it better than a dangerous honour.  
If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,  
'Tis to be doubted he would waken him.

1 *Watch.* Unless our halberds did shut up his passage.

2 *Watch.* Ay, wherefore else guard we his royal tent,  
But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and Forces.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see where stand his guard.  
Courage, my masters! honour now or never!  
But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

1 *Watch.* Who goes there?

2 *Watch.* Stay, or thou diest.

[WARWICK and the rest cry all—"Warwick! Warwick!"  
and set upon the Guard, who fly, crying "Arm!  
Arm!" WARWICK and the rest following them.]

*The drum beating and trumpets sounding, re-enter WARWICK and the rest, bringing the KING out in his gown, sitting in a chair: GLOSTER and HASTINGS are seen flying.*

*Som.* What are they that fly there?

*War.* Richard and Hastings: let them go; here is the duke.

*K. Edw.* The duke! Why, Warwick, when we parted  
Thou call'dst me king? [last

*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd:  
When you disgrac'd me in my embassy,  
Then I degraded you from being king,  
And come now to create you Duke of York.  
Alas, how should you govern any kingdom,  
That know not how to use ambassadors;  
Nor how to be contented with one wife;  
Nor how to use your brothers brotherly;  
Nor how to study for the people's welfare;  
Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies?

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother of Clarence. art thou here too?  
Nay, then I see that Edward needs must down.—  
Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,  
Of thee thyself and all thy complices,  
Edward will always bear himself as king:  
Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,  
My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

*War.* Then, for his mind, be Edward England's king:

[Takes off his crown.

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,  
And be true king indeed; thou but the shadow.—  
My Lord of Somerset, at my request,  
See that forthwith Duke Edward be convey'd  
Unto my brother, Archbishop of York.  
When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,  
I'll follow you, and tell what answer  
Louis and the Lady Bona send to him.—  
Now, for awhile farewell, good Duke of York.

*K. Edw.* What fates impose, that men must needs abide;  
It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

[Exit, led out; Som. with him.

*Oxf.* What now remains, my lords, for us to do,  
But march to London with our soldiers?

*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;  
To free King Henry from imprisonment,  
And see him seated in the regal throne. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and RIVERS.

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn  
What late misfortune is befall'n King Edward?

*Riv.* What, loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick?

*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.

*Riv.* Then, is my sovereign slain?

*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner;  
 Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard,  
 Or by his foe surpris'd at unawares:  
 And, as I further have to understand,  
 Is new committed to the Bishop of York,  
 Fell Warwick's brother, and by that our foe.

*Riv.* These news, I must confess, are full of grief;  
 Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may:  
 Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.

*Q. Eliz.* Till then, fair hope must hinder life's decay.  
 And I the rather wean me from despair,  
 For love of Edward's offspring in my womb:  
 This is it that makes me bridle passion,  
 And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross;  
 Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear,  
 And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,  
 Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown  
 King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown.

*Riv.* But, madam, where is Warwick, then, become?

*Q. Eliz.* I am inform'd that he comes towards London,  
 To set the crown once more on Henry's head:  
 Guess thou the rest; King Edward's friends must down.  
 But to prevent the tyrant's violence,—  
 For trust not him that hath once broken faith,—  
 I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary,  
 To save at least the heir of Edward's right:  
 There shall I rest secure from force and fraud.  
 Come, therefore, let us fly while we may fly:  
 If Warwick take us, we are sure to die.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.*

*Enter* GLOSTER, HASTINGS, SIR WILLIAM STANLEY, and  
*others.*

*Glo.* Now, my Lord Hastings and Sir William Stanley,  
 Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither  
 Into this chiefest thicket of the park.  
 Thus stands the case: you know our king, my brother,  
 Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands  
 He hath good usage and great liberty;  
 And often, but attended with weak guard,  
 Comes hunting this way, to disport himself.

I have advértis'd him by secret means  
That if about this hour he make this way,  
Under the colour of his usual game,  
He shall here find his friends, with horse and men,  
To set him free from his captivity.

*Enter KING EDWARD and a Huntsman.*

*Hunt.* This way, my lord; for this way lies the game.

*K. Edw.* Nay, this way, man: see where the huntsmen stand.—

Now, brother of Gloster, Lord Hastings, and the rest,  
Stand you thus close to steal the bishop's deer?

*Glo.* Brother, the time and case requireth haste:

Your horse stands ready at the park-corner.

*K. Edw.* But whither shall we then?

*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord; and ship from thence to Flanders.

*Glo.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that was my meaning.

*K. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.

*Glo.* But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk.

*K. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go along?

*Hunt.* Better do so than tarry and be hang'd.

*Glo.* Come then, away; let's ha' no more ado.

*K. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee from Warwick's frown;

And pray that I may repossess the crown.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Room in the Tower.*

*Enter KING HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, YOUNG RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, Lieutenant of the Tower, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Master lieutenant, now that God and friends  
Have shaken Edward from the regal seat,  
And turu'd my captive state to liberty,  
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys,—  
At our enlargement what are thy due fees?

*Lieut.* Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns;  
But if an humble prayer may prevail,  
I then crave pardon of your majesty.

*K. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well-using me?  
Nay, be thou sure I'll well requite thy kindness,  
For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure;  
Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds  
Conceive, when, after many moody thoughts,  
At last, by notes of household harmony,

They quite forget their loss of liberty.—  
 But, Warwick, after God, thou sett'st me free,  
 And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;  
 He was the author, thou the instrument.  
 Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite,  
 By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me,  
 And that the people of this blessed land  
 May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,—  
 Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,  
 I here resign my government to thee,  
 For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

*War.* Your grace hath still been fam'd for virtuous:  
 And now may seem as wise as virtuous  
 By spying and avoiding fortune's malice,  
 For few men rightly temper with the stars:  
 Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace  
 For choosing me when Clarence is in place.

*Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,  
 To whom the heavens, in thy nativity,  
 Adjudg'd an olive-branch and laurel-crown,  
 As likely to be blest in peace and war;  
 And therefore I yield thee my free consent.

*War.* And I choose Clarence only for protector.

*K. Hen.* Warwick and Clarence, give me both your hands:  
 Now join your hands, and with your hands your hearts,  
 That no dissension hinder government:  
 I make you both protectors of this land;  
 While I myself will lead a private life,  
 And in devotion spend my latter days,  
 To sin's rebuke and my Creator's praise.

*War.* What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will?

*Clar.* That he consents if Warwick yield consent;  
 For on thy fortune I repose myself.

*War.* Why, then, though loth, yet must I be content:  
 We'll yoke together, like a double shadow  
 To Henry's body, and supply his place;  
 I mean, in bearing weight of government,  
 While he enjoys the honour and his ease.  
 And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful  
 Forthwith that Edward be pronounc'd a traitor,  
 And all his lands and goods be confiscate.

*Clar.* What else? and that succession be determin'd.

*War.* Ay, therein Clarence shall not want his part.

*K. Hen.* But, with the first of all your chief affairs,  
 Let me entreat,—for I command no more,—  
 That Margaret your queen, and my son Edward,

Be sent for, to return from France with speed;  
 For till I see them here, by doubtful fear  
 My joy of liberty is half eclips'd.

*Clar.* It shall be done, my sovereign, with all speed.

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Somerset, what youth is that,  
 Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

*Som.* My liege, it is young Henry, Earl of Richmond.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, England's hope.—If secret powers  
 [Lays his hand on his head.]

Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,  
 This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss.  
 His looks are full of peaceful majesty;  
 His head by nature fram'd to wear a crown,  
 His hand to wield a sceptre; and himself  
 Likely in time to bless a regal throne.  
 Make much of him, my lords; for this is he  
 Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* What news, my friend?

*Mess.* That Edward is escaped from your brother,  
 And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

*War.* Unsavoury news! but how made he escape?

*Mess.* He was convey'd by Richard Duke of Gloster  
 And the Lord Hastings, who attended him  
 In secret ambush on the forest-side,  
 And from the bishop's huntsmen rescu'd him;  
 For hunting was his daily exercise.

*War.* My brother was too careless of his charge.—  
 But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide  
 A salve for any sore that may betide.

[*Exeunt* K. HEN., WAR., CLAR., LIENT., and ATTEN.]

*Som.* My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's:  
 For doubtless Burgundy will yield him help,  
 And we shall have more wars before't be long.  
 As Henry's late presaging prophecy  
 Did glad my heart with hope of this young Richmond,  
 So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts,  
 What may befall him, to his harm and ours:  
 Therefore, Lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,  
 Forthwith we'll send him hence to Brittany,  
 Till storms be past of civil enmity.

*Oxf.* Ay, for if Edward repossess the crown,  
 'Tis like that Richmond with the rest shall down.

*Som.* It shall be so; he shall to Brittany.  
 Come, therefore, let's about it speedily.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—*Before York.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, *and* Forces.

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, Lord Hastings, and the rest,

Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,  
And says that once more I shall interchange  
My waned state for Henry's regal crown.  
Well have we pass'd, and now repass'd the seas,  
And brought desired help from Burgundy :  
What, then, remains, we being thus arriv'd  
From Ravenspurg haven before the gates of York,  
But that we enter, as into our dukedom?

*Glo.* The gates made fast!—Brother, I like not this;  
For many men that stumble at the threshold  
Are well foretold that danger lurks within.

*K. Edw.* Tush, man, abodements must not now affright us :  
By fair or foul means we must enter in,  
For hither will our friends repair to us.

*Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more to summon them.

*Enter, on the Walls, the Mayor of York and Aldermen.*

*May.* My lords, we were forewarned of your coming,  
And shut the gates for safety of ourselves ;  
For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.

*K. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be your king,  
Yet Edward at the least is Duke of York.

*May.* True, my good lord ; I know you for no less.

*K. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but my dukedom,  
As being well content with that alone.

*Glo.* But when the fox hath once got in his nose,  
He'll soon find means to make the body follow. [*Aside.*]

*Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand you in a doubt?  
Open the gates, we are King Henry's friends.

*May.* Ay, say you so? the gates shall then be open'd.

[*Exeunt from above.*]

*Glo.* A wise stout captain, and soon persuaded!

*Hast.* The good old man would fain that all were well,  
So 'twere not 'long of him ; but being enter'd,  
I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade  
Both him and all his brothers unto reason.

*Re-enter the Mayor and Aldermen, below.*

*K. Edw.* So, master mayor: these gates must not be shut  
But in the night or in the time of war.

What! fear not, man, but yield me up the keys;

[*Takes his keys.*]

For Edward will defend the town and thee,  
And all those friends that deign to follow me.

*Drum.* Enter MONTGOMERY and Forces, marching.

*Glo.* Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,  
Our trusty friend, unless I be deceiv'd.

*K. Edw.* Welcome, Sir John! But why come you in arms?

*Mont.* To help King Edward in his time of storm,  
As every loyal subject ought to do.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery; but we now forget  
Our title to the crown, and only claim  
Our dukedom till God please to send the rest.

*Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence again:  
I came to serve a king, and not a duke.—  
Drummer, strike up, and let us march away.

[*A march begun.*]

*K. Edw.* Nay, stay, Sir John, awhile; and we'll debate  
By what safe means the crown may be recover'd.

*Mont.* What talk you of debating? in few words,—  
If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king,  
I'll leave you to your fortune, and be gone  
To keep them back that come to succour you:  
Why should we fight, if you pretend no title?

*Glo.* Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?

*K. Edw.* When we grow stronger, then we'll make our  
claim:

Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning.

*Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule.

*Glo.* And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns.

Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand;  
The bruit thereof will bring you many friends.

*K. Edw.* Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right,  
And Henry but usurps the diadem.

*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself;  
And now will I be Edward's champion.

*Hast.* Sound trumpet; Edward shall be here proclaim'd:—  
Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation.

[*Gives him a paper. Flourish.*]

*Sold.* [reads.] *Edward the Fourth, by the grace of God,  
King of England and France, and Lord of Ireland, &c.*

*Mont.* And whosoe'er gainsays King Edward's right,  
By this I challenge him to single fight.

[*Throws down his gauntlet.*]

*All.* Long live Edward the Fourth!



*K. Edw.* Thanks, brave Montgomery; — and thanks unto you all;  
 If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness.  
 Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York;  
 And when the morning sun shall raise his car  
 Above the border of this horizon,  
 We'll forward towards Warwick and his mates;  
 For well I wot that Henry is no soldier. —  
 Ah, froward Clarence! how evil it beseems thee  
 To flatter Henry and forsake thy brother!  
 Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick. —  
 Come on, brave soldiers: doubt not of the day;  
 And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE,  
 MONTAGUE, EXETER, and OXFORD.

*War.* What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia,  
 With hasty Germans and blunt Hollanders,  
 Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,  
 And with his troops doth march amain to London;  
 And many giddy people flock to him.

*Oxf.* Let's levy men, and beat him back again.

*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out;  
 Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,  
 Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war;  
 Those will I muster up:—and thou, son Clarence,  
 Shalt stir up, in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent,  
 The knights and gentlemen to come with thee:—  
 Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,  
 Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find  
 Men well inclin'd to hear what thou command'st:—  
 And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well lov'd,  
 In Oxfordshire shalt muster up thy friends.  
 My sovereign, with the loving citizens,—  
 Like to his island girt in with the ocean,  
 Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs,—  
 Shall rest in London till we come to him.—  
 Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.—  
 Farewell, my sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

*Clar.* In sign of truth, I kiss your highness' hand.

*K. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate!

*Mont.* Comfort, my lord;—and so I take my leave.

*Oxf.* And thus [*kissing HENRY'S hand*] I seal my truth,  
and bid adieu.

*K. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,  
And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords: let's meet at Coventry.

[*Exeunt WAR., CLAR., OXF., and MONT.*]

*K. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest awhile.  
Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship?  
Methinks the power that Edward hath in field  
Should not be able to encounter mine.

*Exe.* The doubt is, that he will seduce the rest.

*K. Hen.* That's not my fear; my need hath got me fame:  
I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,  
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays;  
My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,  
My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,  
My mercy dried their water-flowing tears;  
I have not been desirous of their wealth,  
Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies,  
Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd:  
Then why should they love Edward more than me?  
No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace:  
And, when the lion fawns upon the lamb,  
The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[*Shout within, "A Lancaster! A Lancaster!"*]

*Exe.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

*Enter KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Seize on the shame-fac'd Henry, bear him hence;  
And once again proclaim us king of England.—  
You are the fount that makes small brooks to flow:  
Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry,  
And swell so much the higher by their ebb.—  
Hence with him to the Tower; let him not speak.

[*Exeunt some with KING HENRY.*]

And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,  
Where peremptory Warwick now remains:  
The sun shines hot; and, if we use delay,  
Cold biting winter mars our hop'd-for hay.

*Glo.* Away betimes, before his forces join,  
And take the great-grown traitor unawares:  
Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.—Coventry.

*Enter, upon the Walls, WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, two Messengers, and others.*

*War.* Where is the post that came from valiant Oxford  
How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?

*1 Mess.* By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.

*War.* How far off is our brother Montague?—  
Where is the post that came from Montague?

*2 Mess.* By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

*Enter SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.*

*War.* Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?  
And, by thy guess, how nigh is Clarence now?

*Som.* At Southam I did leave him with his forces,  
And do expect him here some two hours hence.

*[Drum heard.]*

*War.* Then Clarence is at hand; I hear his drum.

*Som.* It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies;  
The drum your honour hears marcheth from Warwick.

*War.* Who should that be? belike unlook'd-for friends.

*Som.* They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

*March. Flourish. Enter KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.

*Glo.* See how the surly Warwick mans the wall!

*War.* O unbid spite! is sportful Edward come?  
Where slept our scouts, or how are they seduc'd,  
That we could hear no news of his repair?

*K. Edw.* Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates,  
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy knee,  
Call Edward king, and at his hands beg mercy?  
And he shall pardon thee these outrages.

*War.* Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,  
Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down,  
Call Warwick patron, and be penitent?  
And thou shalt still remain the Duke of York.

*Glo.* I thought, at least, he would have said the  
king;

Or did he make the jest against his will?

*War.* Is not a dukedom, sir, a goodly gift?

*Glo.* Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give:  
I'll do thee service for so good a gift.

*War.* 'Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, 'tis mine, if but by Warwick's gift.

*War.* Thon art no Atlas for so great a weight:

And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again;

And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.

*K. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner:

And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this,—

What is the body when the head is off?

*Glo.* Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast,

But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten,

The king was slyly finger'd from the deck!

You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace,

And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* 'Tis even so; yet you are Warwick still.

*Glo.* Come, Warwick, take the time; kneel down, kneel  
down:

Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cools.

*War.* I had rather chop this hand off at a blow,

And with the other fling it at thy face,

Than bear so low a sail, to strike to thee.

*K. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy  
friend;

This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,

Shall, whiles thy head is warm and new cut off,

Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood,—

*Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more.*

*Enter OXFORD, with Forces, drum, and colours.*

*War.* O cheerful colours! see where Oxford comes!

*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster!

[*He and his Forces enter the city.*]

*Glo.* The gates are open, let us enter too.

*K. Edw.* So other foes may set upon our backs.

Stand we in good array; for they no doubt

Will issue out again and bid us battle:

If not, the city being but of small defence,

We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.

*War.* O, welcome, Oxford! for we want thy help.

*Enter MONTAGUE, with Forces, drum, and colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster!

[*He and his Forces enter the city.*]

*Glo.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason  
Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

*K. Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory:  
My mind presageth happy gain and conquest.

*Enter SOMERSET, with Forces, drum, and colours.*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!

*[He and his Forces enter the city.]*

*Glo.* Two of thy name, both Dukes of Somerset,  
Have sold their lives unto the house of York;  
And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter CLARENCE, with Forces, drum, and colours.*

*War.* And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,  
Of force enough to bid his brother battle;  
With whom an upright zeal to right prevails  
More than the nature of a brother's love!—  
Come, Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick call.

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means!

*[Taking the red rose out of his hat.]*

Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:  
I will not ruin my father's house,  
Who gave his blood to lime the stones together,  
And set up Lancaster. Why, trowst thou, Warwick,  
That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, unnatural,  
To bend the fatal instruments of war  
Against his brother and his lawful king?  
Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath:  
To keep that oath were more impiety  
Than Jephtha's, when he sacrific'd his daughter.  
I am so sorry for my trespass made,  
That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,  
I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe;  
With resolution wheresoe'er I meet thee,—  
As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad,—  
To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.  
And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,  
And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.—  
Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends;  
And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults,  
For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.

*K. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times more lov'd,  
Than if thou never hadst deserv'd our hate.

*Glo.* Welcome, good Clarence; this is brother like.

*War.* O passing traitor, perjurd and unjust!

*K. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town and  
fight?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?

*War.* Alas, I am not coop'd here for defence!  
I will away towards Barnet presently,  
And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.

*K. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the  
way.

Lords, to the field: Saint George and victory.

[*March. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Field of Battle near Barnet.*

*Alarums and excursions. Enter KING EDWARD, bringing  
in WARWICK wounded.*

*K. Edw.* So, lie thou there: die thou, and die our fear;  
For Warwick was a bug that fear'd us all.—  
Now, Montague, sit fast; I seek for thee,  
That Warwick's bones may keep thine company. [*Exit.*]

*War.* Ah, who is nigh? come to me, friend or foe,  
And tell me who is victor, York or Warwick?  
Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,  
My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,  
That I must yield my body to the earth,  
And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe.  
Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,  
Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,  
Under whose shade the ramping lion slept,  
Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading tree,  
And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful wind.  
These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's black vail,  
Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,  
To search the secret treasons of the world:  
The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with blood,  
Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres;  
For who liv'd king, but I could dig his grave?  
And who durst smile when Warwick bent his brow?  
Lo, now my glory smear'd in dust and blood!  
My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,  
Even now forsake me; and of all my lands  
Is nothing left me but my body's length!  
Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and dust!  
And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

*Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.*

*Som.* Ah, Warwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,  
We might recover all our loss again:  
The queen from France hath brought a puissant power;  
Even now we heard the news: ah, couldst thou fly!

*War.* Why, then, I would not fly.—Ah, Montague,  
If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,  
And with thy lips keep in my soul awhile!  
Thou lov'st me not; for, brother, if thou didst,  
Thy tears would wash this cold congealed blood,  
That glues my lips and will not let me speak.  
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

*Som.* Ah, Warwick! Montague hath breath'd his last;  
And to the latest gasp cried out for Warwick,  
And said, *Commend me to my valiant brother.*  
And more he would have said; and more he spoke,  
Which sounded like a cannon in a vault,  
That might not be distinguish'd; but at last,  
I well might hear, deliver'd with a groan,  
*O, farewell, Warwick!*

*War.* Sweet rest his soul!—fly, lords, and save yourselves;  
For Warwick bids you all farewell, to meet in heav'n. [*Dies.*]

*Oxf.* Away, away, to meet the queen's great power!  
[*Exeunt, bearing off WAR.'s body.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Part of the Field.*

*Flourish.* Enter KING EDWARD in triumph; with  
CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and the rest.

*K. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an upward course,  
And we are grac'd with wreaths of victory.  
But in the midst of this bright-shining day  
I spy a black, suspicious, threatening cloud,  
That will encounter with our glorious sun  
Ere he attain his easeful western bed:  
I mean, my lords, those powers that the queen  
Hath rais'd in Gallia have arriv'd our coast,  
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

*Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that cloud,  
And blow it to the source from whence it came:  
Thy very beams will dry those vapours up;  
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

*Glo.* The queen is valu'd thirty thousand strong,  
And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her:  
If she have time to breathe, be well assur'd,  
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

*K. Edw.* We are advértis'd by our loving friends  
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury;  
We, having now the best at Barnet field,  
Will thither straight, for willingness rids way;

And as we march, our strength will be augmented  
 In every county as we go along.—  
 Strike up the drum; cry, Courage! and away. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—*Plains near Tewksbury.*

*March.* Enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD,  
 SOMERSET, OXFORD, and Soldiers.

*Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and wail their  
 loss,

But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.  
 What though the mast be now blown overboard,  
 The cable broke, the holding-anchor lost,  
 And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood;  
 Yet lives our pilot still: is't meet that he  
 Should leave the helm, and, like a fearful lad,  
 With tearful eyes add water to the sea,  
 And give more strength to that which hath too much;  
 Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the rock,  
 Which industry and courage might have sav'd?  
 Ah, what a shame! ah, what a fault were this!  
 Say Warwick was our anchor; what of that?  
 And Montague our top-mast; what of him?  
 Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; what of these?  
 Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?  
 And Somerset another goodly mast?  
 The friends of France our shrouds and tacklings?  
 And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I  
 For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?  
 We will not from the helm to sit and weep;  
 But keep our course, though the rough wind say no,  
 From shelves and rocks that threaten us with wreck.  
 As good to chide the waves as speak them fair.  
 And what is Edward but a ruthless sea?  
 What Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?  
 And Richard but a ragged fatal rock?  
 All these the enemies to our poor bark.  
 Say you can swim; alas, 'tis but awhile!  
 Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly sink:  
 Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,  
 Or else you famish,—that's a threefold death.  
 This speak I, lords, to let you understand,  
 If case some one of you would fly from us,  
 That there's no hop'd-for mercy with the brothers,  
 More than with ruthless waves, with sands, and rocks.



Why, courage, then! what cannot be avoided,  
'Twere childish weakness to lament or fear.

*Prince.* Methinks a woman of this valiant spirit  
Should, if a coward heard her speak these words,  
Infuse his breast with magnanimity,  
And make him naked foil a man-at-arms.  
I speak not this as doubting any here;  
For did I but suspect a fearful man,  
He should have leave to go away betimes;  
Lest in our need he might infect another,  
And make him of like spirit to himself.  
If any such be here,—as God forbid!—  
Let him depart before we need his help.

*Oxf.* Women and children of so high a courage,  
And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual shame.—  
O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather  
Doth live again in thee: long mayst thou live  
To bear his image and renew his glories!

*Som.* And he that will not fight for such a hope,  
Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day,  
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

*Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset;—sweet Oxford, thanks.

*Prince.* And take his thanks that yet hath nothing else.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand,  
Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.

*Oxf.* I thought no less: it is his policy  
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.

*Som.* But he's deceiv'd; we are in readiness.

*Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart, to see your forwardness.

*Oxf.* Here pitch our battle; hence we will not budge.

*Flourish and march. Enter, at a distance, KING EDWARD,  
CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny wood,  
Which, by the heavens' assistance and your strength,  
Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.

I need not add more fuel to your fire;  
For well I wot ye blaze to burn them out:  
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords.

*Q. Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen, what I should say  
My tears gainsay; for every word I speak,  
Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.  
Therefore, no more but this:—Henry, your sovereign,  
Is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp'd,

His realm a slaughter-house, his subjects slain,  
 His statutes cancell'd, and his treasure spent;  
 And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil.  
 You fight in justice: then, in God's name, lords,  
 Be valiant, and give signal to the fight. [*Exeunt both armies.*]

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Plains.*

*Alarums: excursions; and afterwards a retreat. Then enter*

KING EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces, with  
 QUEEN MARGARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, prisoners.

*K. Edw.* Now, here a period of tumultuous broils.  
 Away with Oxford to Hammes' Castle straight;  
 For Somerset, off with his guilty head.

Go, bear them hence; I will not hear them speak.

*Oxf.* For my part, I'll not trouble thee with words.

*Som.* Nor I, but stoop with patience to my fortune.

[*Exeunt OXF. and SOM., guarded.*]

*Q. Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous world,  
 To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.

*K. Edw.* Is proclamation made that who finds Edward  
 Shall have a high reward, and he his life?

*Glo.* It is; and lo, where youthful Edward comes.

*Enter Soldiers, with PRINCE EDWARD.*

*K. Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him speak.  
 What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?—  
 Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make  
 For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,  
 And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

*Prince.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York:  
 Suppose that I am now my father's mouth;  
 Resign thy chair, and where I stand kneel thou,  
 Whilst I propose the self-same words to thee,  
 Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, that thy father had been so resolv'd?

*Glo.* That you might still have worn the petticoat,  
 And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.

*Prince.* Let *Æsop* fable in a winter's night;  
 His currish riddles sort not with this place.

*Glo.* By heaven, brat, I'll plague you for that word.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague to men.

*Glo.* For God's sake, take away this captive scold.

*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crook-back rather.

*K. Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I'll charm your tongue.

*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.

*Prince.* I know my duty; you are all undutiful:  
Lascivious Edward,—and thou, perjur'd George,—  
And thou, misshapen Dick,— I tell ye all  
I am your better, traitors as ye are;—  
And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.

*K. Edw.* Take that, the likeness of this railer here.

[*Stabs him.*

*Glo.* Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy agony.

[*Stabs him.*

*Clar.* And there's for twitting me with perjury.

[*Stabs him.*

*Q. Mar.* O, kill me too!

*Glo.* Marry, and shall.

[*Offers to kill her.*

*K. Edw.* Hold, Richard, hold; for we have done too much.

*Glo.* Why should she live, to fill the world with words?

*K. Edw.* What, doth she swoon? use means for her recovery.

*Glo.* Clarence, excuse me to the king my brother;  
I'll hence to London on a serious matter:  
Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

*Clar.* What? what?

*Glo.* The Tower! the Tower!

[*Exit.*

*Q. Mar.* O Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy!  
Canst thou not speak?—O traitors! murderers!—  
They that stabb'd Cæsar shed no blood at all,  
Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,  
If this foul deed were by to equal it:  
He was a man;—this, in respect, a child,—  
And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.  
What's worse than murderer, that I may name it?  
No, no, my heart will burst, an if I speak:—  
And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.—  
Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals!  
How sweet a plant have you untimely clogg'd!  
You have no children, butchers! if you had,  
The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse:  
But if you ever chance to have a child,  
Look in his youth to have him so cut off  
As, deathsinen, you have rid this sweet young prince.

*K. Edw.* Away with her; go, bear her hence perforce.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, despatch me here;  
Here sheathe thy sword, I'll pardon thee my death:  
What, wilt thou not?—then, Clarence, do it thou.

*Clar.* By heaven, I will not do thee so much ease. [do it.

*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence, do thou

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear I would not do it?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, but thou usest to forswear thyself:

'Twas sin before, but now 'tis charity.

What! wilt thou not?—Where is that devil's butcher,  
Hard-favour'd Richard?—Richard, where art thou?

Thou art not here: murder is thy alms-deed;

Petitioners for blood thou ne'er putt'st back.

*K. Edw.* Away, I say; I charge ye, bear her hence.

*Q. Mar.* So come to you and yours as to this prince!

[*Exit, led out forcibly.*]

*K. Edw.* Where's Richard gone?

*Clar.* To London, all in post; and, as I guess,  
To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head.

Now march we hence: discharge the common sort

With pay and thanks, and let's away to London,

And see our gentle queen how well she fares,—

By this, I hope, she hath a son for me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—LONDON. *A Room in the Tower.*

KING HENRY is discovered sitting with a book in his hand,  
the Lieutenant attending. *Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Good-day, my lord. What, at your book so hard?

*K. Hen.* Ay, my good lord:—my lord, I should say  
rather;

'Tis sin to flatter, good was little better:

Good Gloster and good devil were alike,

And both preposterous: therefore, not good lord.

*Glo.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must confer.

[*Exit Lieutenant.*]

*K. Hen.* So flies the reckless shepherd from the wolf;

So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece,

And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.—

What scene of death hath Roscius now to act?

*Glo.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind;

The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

*K. Hen.* The bird that hath been limed in a bush,

With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush;

And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird,

Have now the fatal object in my eye

Where my poor young was lim'd, was caught, and kill'd.

*Glo.* Why, what a peevish fool was that of Crete,

That taught his son the office of a fowl!

And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.

*K. Hen.* I, Dædalus; my poor boy, Icarus;  
 Thy father, Miuos, that denied our course;  
 The sun, that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy,  
 Thy brother Edward; and thyself, the sea,  
 Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.  
 Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words!  
 My breast can better brook thy dagger's point  
 Than can my ears that tragic history.  
 But wherefore dost thou come? is't for my life?

*Glo.* Think'st thou I am an executioner?

*K. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure, thou art:  
 If murdering innocents be executing,  
 Why, then thou art an executioner.

*Glo.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

*K. Hen.* Hadst thou been kill'd when first thou didst  
 presume,  
 Thou hadst not liv'd to kill a son of mine.  
 And thus I prophesy,—that many a thousand,  
 Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear,  
 And many an old man's sigh, and many a widow's,  
 And many an orphan's water-standing eye,—  
 Men for their sons, wives for their husbands,  
 And orphans for their parents' timeless death,—  
 Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.  
 The owl shriek'd at thy birth,—an evil sign;  
 The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time;  
 Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempest shook down trees;  
 The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top,  
 And chattering pies in dismal discords sung.  
 Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,  
 And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope,  
 To wit,—  
 An indigest deformed lump,  
 Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.  
 Teeth hadst thou in thy head when thou wast born,  
 To signify thou cam'st to bite the world:  
 And if the rest be true which I have heard,  
 Thou cam'st—

*Glo.* I'll hear no more:—die, prophet, in thy speech:

[Stabs him.

For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.  
 O God forgive my sins and pardon thee!

[Dies.

*Glo.* What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster  
 Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted.  
 See how my sword weeps for the poor king's death!

O, may such purple tears be alway shed  
 From those that wish the downfall of our house!—  
 If any spark of life be yet remaining,  
 Down, down to hell; and say I sent thee thither,—

[Stabs him again.

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.—  
 Indeed, 'tis true that Henry told me of;  
 For I have often heard my mother say  
 I came into the world with my legs forward:  
 Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,  
 And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right:  
 The midwife wonder'd; and the women cried,  
*O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth!*  
 And so I was, which plainly signified  
 That I should snarl, and bite, and play the dog.  
 Then, since the heavens have shap'd my body so,  
 Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it.  
 I have no brother, I am like no brother;  
 And this word *love*, which greybeards call divine,  
 Be resident in men like one another,  
 And not in me: I am myself alone.—  
 Clarence, beware; thou keep'st me from the light:  
 But I will sort a pitchy day for thee;  
 For I will buzz abroad such prophecies  
 That Edward shall be fearful of his life:  
 And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.  
 King Henry and the prince his son are gone:  
 Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest;  
 Counting myself but bad till I be best.—  
 I'll throw thy body in another room,  
 And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom.

[Exit with the body.

SCENE VII.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Flourish.* KING EDWARD is discovered sitting on his throne,  
 QUEEN ELIZABETH with the infant PRINCE, CLARENCE,  
 GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and others, near him.

*K. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's royal throne,  
 Repurchas'd with the blood of enemies.  
 What valiant foemen, like to autumn's corn,  
 Have we mow'd down in tops of all their pride!  
 Three Dukes of Somerset,—threefold renown'd  
 For hardy and undoubted champions;  
 Two Cliffords, as the father and the son;

And two Northumberlands,—two braver men  
 Ne'er spurr'd their coursers at the trumpet's sound ;  
 With them the two brave bears, Warwick and Montague,  
 That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,  
 And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.  
 Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,  
 And made our footstool of security.—  
 Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy.—  
 Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles and myself  
 Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night ;  
 Went all afoot in summer's scalding heat,  
 That thou mightst repossess the crown in peace :  
 And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.

*Glo.* I'll blast his harvest if your head were laid ;  
 For yet I am not look'd on in the world.

This shoulder was ordain'd so thick to heave ;  
 And heave it shall some weight, or break my back.—  
 Work thou the way,—and that shalt execute. [*Aside.*]

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Gloster, love my lovely queen ;  
 And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

*Clar.* The duty that I owe unto your majesty  
 I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, noble Clarence ; worthy brother,  
 thanks.

*Glo.* And, that I love the tree from whence thou sprang'st,  
 Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit.—

To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his master,  
 And cried, all hail ! when as he meant all harm. [*Aside.*]

*K. Edw.* Now am I seated as my soul delights,  
 Having my country's peace and brothers' loves.

*Clar.* What will your grace have done with Margaret ?  
 Reignier, her father, to the King of France  
 Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,  
 And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

*K. Edw.* Away with her, and waft her hence to France.  
 And now what rests but that we spend the time  
 With stately triumphs, mirthful comic shows,  
 Such as befit the pleasure of the court ?

Sound drums and trumpets ! farewell, sour annoy !  
 For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy. [*Exeunt.*]





**THE LIFE AND DEATH**  
**OF**  
**KING RICHARD III.**

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

- KING EDWARD THE FOURTH.  
 EDWARD, *Prince of Wales, afterwards* KING EDWARD V. } *Sons to the KING.*  
 RICHARD, *Duke of York,* }  
 GEORGE, *Duke of Clarence,* } *Brothers to the KING.*  
 RICHARD, *Duke of Gloster, afterwards* KING RICHARD III. }  
 A Young Son of Clarence.  
 HENRY, *Earl of Richmond, afterwards* KING HENRY VII.  
 CARDINAL BOUCHIER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
 THOMAS ROTHERAM, *Archbishop of York.*  
 JOHN MORTON, *Bishop of Ely.*  
 DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
 DUKE OF NORFOLK.  
 EARL OF SURREY, *his Son.*  
 EARL RIVERS, *Brother to KING EDWARD'S Queen.*  
 MARQUIS OF DORSET and LORD GREY, *her Sons.*  
 EARL OF OXFORD.  
 LORD HASTINGS.  
 LORD STANLEY.  
 LORD LOVEL.  
 SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN.  
 SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF.  
 SIR WILLIAM CATESBY.  
 SIR JAMES TYRREL.  
 SIR JAMES BLOUNT.  
 SIR WALTER HERBERT.  
 SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, *Lieutenant of the Tower.*  
 CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, *a Priest.* Another Priest.  
 Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of Wiltshire.  
 ELIZABETH, *Queen to KING EDWARD IV.*  
 MARGARET, *Widow to KING HENRY VI.*  
 DUCHESS OF YORK, *Mother to KING EDWARD IV., CLARENCE, and GLOSTER.*  
 LADY ANNE, *Widow to EDWARD, Prince of Wales, Son to KING HENRY VI.; afterwards married to the DUKE OF GLOSTER.*  
 A Young Daughter of Clarence.  
 Lords, and other Attendants; two Gentlemen, a Pursuivant, Scrivener, Citizens, Murderers, Messengers, Ghosts, Soldiers, &c.

SCENE,—ENGLAND.

THE LIFE AND DEATH  
OF  
KING RICHARD III.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Street.*

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Now is the winter of our discontent  
Made glorious summer by this sun of York;  
And all the clouds that lower'd upon our house  
In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths;  
Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
Our stern alarums chang'd to merry meetings,  
Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.  
Grim-visag'd war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front;  
And now,—instead of mounting barbed steeds  
To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,—  
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber  
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.  
But I,—that am not shap'd for sportive tricks,  
Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;  
I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty  
To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,  
Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time  
Into this breathing world scarce half made up,  
And that so lamely and unfashionable  
That dogs bark at me as I halt by them;—  
Why, I, in this weak piping time of peace,  
Have no delight to pass away the time,  
Unless to spy my shadow in the sun,  
And descant on mine own deformity:

And therefore,—since I cannot prove a lover,  
 To entertain these fair well-spoken days,—  
 I am determin'd to prove a villain,  
 And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
 Plots have I laid, inductive dangerous,  
 By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams  
 To set my brother Clarence and the king  
 In deadly hate the one against the other:  
 And, if King Edward be as true and just  
 As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,  
 This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,—  
 About a prophecy, which says that G  
 Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be.  
 Dive, thoughts, down to my soul:—here Clarence comes.

*Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.*

Brother, good day: what means this armed guard  
 That waits upon your grace?

*Clar.* His majesty,  
 Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed  
 This conduct to convey me to the Tower.

*Glo.* Upon what cause?

*Clar.* Because my name is George.  
*Glo.* Alack, my lord, that fault is none of yours;  
 He should, for that, commit your godfathers:—  
 O, belike his majesty hath some intent  
 That you shall be new-christen'd in the Tower.  
 But what's the matter, Clarence? may I know?

*Clar.* Yea, Richard, when I know; for I protest  
 As yet I do not: but, as I can learn,  
 He hearkens after prophecies and dreams;  
 And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,  
 And says a wizard told him that by G  
 His issue disinherited should be;  
 And, for my name of George begins with G,  
 It follows in his thought that I am he.  
 These, as I learn, and such like toys as these,  
 Have mov'd his highness to commit me now.

*Glo.* Why, this it is, when men are rul'd by women:—  
 'Tis not the king that sends you to the Tower;  
 My Lady Grey, his wife, Clarence, 'tis she  
 That tempers him to this extremity.  
 Was it not she, and that good man of worship,  
 Antony Woodville, her brother there,  
 That made him send Lord Hastings to the Tower,

From whence this present day he is deliver'd?  
We are not safe, Clarence; we are not safe.

*Clar.* By heaven, I think there is no man secure  
But the queen's kindred, and night-walking heralds  
That trudge betwixt the king and Mistress Shore.  
Heard you not what an humble suppliant  
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?

*Glo.* Humbly complaining to her deity  
Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.  
I'll tell you what,—I think it is our way,  
If we will keep in favour with the king,  
To be her men, and wear her livery:  
The jealous o'er-worn widow and herself,  
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen,  
Are mighty gossips in this monarchy.

*Brak.* I beseech your graces both to pardon me;  
His majesty hath straitly given in charge  
That no man shall have private conference,  
Of what degree soever, with his brother.

*Glo.* Even so; an please your worship, Brakenbury,  
You may partake of anything we say:  
We speak no treason, man;—we say the king  
Is wise and virtuous; and his noble queen  
Well struck in years, fair, and not jealous;—  
We say that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,  
A cherry lip, a bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue;  
And the queen's kindred are made gentlefolks:  
How say you, sir? can you deny all this?

*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have naught to do.

*Glo.* Naught to do with Mistress Shore! I tell thee, fellow,  
He that doth naught with her, excepting one,  
Were best to do it secretly, alone.

*Brak.* What one, my lord?

*Glo.* Her husband, knave:—wouldst thou betray me?

*Brak.* I beseech your grace to pardon me; and, withal,  
Forbear your conference with the noble duke.

*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and will obey.

*Glo.* We are the queen's objects, and must obey.—  
Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;  
And whatsoever you will employ me in,—  
Were it to call King Edward's widow sister,—  
I will perform it to enfranchise you.  
Meantime, this deep disgrace in brotherhood  
Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

*Clar.* I know it pleaseth neither of us well.

*Glo.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be long;

I will deliver you, or else lie for you :  
Meantime, have patience.

*Clar.*

I must perforce : farewell.

[*Exeunt CLAR., BRAK., and Guard.*]

*Glo.* Go, tread the path that thou shalt ne'er return,  
Simple, plain Clarence !—I do love thee so  
That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,  
If heaven will take the present at our hands.—  
But who comes here ? the new-deliver'd Hastings ?

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious lord !

*Glo.* As much unto my good lord chamberlain !  
Well are you welcome to this open air.  
How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment ?

*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as prisoners must :  
But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks  
That were the cause of my imprisonment.

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt ; and so shall Clarence too ;  
For they that were your enemies are his,  
And have prevail'd as much on him as you.

*Hast.* More pity that the eagle should be mew'd  
While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.

*Glo.* What news abroad ?

*Hast.* No news so bad abroad as this at home,—  
The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy,  
And his physicians fear him mightily.

*Glo.* Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed.  
O, he hath kept an evil diet long,  
And overmuch consum'd his royal person :  
'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.  
What, is he in his bed ?

*Hast.*

He is.

*Glo.* Go you before, and I will follow you. [*Exit HAST*  
He cannot live, I hope ; and must not die  
Till George be pack'd with posthorse up to heaven.  
I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,  
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments ;  
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,  
Clarence hath not another day to live :  
Which done, God take King Edward to his mercy,  
And leave the world for me to bustle in !  
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter :  
What though I kill'd her husband and her father ?  
The readiest way to make the wench amends,  
Is to become her husband and her father :

The which will I ; not all so much for love  
 As for another secret close intent,  
 By marrying her, which I must reach unto.  
 But yet I run before my horse to market :  
 Clarence still breathes ; Edward still lives and reigns :  
 When they are gone, then must I count my gains. [Exit.

SCENE II.—LONDON. *Another Street.*

*Enter the Corpse of KING HENRY THE SIXTH, borne in an open coffin, Gentlemen bearing halberds to guard it; and LADY ANNE as mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable load,—  
 If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,—  
 Whilst I awhile obsequiously lament  
 The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.—  
 Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!  
 Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!  
 Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!  
 Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,  
 To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,  
 Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son,  
 Stabb'd by the self-same hand that made these wounds!  
 Lo, in these windows that let forth thy life,  
 I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes:—  
 O, cursed be the hand that made these holes!  
 Cursed the heart that had the heart to do it!  
 Cursed the blood that let this blood from hence!  
 More direful hap betide that hated wretch  
 That makes us wretched by the death of thee,  
 Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,  
 Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives!  
 If ever he have child, abortive be it,  
 Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,  
 Whose ugly and unnatural aspect  
 May fright the hopeful mother at the view;  
 And that be heir to his unhappiness!  
 If ever he have wife, let her be made  
 More miserable by the death of him  
 Than I am made by my young lord and thee!—  
 Come, now towards Chertsey with your holy load,  
 Taken from Paul's to be interred there;  
 And still, as you are weary of the weight,  
 Rest you, whiles I lament King Henry's corse.

[The Bearers take up the Corpse and advance.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Stay, you that bear the corse, and set it down.

*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this fiend,  
To stop devoted charitable deeds?

*Glo.* Villains, set down the corse; or, by Saint Paul,  
I'll make a corse of him that disobeys!

*1 Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.

*Glo.* Unmanner'd dog! stand thou, when I command:  
Advance thy halberd higher than my breast,  
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,  
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

*[The Bearers set down the coffin.]*

*Anne.* What, do you tremble? are you all afraid?

Alas, I blame you not; for you are mortal,  
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.—

Avaunt, thou dreadful minister of hell!

Thou hadst but power over his mortal body,  
His soul thou canst not have; therefore, be gone.

*Glo.* Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.

*Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble us  
not;

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,  
Fill'd it with cursing cries and deep exclaims.

If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,  
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries.—

O, gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry's wounds  
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afresh!

Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity;

For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood

From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells;

Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural,

Provokes this deluge most unnatural.—

O God, which this blood mad'st, revenge his death!

O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge his death!

Either, heaven, with lightning strike the murderer dead;

Or, earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick,

As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,

Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butchered!

*Glo.* Lady, you know no rules of charity,  
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.

*Anne.* Villain, thou know'st no law of God nor man:

No beast so fierce but knows some touch of pity.

*Glo.* But I know none, and therefore am no beast.

*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!

*Glo.* More wonderful when angels are so angry.—



Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,  
Of these supposed evils to give me leave,  
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.

*Anne.* Vouchsafe, diffus'd infection of a man,  
For these known evils but to give me leave,  
By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self.

*Glo.* Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have  
Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

*Anne.* Fouler than heart can think thee, thou canst make  
No excuse current, but to hang thyself.

*Glo.* By such despair I should accuse myself.

*Anne.* And by despairing shalt thou stand excus'd;  
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,  
That didst unworthy slaughter upon others.

*Glo.* Say that I slew them not?

*Anne.* Then say they were not slain:  
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.

*Glo.* I did not kill your husband.

*Anne.* Why, then, he is alive.

*Glo.* Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's hand.

*Anne.* In thy foul throat thou liest: Queen Margaret saw  
Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood;  
The which thou once didst bend against her breast,  
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.

*Glo.* I was provoked by her slanderous tongue,  
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.

*Anne.* Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,  
That never dreamt on aught but butcheries:  
Didst thou not kill this king?

*Glo.* I grant ye.

*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedgehog? then, God grant me too  
Thou mayst be damned for that wicked deed!  
O, he was gentle, mild, and virtuous.

*Glo.* The fitter for the King of heaven, that hath him.

*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.

*Glo.* Let him thank me, that help to send him thither;  
For he was fitter for that place than earth.

*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.

*Glo.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.

*Anne.* Some dungeon.

*Glo.* Your bed-chamber.

*Anne.* Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest!

*Glo.* So will it, madam, till I lie with you.

*Anne.* I hope so.

*Glo.* I know so.—But, gentle Lady Anne,—  
To leave this keen encounter of our wits,

And fall somewhat into a slower method,—  
Is not the causer of the timeless deaths  
Of these Plantagenets, Henry and Edward,  
As blameful as the executioner?

*Anne.* Thou wast the cause and most accurs'd effect.

*Glo.* Your beauty was the cause of that effect;  
Your beauty, that did haunt me in my sleep  
To undertake the death of all the world,  
So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.

*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,  
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.

*Glo.* These eyes could not endure that beauty's wreck;  
You should not blemish it if I stood by:  
As all the world is cheered by the sun,  
So I by that; it is my day, my life.

*Anne.* Black night o'ershade thy day, and death thy life!

*Glo.* Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.

*Anne.* I would I were, to be reveng'd on thee.

*Glo.* It is a quarrel most unnatural,  
To be reveng'd on him that loveth thee.

*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,  
To be reveng'd on him that kill'd my husband.

*Glo.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,  
Did it to help thee to a better husband.

*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the earth.

*Glo.* He lives that loves thee better than he could.

*Anne.* Name him.

*Glo.* Plantagenet.

*Anne.* Why, that was he.

*Glo.* The self-same name, but one of better nature.

*Anne.* Where is he?

*Glo.* Here. [*She spits at him.*] Why dost  
thou spit at me?

*Anne.* Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake!

*Glo.* Never came poison from so sweet a place.

*Anne.* Never hang poison on a fouler toad.

Out of my sight: thou dost infect mine eyes.

*Glo.* Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.

*Anne.* Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!

*Glo.* I would they were, that I might die at once;

For now they kill me with a living death.

Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,

Sham'd their aspects with store of childish drops:

These eyes, which never shed remorseful tear,

No, when my father York and Edward wept,

To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made

When black-fac'd Clifford shook his sword at him;  
 Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,  
 Told the sad story of my father's death,  
 And twenty times made pause, to sob and weep,  
 That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,  
 Like trees bedash'd with rain; in that sad time  
 My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear;  
 And what these sorrows could not thence exhale,  
 Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.  
 I never su'd to friend nor enemy;  
 My tongue could never learn sweet smoothing word;  
 But, now thy beauty is propos'd my fee,  
 My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak.

*[She looks scornfully at him.]*

Teach not thy lip such scorn; for it was made  
 For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.  
 If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,  
 Lo, here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;  
 Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,  
 And let the soul forth that adareth thee,  
 I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,  
 And humbly beg the death upon my knee.  
 Nay, do not pause; for I did kill King Henry,—

*[He lays his breast open; she offers at it with his sword.]*

But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me.  
 Nay, now despatch; 'twas I that stabb'd young Edward,—

*[She again offers at his breast.]*

But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.

*[She lets fall the sword.]*

Take up the sword again, or take up me.

*Anne.* Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death  
 I will not be thy executioner.

*Glo.* Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.

*Anne.* I have already.

*Glo.* That was in thy rage:

Speak it again, and, even with the word,  
 This hand, which for thy love did kill thy love,  
 Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love;  
 To both their deaths shalt thou be accessory.

*Anne.* I would I knew thy heart.

*Glo.* 'Tis figured in my tongue.

*Anne.* I fear me both are false.

*Glo.* Then never man was true.

*Anne.* Well, well, put up your sword.

*Glo.* Say, then, my peace is made.

*Anne.* That shalt thou know hereafter.

*Glo.* But shall I live in hope?

*Anne.* All men, I hope, live so.

*Glo.* Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

*Anne.* To take is not to give. [*She puts on the ring.*]

*Glo.* Look, how this ring encompasseth thy finger;

Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart;

Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.

And if thy poor devoted servant may

But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,

Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

*Anne.* What is it?

*Glo.* That it may please you leave these sad designs

To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,

And presently repair to Crosby Place;

Where,—after I have solemnly interr'd,

At Chertsey monastery, this noble king,

And wet his grave with my repentant tears,—

I will with all expedient duty see you:

For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,

Grant me this boon.

*Anne.* With all my heart; and much it joys me too

To see you are become so penitent.—

Tressel and Berkley, go along with me.

*Glo.* Bid me farewell.

*Anne.*

'Tis more than you deserve;

But since you teach me how to flatter you,

Imagine I have said farewell already.

[*Exeunt* LADY ANNE, TRESS., and BERK.]

*Glo.* Sirs, take up the corse.

*Gent.*

Towards Chertsey, noble lord?

*Glo.* No, to White-Friars; there attend my coming.

[*Exeunt the rest, with the Corpse.*]

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?

Was ever woman in this humour won?

I'll have her; but I will not keep her long.

What! I, that kill'd her husband and his father,

To take her in her heart's extremest hate;

With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,

The bleeding witness of her hatred by;

Having God, her conscience, and these bars against  
me,

And I no friends to back my suit withal,

But the plain devil and dissembling looks,

And yet to win her,—all the world to nothing!

Ha!

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,

Edward, her lord, whom I, some three months since,  
 Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury?  
 A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,—  
 Fram'd in the prodigality of nature,  
 Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,—  
 The spacious world cannot again afford:  
 And will she yet abase her eyes on me,  
 That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet prince,  
 And made her widow to a woeful bed?  
 On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety?  
 On me, that halt and am misshapen thus?  
 My dukedom to a beggarly denier,  
 I do mistake my person all this while:  
 Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,  
 Myself to be a marvellous proper man.  
 I'll be at charges for a looking-glass;  
 And entertain a score or two of tailors,  
 To study fashions to adorn my body:  
 Since I am crept in favour with myself,  
 I will maintain it with some little cost.  
 But first I'll turn yon fellow in his grave;  
 And then return lamenting to my love.—  
 Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,  
 That I may see my shadow as I pass.

[Exit.

SCENE III.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH, LORD RIVERS, and LORD GREY.

*Riv.* Have patience, madam: there's no doubt his  
 majesty

Will soon recover his accustom'd health.

*Grey.* In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse:  
 Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,  
 And cheer his grace with quick and merry words.

*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide on me?

*Grey.* No other harm but loss of such a lord.

*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all harms.

*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,  
 To be your comforter when he is gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, he is young; and his minority  
 Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloster,  
 A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

*Riv.* Is it concluded he shall be protector?

*Q. Eliz.* It is determin'd, not concluded yet:  
 But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM *and* STANLEY.

*Grey.* Here come the Lords of Buckingham and Stanley.

*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal grace!

*Stan.* God make your majesty joyful as you have been!

*Q. Eliz.* The Countess Richmond, good my Lord of Stanley,

To your good prayer will scarcely say amen.

Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,

And loves not me, be you, good lord, assur'd

I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

*Stan.* I do beseech you, either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers;

Or, if she be accus'd on true report,

Fear with her weakness, which I think proceeds

From wayward sickness, and no grounded malice.

*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my Lord of Stanley?

*Stan.* But now the Duke of Buckingham and I  
Are come from visiting his majesty.

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment, lords?

*Buck.* Madam, good hope; his grace speaks cheerfully.

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! Did you confer with  
him?

*Buck.* Ay, madam: he desires to make atonement

Between the Duke of Gloster and your brothers,

And between them and my lord chamberlain;

And sent to warn them to his royal presence.

*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well!—but that will never be:  
I fear our happiness is at the height.

*Enter* GLOSTER, HASTINGS, *and* DORSET.

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not endure it:—

Who are they that complain unto the king

That I, forsooth, am stern, and love them not?

By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly

That fill his ears with such dissentious rumours.

Because I cannot flatter and speak fair,

Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,

Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,

I must be held a rancorous enemy.

Cannot a plain man live, and think no harm,

But thus his simple truth must be abus'd

By silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?

*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty nor grace.

When have I injur'd thee? when done thee wrong?—

Or thee?—or thee?—or any of your faction?  
 A plague upon you all! His royal grace,—  
 Whom God preserve better than you would wish!—  
 Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing while,  
 But you must trouble him with lewd complaints.

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloster, you mistake the matter.  
 The king, on his own royal disposition,  
 And not provok'd by any suitor else—  
 Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,  
 That in your outward action shows itself  
 Against my children, brothers, and myself—  
 Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather  
 The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.

*Glo.* I cannot tell: the world is grown so bad,  
 That wrens may prey where eagles dare not perch:  
 Since every Jack became a gentleman,  
 There's many a gentle person made a Jack.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning, brother  
 You envy my advancement, and my friends': [Gloster;  
 God grant we never may have need of you!

*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that we have need of you:  
 Our brother is imprison'd by your means,  
 Myself disgrac'd, and the nobility  
 Held in contempt; while great promotions  
 Are daily given to ennoble those  
 That scarce, some two days since, were worth a noble.

*Q. Eliz.* By Him that rais'd me to this careful height  
 From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
 I never did incense his majesty  
 Against the Duke of Clarence, but have been  
 An earnest advocate to plead for him.  
 My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
 Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

*Glo.* You may deny that you were not the mean  
 Of my Lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for,—

*Glo.* She may, Lord Rivers!—why, who knows not so?  
 She may do more, sir, than denying that:  
 She may help you to many fair preferments;  
 And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
 And lay those honours on your high desert.  
 What may she not? She may,—ay, marry, may she,—

*Riv.* What, marry, may she?

*Glo.* What, marry, may she! marry with a king,  
 A bachelor, a handsome stripling too:  
 I wis your grandam had a worser match.

*Q. Eliz.* My Lord of Gloster, I have too long borne  
Your blunt upbraidings and your bitter scoffs:  
By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty  
Of those gross taunts that oft I have endur'd.  
I had rather be a country servant-maid  
Than a great queen, with this condition,—  
To be so baited, scorn'd, and storm'd at.

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET, behind.*

Small joy have I in being England's queen.

*Q. Mar.* And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech Him!  
Thy honour, state, and seat is due to me.

*Glo.* What! threat you me with telling of the king?  
Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said  
I will avouch in presence of the king:  
I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower.

'Tis time to speak,—my pains are quite forgot.

*Q. Mar.* Out, devil! I remember them too well:  
Thou kill'dst my husband Henry in the Tower,  
And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury.

*Glo.* Ere you were queen, ay, or your husband king,  
I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;  
A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,  
A liberal rewarder of his friends:  
To royalize his blood I spilt mine own.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, and much better blood than his or thine.

*Glo.* In all which time you and your husband Grey  
Were factious for the house of Lancaster;—  
And, Rivers, so were you: was not your husband  
In Margaret's battle at Saint Albans slain?  
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,  
What you have been ere this, and what you are;  
Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

*Q. Mar.* A murderous villain, and so still thou art.

*Glo.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father, Warwick;  
Ay, and forswore himself,—which Jesu pardon!—

*Q. Mar.* Which God revenge!

*Glo.* To fight on Edward's party, for the crown;  
And for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up.  
I would to God my heart were flint, like Edward's,  
Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine:  
I am too childish-foolish for this world.

*Q. Mar.* Hie thee to hell for shame, and leave this world,  
Thou cacodemon! there thy kingdom is.

*Riv.* My Lord of Gloster, in those busy days  
Which here you urge to prove us enemies,



We follow'd then our lord, our sovereign king :  
So should we you, if you should be our king.

*Glo.* If I should be!—I had rather be a pedler :  
Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof!

*Q. Eliz.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose  
You should enjoy, were you this country's king,—  
As little joy you may suppose in me,  
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

*Q. Mar.* As little joy enjoys the queen thereof ;  
For I am she, and altogether joyless.

I can no longer hold me patient.— *[Advancing.]*

Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out  
In sharing that which you have pill'd from me!  
Which of you trembles not that looks on me?  
If not that, I being queen, you bow like subjects,  
Yet that, by you depos'd, you quake like rebels?—  
Ah, gentle villain, do not turn away!

*Glo.* Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'st thou in my sight?

*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast marr'd,  
That will I make before I let thee go.

*Glo.* Wert thou not banished on pain of death?

*Q. Mar.* I was; but I do find more pain in banishment  
Than death can yield me here by my abode.

A husband and a son thou ow'st to me,—  
And thou a kingdom,—all of you allegiance :  
This sorrow that I have, by right is yours ;  
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

*Glo.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,  
When thou didst crown his warlike brows with paper,  
And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his eyes ;  
And then, to dry them, gav'st the duke a clout  
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland ;—  
His curses, then from bitterness of soul  
Denounc'd against thee, are all fallen upon thee ;  
And God, not we, hath plagu'd thy bloody deed.

*Q. Eliz.* So just is God, to right the innocent.

*Hast.* O, 'twas the foulest deed to slay that babe,  
And the most merciless that e'er was heard of.

*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.

*Dor.* No man but prophesied revenge for it.

*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.

*Q. Mar.* What, were you snarling all before I came,  
Ready to catch each other by the throat,  
And turn you all your hatred now on me?  
Did York's dread curse prevail so much with heaven  
That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,

Their kingdom's loss, my woeful banishment,  
 Could all but answer for that peevish brat?  
 Can curses pierce the clouds and enter heaven?—  
 Why, then, give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses!—  
 Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,  
 As ours by murder, to make him a king!  
 Edward thy son, that now is Prince of Wales,  
 For Edward my son, that was Prince of Wales,  
 Die in his youth by like untimely violence  
 Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,  
 Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!  
 Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss;  
 And see another, as I see thee now,  
 Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine!  
 Long die thy happy days before thy death;  
 And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,  
 Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!—  
 Rivers and Dorset, you were standers by,—  
 And so wast thou, Lord Hastings,—when my son  
 Was stabb'd with bloody daggers: God, I pray him,  
 That none of you may live your natural age,  
 But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

*Glo.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful wither'd hag.

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee? stay, dog, for thou shalt hear me.

If heaven have any grievous plague in store,  
 Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,  
 O, let them keep it till thy sins be ripe,  
 And then hurl down their indignation  
 On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace!  
 The worm of conscience still be-gnaw thy soul!  
 Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou liv'st,  
 And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!  
 No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,  
 Unless it be while some tormenting dream  
 Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!  
 Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog!  
 Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity  
 The slave of nature and the son of hell!  
 Thou slander of thy heavy mother's womb!  
 Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!  
 Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

*Glo.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard!

*Glo.*

Ha?

*Q. Mar.*

I call thee not.

*Glo.* I cry thee mercy, then; for I did think  
That thou hadst call'd me all those bitter names.

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did; but look'd for no reply.  
O, let me make the period to my curse!

*Glo.* 'Tis done by me, and ends in—Margaret.

*Q. Eliz.* Thus have you breath'd your curse against  
yourself.

*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune!  
Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,  
Whose deadly web ensnaareth thee about?

Fool, fool! thou whett'st a knife to kill thyself.  
The day will come that thou shalt wish for me  
To help thee curse this poisonous bunch-back'd toad.

*Hast.* False-boding woman, end thy frantic curse,  
Lest to thy harm thou move our patience. [mine.]

*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upou you! you have all mov'd

*Riv.* Were you well serv'd, you would be taught your  
duty.

*Q. Mar.* To scerve me well, you all should do me duty,  
Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects:  
O, serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty!

*Dor.* Dispute not with her,—she is lunatic.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquis, you are malapert:  
Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current:

O, that your young nobility could judge

What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!

They that stand high have many blasts to shake them;  
And if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces.

*Glo.* Good counsel, marry:—learn it, learn it, marquis.

*Dor.* It touches you, my lord, as much as me.

*Glo.* Ay, and much more: but I was born so high  
Our aery buildeth in the cedar's top,  
And dallies with the wind, and scorns the sun.

*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade;—alas! alas!—  
Witness my son, now in the shade of death;  
Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy wrath  
Hath in eternal darkness folded up.

Your aery buildeth in our aery's nest:—

O God, that see'st it, do not suffer it;

As it was won with blood, lost be it so!

*Buck.* Peace, peace, for shame, if not for charity.

*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to me:

Uncharitably with me have you dealt,

And shamefully my hopes by you are butcher'd.

My charity is outrage, life my shame,—

And in my shame still live my sorrow's rage!

*Buck.* Have done, have done.

*Q. Mar.* O princely Buckingham, I'll kiss thy hand,  
In sign of league and amity with thee:  
Now fair befall thee and thy noble house!  
Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,  
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

*Buck.* Nor no one here; for curses never pass  
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

*Q. Mar.* I will not think but they ascend the sky,  
And there awake God's gentle sleeping peace.  
O Buckingham, take heed of yonder dog!  
Look, when he fawns he bites; and when he bites,  
His venom tooth will rankle to the death:  
Have not to do with him, beware of him;  
Sin, death, and hell have set their marks on him,  
And all their ministers attend on him.

*Glo.* What doth she say, my Lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious lord.

*Q. Mar.* What, dost thou scorn me for my gentle  
counsel?

And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?

O, but remember this another day,

When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow,

And say, poor Margaret was a prophetess!—

Live each of you the subjects to his hate,

And he to yours, and all of you to God's!

[*Exit.*]

*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.

*Riv.* And so doth mine: I muse why she's at liberty.

*Glo.* I cannot blame her: by God's holy mother,  
She hath had too much wrong; and I repent  
My part thereof that I have done to her.

*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my knowledge.

*Glo.* Yet you have all the vantage of her wrong.  
I was too hot to do somebody good,

That is too cold in thinking of it now.

Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;

He is frank'd up to fattening for his pains;

God pardon them that are the cause thereof!

*Riv.* A virtuous and a Christian-like conclusion,  
To pray for them that have done scathe to us.

*Glo.* So do I ever, being well advis'd;  
For had I curs'd now, I had curs'd myself.

[*Aside.*]

*Enter* CATESBY.

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for you,—  
And for your grace,—and you, my noble lords.

*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, I come.—Lords, will you go with me?

*Riv.* We wait upon your grace. [*Exeunt all but GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.

The secret mischiefs that I set abroad

I lay unto the grievous charge of others.

Clarence,—whom I, indeed, have cast in darkness,—

I do bewweep to many simple gulls;

Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham;

And tell them 'tis the queen and her allies

That stir the king against the duke my brother.

Now, they believe it; and withal whet me

To be reveng'd on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey;

But then I sigh; and, with a piece of Scripture,

Tell them that God bids us do good for evil:

And thus I clothe my naked villany

With odd old ends stol'n forth of holy writ;

And seem a saint when most I play the devil.—

But, soft! here come my executioners.

*Enter two Murderers.*

How now, my hardy, stout-resolved mates!

Are you now going to despatch this thing?

*1 Murd.* We are, my lord, and come to have the warrant,  
That we may be admitted where he is.

*Glo.* Well thought upon;—I have it here about me:

[*Gives the warrant.*]

When you have done, repair to Crosby Place.

But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,

Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;

For Clarence is well-spoken, and perhaps

May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

*1 Murd.* Tut, tut, my lord, we will not stand to prate;

Talkers are no good doers: be assur'd

We go to use our hands, and not our tongues.

*Glo.* Your eyes drop millstones when fools' eyes fall tears:

I like you, lads;—about your business straight;

Go, go, despatch.

*1 Murd.* We will, my noble lord.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *A Room in the Tower.*

*Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.*

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?

*Clar.* O, I have pass'd a miserable night,  
So full of fearful dreams, of ugly sights,

That, as I am a Christian faithful man,  
I would not spend another such a night  
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days,—  
So full of dismal terror was the time!

*Brak.* What was your dream, my lord? I pray you, tell me.

*Clar.* Methought that I had broken from the Tower,  
And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;  
And, in my company, my brother Gloster;  
Who from my cabin tempted me to walk  
Upon the hatches: thence we look'd toward England,  
And cited up a thousand heavy times,  
During the wars of York and Lancaster,  
That had befall'n us. As we pac'd along  
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,  
Methought that Gloster stumbled; and, in falling,  
Struck me, that thought to stay him, overboard  
Into the tumbling billows of the main.  
O Lord! methought, what pain it was to drown!  
What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!  
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!  
Methought I saw a thousand fearful wrecks;  
A thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon;  
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,  
Inestimable stones, unvalu'd jewels,  
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea:  
Some lay in dead men's skulls; and in those holes  
Where eyes did once inhabit there were crept,—  
As 'twere in scorn of eyes,—reflecting gems,  
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,  
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd by.

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of death  
To gaze upon the secrets of the deep?

*Clar.* Methought I had; and often did I strive  
To yield the ghost: but still the envious flood  
Stopp'd in my soul, and would not let it forth  
To find the empty, vast, and wandering air;  
But smother'd it within my panting bulk,  
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

*Brak.* Awak'd you not with this sore agony?

*Clar.* No, no, my dream was lengthen'd after life;  
O, then began the tempest to my soul!  
I pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood  
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,  
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.  
The first that there did greet my stranger soul

Was my great father-in-law, renowned Warwick;  
 Who cried aloud, *What scourge for perjury*  
*Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?*  
 And so he vanish'd: then came wandering by  
 A shadow like an Angel, with bright hair  
 Dabbled in blood; and he shriek'd out aloud,  
*Clarence is come,—false, fleeting, perjur'd Clarence,—*  
*That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury;—*  
*Seize on him, Furies, take him to your torments!*  
 With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends  
 Environ'd me, and howled in mine ears  
 Such hideous cries that, with the very noise,  
 I trembling wak'd, and for a season after  
 Could not believe but that I was in hell,—  
 Such terrible impression made my dream.

*Brak.* No marvel, lord, though it affrighted you;  
 I am afraid, methinks, to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* O Brakenbury, I have done those things,  
 That now give evidence against my soul,  
 For Edward's sake; and see how he requites me!—  
 O God! If my deep prayers cannot appease thee,  
 But thou wilt be aveng'd on my misdeeds,  
 Yet execute thy wrath in me alone,—  
 O, spare my guiltless wife and my poor children!—  
 Keeper, I pry'thee, sit by me awhile;  
 My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

*Brak.* I will, my lord; God give your grace good rest!—

[CLARENCE *reposes himself on a chair.*]

Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,  
 Makes the night morning, and the noontide night.  
 Princes have but their titles for their glories,  
 An outward honour for an inward toil;  
 And, for unfelt imaginations,  
 They often feel a world of restless cares:  
 So that, between their titles and low name,  
 There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the two Murderers.*

1 *Murd.* Ho! who's here? [hither?

*Brak.* What wouldst thou, fellow? and how cam'st thou

1 *Murd.* I would speak with Clarence, and I came  
 hither on my legs.

*Brak.* What, so brief?

2 *Murd.* 'Tis better, sir, than to be tedious.—

Let him see our commission: talk no more.

[A paper is delivered to BRAK., who reads it.]

*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
The noble Duke of Clarence to your hands:—  
I will not reason what is meant hereby,  
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.  
There lies the duke asleep,—and there the keys;  
I'll to the king, and signify to him  
That thus I have resign'd to you my charge.

1 *Murd.* You may, sir; 'tis a point of wisdom: fare you well.

[*Exit BRAKENBURY.*]

2 *Murd.* What, shall we stab him as he sleeps?

1 *Murd.* No; he'll say 'twas done cowardly, when he wakes.

2 *Murd.* When he wakes! why, fool, he shall never wake until the great judgment-day.

1 *Murd.* Why, then he'll say we stabb'd him sleeping.

2 *Murd.* The urging of that word judgment hath bred a kind of remorse in me.

1 *Murd.* What, art thou afraid?

2 *Murd.* Not to kill him, having a warrant for it; but to be damned for killing him, from the which no warrant can defend me.

1 *Murd.* I thought thou hadst been resolute.

2 *Murd.* So I am, to let him live.

1 *Murd.* I'll back to the Duke of Gloster, and tell him so.

2 *Murd.* Nay, I pr'ythee, stay a little: I hope my holy humour will change; it was wont to hold me but while one tells twenty.

1 *Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself now?

2 *Murd.* Faith, some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

1 *Murd.* Remember our reward, when the deed's done.

2 *Murd.* Zounds, he dies: I had forgot the reward.

1 *Murd.* Where's thy conscience now?

2 *Murd.* In the Duke of Gloster's purse.

1 *Murd.* So, when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

2 *Murd.* 'Tis no matter; let it go; there's few or none will entertain it.

1 *Murd.* What if it come to thee again?

2 *Murd.* I'll not meddle with it,—it makes a man a coward; a man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'tis a blushing shame-faced spirit that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of gold that by chance I found; it beggars any man that



keeps it: it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man that means to live well endeavours to trust to himself and live without it.

1 *Murd.* Zounds, it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

2 *Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee but to make thee sigh.

1 *Murd.* I am strong-framed, he cannot prevail with me.

2 *Murd.* Spoke like a tall fellow that respects his reputation. Come, shall we fall to work?

1 *Murd.* Take him on the costard with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the malmsey-butt in the next room.

2 *Murd.* O excellent device! and make a sop of him.

1 *Murd.* Soft! he wakes.

2 *Murd.* Strike!

1 *Murd.* No, we'll reason with him.

*Clar.* Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

1 *Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

1 *Murd.* A man, as you are.

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

1 *Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

1 *Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

*Clar.* How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale?

Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

*Both Murd.* To, to, to—

*Clar.* To murder me?

*Both Murd.* Ay, ay.

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so,  
And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

1 *Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconcil'd to him again.

2 *Murd.* Never, my lord: therefore prepare to die.

*Clar.* Are you drawn forth among a world of men

To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where is the evidence that doth accuse me?

What lawful quest have given their verdict up

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounc'd

The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death?

Before I be convict by course of law,

To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope to have redemption

By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,  
That you depart, and lay no hands on me:  
The deed you undertake is damnable.

1 *Murd.* What we will do, we do upon command.

2 *Murd.* And he that hath commanded is our king.

*Clar.* Erroneous vassals! the great King of kings  
Hath in the table of his law commanded  
That thou shalt do no murder: will you then  
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?  
Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hand,  
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

2 *Murd.* And that same vengeance doth he hurl on thee  
For false forswearing, and for murder too:  
Thou didst receive the sacrament to fight  
In quarrel of the house of Lancaster.

1 *Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name of God,  
Didst break that vow; and with thy treacherous blade  
Unripp'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

2 *Murd.* Whom thou wast sworn to cherish and defend.

1 *Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dreadful law to us,  
When thou hast broke it in such dear degree?

*Clar.* Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?  
For Edward, for my brother, for his sake:  
He sends you not to murder me for this;  
For in that sin he is as deep as I.  
If God will be avenged for the deed,  
O, know you yet, he doth it publicly:  
Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm;  
He needs no indirect nor lawless course  
To cut off those that have offended him.

1 *Murd.* Who made thee, then, a bloody minister  
When gallant-springing brave Plantagenet,  
That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?

*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.

1 *Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy faults  
Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

*Clar.* If you do love my brother, hate not me;  
I am his brother, and I love him well.  
If you are hir'd for meed, go back again,  
And I will send you to my brother Gloster,  
Who shall reward you better for my life  
Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

2 *Murd.* You are deceiv'd, your brother Gloster hates you.

*Clar.* O, no, he loves me, and he holds me dear:  
Go you to him from me.

*Both Murd.* Ay, so we will.

*Clar.* Tell him, when that our princely father York  
Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,  
And charg'd us from his soul to love each other,  
He little thought of this divided friendship:  
Bid Gloster think on this, and he will weep.

*1 Murd.* Ay, millstones; as he lesson'd us to weep.

*Clar.* O, do not slander him, for he is kind.

*1 Murd.* Right as snow in harvest.—Come, you deceive  
'Tis he that sends us to destroy you here. [yourself:

*Clar.* It cannot be; for he bewept my fortune,  
And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with sobs,  
That he would labour my delivery.

*1 Murd.* Why, so he doth, when he delivers you  
From this earth's thralldom to the joys of heaven.

*2 Murd.* Make peace with God, for you must die, my lord.

*Clar.* Have you that holy feeling in your souls,  
To counsel me to make my peace with God,  
And are you yet to your own souls so blind  
That you will war with God by murdering me?—  
O, sirs, consider, they that set you on  
To do this deed will hate you for the deed.

*2 Murd.* What shall we do?

*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.

*1 Murd.* Relent! 'tis cowardly and womanish.

*Clar.* Not to relent is beastly, savage, devilish.  
Which of you, if you were a prince's son,  
Being pent from liberty, as I am now,—  
If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,—  
Would not entreat for life?—

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;  
O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,  
Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,  
As you would beg, were you in my distress:  
A begging prince what beggar pities not?

*2 Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.

*1 Murd.* Take that, and that; if all this will not do,  
[Stabs him.  
I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within. [Exit with body.

*2 Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately despatch'd!  
How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands  
Of this most grievous guilty murder done!

*Re-enter First Murderer.*

*1 Murd.* How now, what mean'st thou, that thou help'st  
me not?

By heaven, the duke shall know how slack you have been.

2 *Murd.* I would he knew that I had sav'd his brother!  
Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say;  
For I repent me that the duke is slain. [*Exit.*

1 *Murd.* So do not I: go, coward as thou art.—  
Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole,  
Till that the duke give order for his burial:  
And when I have my meed, I will away;  
For this will out, and then I must not stay. [*Exit.*

---

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, *led in sick*: QUEEN ELIZABETH,  
DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, *and*  
*others.*

*K. Edw.* Why, so;—now have I done a good day's  
You peers, continue this united league: [*work*:—  
I every day expect an embassy

From my Redeemer, to redeem me hence;  
And now in peace my soul shall part to heaven,  
Since I have made my friends at peace on earth.  
Rivers and Hastings, take each other's hand;  
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.

*Riv.* By heaven, my soul is purg'd from grudging hate;  
And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!

*K. Edw.* Take heed you dally not before your king;  
Lest he that is the supreme King of kings  
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award  
Either of you to be the other's end.

*Hast.* So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!

*Riv.* And I, as I love Hastings with my heart!

*K. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt from this,—  
Nor you, son Dorset,—Buckingham, nor you;—  
You have been factious one against the other.  
Wife, love Lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;  
And what you do, do it unfeignedly.

*Q. Eliz.* There, Hastings; I will never more remember  
Our former hatred, so thrive I and mine!

*K. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him;—Hastings, love lord  
marquis.

*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here protest,  
Upon my part shall be inviolable.

*Hast.* And so swear I. [Embraces DORSET.]

*K. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal thou this league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies,  
And make me happy in your unity.

*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn his hate  
Upon your grace [to the QUEEN], but with all duteous love  
Doth cherish you and yours, God punish me  
With hate in those where I expect most love!  
When I have most need to employ a friend,  
And most assured that he is a friend,  
Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,  
Be he unto me!—this do I beg of heaven  
When I am cold in love to you or yours.

[Embracing RIVERS, &c.]

*K. Edw.* A pleasing cordial, princely Buckingham,  
Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.

There wanteth now our brother Gloster here,  
To make the blessed period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the noble duke.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Good-morrow to my sovereign king and queen;  
And, princely peers, a happy time of day!

*K. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent the day.  
Gloster, we have done deeds of charity;  
Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,  
Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.

*Glo.* A blessed labour, my most sovereign lord.—  
Among this princely heap, if any here,  
By false intelligence or wrong surmise,  
Hold me a foe;

If I unwittingly, or in my rage,  
Have aught committed that is hardly borne  
By any in this presence, I desire

To reconcile me to his friendly peace:

'Tis death to me to be at enmity;

I hate it, and desire all good men's love.—

First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,

Which I will purchase with my duteous service;—

Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,

If ever any grudge were lodg'd between us;—

Of you, and you, Lord Rivers, and of Dorset,

That all without desert have frown'd on me;

Of you, Lord Woodville, and, Lord Scales, of you;—

Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen;—indeed, of all

I do not know that Englishman alive  
 With whom my soul is any jot at odds  
 More than the infant that is born to-night:  
 I thank my God for my humility.

*Q. Eliz.* A holiday shall this be kept hereafter:—  
 I would to God all strifes were well compounded.—  
 My sovereign lord, I do beseech your highness  
 To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glo.* Why, madam, have I offer'd love for this,  
 To be so flouted in this royal presence?  
 Who knows not that the gentle duke is dead?

[*They all start.*]

You do him injury to scorn his corse.

*K. Edw.* Who knows not he is dead! who knows he is?

*Q. Eliz.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is this!

*Buck.* Look I so pale, Lord Dorset, as the rest?

*Dor.* Ay, my good lord; and no man in the presence  
 But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.

*K. Edw.* Is Clarence dead? the order was revers'd.

*Glo.* But he, poor man, by your first order died,  
 And that a winged Mercury did bear;  
 Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,  
 That came too lag to see him buried.  
 God grant that some, less noble and less loyal,  
 Nearer in bloody thoughts, but not in blood,  
 Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,  
 And yet go current from suspicion!

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* A boon, my sovereign, for my service done!

*K. Edw.* I pr'ythee, peace: my soul is full of sorrow.

*Stan.* I will not rise unless your highness hear me.

*K. Edw.* Then say at once what is it thou request'st.

*Stan.* The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's life;  
 Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman  
 Lately attendant on the Duke of Norfolk.

*K. Edw.* Have I a tongue to dooin my brother's death,  
 And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?  
 My brother kill'd no man,—his fault was thought,  
 And yet his punishment was bitter death.  
 Who su'd to me for him? who, in my wrath,  
 Kneel'd at my feet, and bid me be advis'd?  
 Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of love?  
 Who told me how the poor soul did forsake  
 The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?  
 Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury

When Oxford had me down, he rescu'd me,  
 And said, *Dear brother, live, and be a king?*  
 Who told me, when we both lay in the field  
 Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me  
 Even in his garments, and did give himself,  
 All thin and naked, to the numb-cold night?  
 All this from my remembrance british wrath  
 Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you  
 Had so much grace to put it in my mind.  
 But when your carters or your waiting-vassals  
 Have done a drunken slaughter, and defac'd  
 The precious image of our dear Redeemer,  
 You straight are on your knees for pardon, pardon;  
 And I, unjustly too, must grant it you:—  
 But for my brother not a man would speak,—  
 Nor I, ungracious, speak unto myself  
 For him, poor soul. The proudest of you all  
 Have been beholden to him in his life;  
 Yet none of you would once beg for his life.—  
 O God, I fear thy justice will take hold  
 On me, and you, and mine, and yours, for this!  
 Come, Hastings, help me to my closet.  
 Ah, poor Clarence! [*Exeunt* KING, QUEEN, HAST., RIV.,  
 DOR., and GREY.]

*Glo.* This is the fruit of rashness!—Mark'd you not  
 How that the guilty kindred of the queen  
 Look'd pale when they did hear of Clarence' death?  
 O, they did urge it still unto the king!  
 God will revenge it.—Come, lords, will you go  
 To comfort Edward with our company?

*Buck.* We wait upon your grace. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Room in the Palace.*

*Enter the* DUCHESS OF YORK, *with a Son and Daughter*  
*of* CLARENCE.

*Son.* Good grandam, tell us, is our father dead?

*Duch.* No, boy.

*Daugh.* Why do you weep so oft, and beat your breast,  
 And cry, *O Clarence, my unhappy son!*

*Son.* Why do you look on us, and shake your head,  
 And call us orphans, wretches, castaways,  
 If that our noble father be alive?

*Duch.* My pretty cousins, you mistake me both;

I do lament the sickness of the king,  
As loth to lose him, not your father's death;  
It were lost sorrow to wail one that's lost.

*Son.* Then you conclude, my grandam, he is dead.  
The king mine uncle is to blame for this:  
God will revenge it; whom I will importune  
With earnest prayers all to that effect.

*Daugh.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you well:  
Incapable and shallow innocents,  
You cannot guess who caus'd your father's death.

*Son.* Grandam, we can; for my good uncle Gloster  
Told me, the king, provok'd to it by the queen,  
Devis'd impeachments to imprison him:  
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,  
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;  
Bade me rely on him as on my father,  
And he would love me dearly as his child.

*Duch.* Ah, that deceit should steal such gentle shape,  
And with a virtuous visard hide deep vice!  
He is my son; ay, and therein my shame;  
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

*Son.* Think you my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

*Duch.* Ay, boy.

*Son.* I cannot think it.—Hark! what noise is this?

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH, *distractedly*; RIVERS *and*  
DORSET *following her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, who shall hinder me to wail and weep,  
To chide my fortune, and torment myself?  
I'll join with black despair against my soul,  
And to myself become an enemy.

*Duch.* What means this scene of rude impatience?

*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence:—  
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead.—  
Why grow the branches when the root is gone?  
Why wither not the leaves that want their sap?—  
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief,  
That our swift-winged souls may catch the king's;  
Or, like obedient subjects, follow him  
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.

*Duch.* Ah, so much interest have I in thy sorrow  
As I had title in thy noble husband!  
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,  
And liv'd by looking on his images:  
But now two mirrors of his princely semblance



Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death,  
 And I for comfort have but one false glass,  
 That grieves me when I see my shame in him.  
 Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,  
 And hast the comfort of thy children left:  
 But death hath snatch'd my husband from mine arms,  
 And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble hands,—  
 Clarence and Edward. O, what cause have I,—  
 Thine being but a moiety of my moan,—  
 To overgo thy woes and drown thy cries?

*Son.* Ah, aunt, you wept not for our father's death!  
 How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

*Daugh.* Our fatherless distress was left unmoan'd,  
 Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept!

*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation;  
 I am not barren to bring forth complaints:  
 All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,  
 That I, being govern'd by the watery moon,  
 Ah for my husband, for my dear Lord Edward!  
 May send forth plenteous tears to drown the world!

*Chil.* Ah for our father, for our dear Lord Clarence!

*Duch.* Alas for both, both mine, Edward and Clarence!

*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I but Edward? and he's gone.

*Chil.* What stay had we but Clarence? and he's gone.

*Duch.* What stays had I but they? and they are gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow had so dear a loss!

*Chil.* Were never orphans had so dear a loss!

*Duch.* Was never mother had so dear a loss!

Alas, I am the mother of these griefs!  
 Their woes are parcell'd, mine are general.  
 She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;  
 I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:  
 These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I;  
 I for an Edward weep, so do not they:—  
 Alas, you three, on me, threefold distress'd,  
 Pour all your tears! I am your sorrow's nurse,  
 And I will pamper it with lamentation.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother: God is much displeas'd  
 That you take with unthankfulness his doing:  
 In common worldly things 'tis call'd ungrateful,  
 With dull unwillingness to repay a debt  
 Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;  
 Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,  
 For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*R.v.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,  
 Of the young prince your son: send straight for him;

Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives:  
Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,  
And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter* GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS,  
RATCLIFF, *and others.*

*Glo.* Sister, have comfort: all of us have cause  
To wail the dimming of our shining star;  
But none can cure their harms by wailing them.—  
Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy;  
I did not see your grace:—humbly on my knee  
I crave your blessing.

*Duch.* God bless thee; and put meekness in thy breast,  
Love, charity, obedience, and true duty!

*Glo.* Amen; and make me die a good old man!—  
That is the butt end of a mother's blessing;  
I marvel that her grace did leave it out.

[*Aside.*

*Buck.* You cloudy princes and heart-sorrowing peers,  
That bear this heavy mutual load of moan,  
Now cheer each other in each other's love:  
Though we have spent our harvest of this king,  
We are to reap the harvest of his son.  
The broken rancour of your high-swoln hearts,  
But lately splinter'd, knit, and join'd together,  
Must gently be preserv'd, cherish'd, and kept:  
Me seemeth good that, with some little train,  
Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fet  
Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my Lord of Bucking-  
ham?

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude,  
The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out;  
Which would be so much the more dangerous  
By how much the estate is green and yet ungovern'd:  
Where every horse bears his commanding rein,  
And may direct his course as please himself,  
As well the fear of harm as harm apparent,  
In my opinion, ought to be prevented.

*Glo.* I hope the king made peace with all of us;  
And the compact is firm and true in me.

*Riv.* And so in me; and so, I think, in all:  
Yet, since it is but green, it should be put  
To no apparent likelihood of breach,  
Which haply by much company might be urg'd:  
Therefore I say with noble Buckingham,  
That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

*Hast.* And so say I.

*Glo.* Then be it so; and go we to determine  
Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow  
Madam,—and you, my mother,—will you go  
To give your censures in this business?

[*Exeunt all but BUCK. and GLO.*]

*Buck.* My lord, whoever journeys to the prince,  
For God's sake, let not us two stay at home;  
For by the way I'll sort occasion,  
As index to the story we late talk'd of,  
To part the queen's proud kindred from the prince.

*Glo.* My other self, my counsel's consistory,  
My oracle, my prophet!—my dear cousin,  
I, as a child, will go by thy direction.  
Toward Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. *A Street.*

*Enter two Citizens, meeting.*

1 *Cit.* Good-morrow, neighbour: whither away so fast?

2 *Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know myself:  
Hear you the news abroad?

1 *Cit.* Yes,—that the king is dead.

2 *Cit.* Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better:  
I fear, I fear 'twill prove a giddy world.

*Enter a third Citizen.*

3 *Cit.* Neighbours, God speed!

1 *Cit.* Give you good-morrow, sir.

3 *Cit.* Doth the news hold of good King Edward's death?

2 *Cit.* Ay, sir, it is too true; God help, the while!

3 *Cit.* Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.

1 *Cit.* No, no; by God's good grace his son shall reign.

3 *Cit.* Woe to that land that's govern'd by a child!

2 *Cit.* In him there is a hope of government,  
Which, in his nonage, council under him,  
And, in his full and ripen'd years, himself,  
No doubt, shall then, and till then, govern well.

1 *Cit.* So stood the state when Henry the Sixth  
Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

3 *Cit.* Stood the state so? No, no, good friends, God wot;  
For then this land was famously enrich'd  
With politic grave counsel; then the king  
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

1 *Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by his father and mother.

3 *Cit.* Better it were they all came by his father,  
Or by his father there were none at all;  
For emulation now, who shall be nearest,  
Will touch us all too near if God prevent not.  
O, full of danger is the Duke of Gloster!  
And the queen's sons and brothers haught and proud:  
And were they to be rul'd, and not to rule,  
This sickly land might solace as before.

1 *Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worst; all will be well.

3 *Cit.* When clouds are seen, wise men put on their  
When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand; [cloaks;  
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?  
Untimely storms make men expect a dearth.  
All may be well; but, if God sort it so,  
'Tis more than we deserve or I expect.

2 *Cit.* Truly, the hearts of men are full of fear:  
You cannot reason almost with a man  
That looks not heavily and full of dread.

3 *Cit.* Before the days of change, still is it so:  
By a divine instinct men's minds mistrust  
Ensuing danger; as, by proof, we see  
The water swell before a boisterous storm.  
But leave it all to God.—Whither away?

2 *Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the justices.

3 *Cit.* And so was I: I'll bear you company. [Exeunt.

---

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, the young DUKE OF YORK,  
QUEEN ELIZABETH, and the DUCHESS OF YORK.*

*Arch.* Last night, I hear, they at Northampton lay;  
At Stony-Stratford will they be to-night:  
To-morrow or next day they will be here.

*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the prince:  
I hope he is much grown since last I saw him.

*Q. Eliz.* But I hear no, they say my son of York  
Has almost overta'en him in his growth.

*York.* Ay, mother; but I would not have it so.

*Duch.* Why, my young cousin? it is good to grow.

*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper,  
My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow  
More than my brother: *Ay*, quoth my uncle Gloster,  
*Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace:*  
And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,  
Because sweet flowers are slow, and weeds make haste.







H. COOPER 1872

KING RICHARD II





*Duch.* Good faith, good faith, the saying did not hold  
In him that did object the same to thee:

He was the wretched'st thing when he was young.

So long a growing, and so leisurely,  
That, if his rule were true, he should be gracious.

*Arch.* And so no doubt he is, my gracious madam.

*Duch.* I hope he is; but yet let mothers doubt.

*York.* Now, by my troth, if I had been remember'd,  
I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,  
To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd mine.

*Duch.* How, my young York? I pry'thee, let me hear it.

*York.* Marry, they say my uncle grew so fast

That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old:

'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.

Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.

*Duch.* I pry'thee, pretty York, who told thee this?

*York.* Grandam, his nurse.

*Duch.* His nurse! why, she was dead ere thou wast born.

*York.* If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who told me.

*Q. Eliz.* A parlous boy:—go to, you are too shrewd.

*Arch.* Good madam, be not angry with the child.

*Q. Eliz.* Pitchers have ears.

*Arch.* Here comes a messenger.

*Enter a Messenger.*

What news?

*Mess.* Such news, my lord, as grieves me to report.

*Q. Eliz.* How doth the prince?

*Mess.* Well, madam, and in health.

*Duch.* What is thy news?

*Mess.* Lord Rivers and Lord Grey are sent to Pomfret,  
With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.

*Duch.* Who hath committed them?

*Mess.* The mighty dukes  
Gloster and Buckingham.

*Q. Eliz.* For what offence?

*Mess.* The sum of all I can, I have disclos'd;  
Why or for what the nobles were committed  
Is ail unknown to me, my gracious lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah me, I see the ruin of my house!  
The tiger now hath seiz'd the gentle hind;  
Insulting tyranny begins to jet

Upon the innocent and awless throne:—  
Welcome, destruction, blood, and massacre!

I see, as in a map, the end of all.

*Duch.* Accurs'd and unquiet wrangling days!

How many of you have mine eyes beheld?  
 My husband lost his life to get the crown;  
 And often up and down my sons were toss'd,  
 For me to joy and weep their gain and loss:  
 And being seated, and domestic broils  
 Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,  
 Make war upon themselves; brother to brother,  
 Blood to blood, self against self:—O, preposterous  
 And frantic outrage, end thy damned spleen;  
 Or let me die, to look on death no more!

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, my boy; we will to sanctuary.--  
 Madam, farewell.

*Duch.* Stay, I will go with you.

*Q. Eliz.* You have no cause.

*Arch.*

My gracious lady, go.

[*To the QUEEN.*]

And thither bear your treasure and your goods.

For my part, I'll resign unto your grace

The seal I keep; and so betide to me

As well I tender you and all of yours!

Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Street.*

*The trumpets sound. Enter the PRINCE OF WALES, GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, CATESBY, CARDINAL BOUCHIER, and others.*

*Buck.* Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to your chamber.

*Glo.* Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts' sovereign:  
 The weary way hath made you melancholy.

*Prince.* No, uncle; but our crosses on the way  
 Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:  
 I want more uncles here to welcome me.

*Glo.* Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years  
 Hath not yet div'd into the world's deceit:  
 No more can you distinguish of a man  
 Than of his outward show; which, God he knows,  
 Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart.  
 Those uncles which you want were dangerous;  
 Your grace attended to their sugar'd words,  
 But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:  
 God keep you from them, and from such false friends!

*Prince.* God keep me from false friends! but they were none.

*Glo.* My lord, the mayor of London comes to greet you.

*Enter the Lord Mayor and his Train.*

*May.* God bless your grace with health and happy days!

*Prince.* I thank you, good my lord;—and thank you all.  
[*Exeunt Mayor, &c.*]

I thought my mother and my brother York  
Would long ere this have met us on the way:  
Fie, what a slug is Hastings, that he comes not  
To tell us whether they will come or no!

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the sweating lord.

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Prince.* Welcome, my lord: what, will our mother come?

*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, not I,  
The queen your mother and your brother York  
Have taken sanctuary: the tender prince  
Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,  
But by his mother was perforce withheld.

*Buck.* Fie, what an indirect and peevish course  
Is this of hers?—Lord cardinal, will your grace  
Persuade the queen to send the Duke of York  
Unto his princely brother presently?  
If she deny, Lord Hastings, go with him,  
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

*Card.* My Lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory  
Can from his mother win the Duke of York,  
Anon expect him here; but if she be obdurate  
To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid  
We should infringe the holy privilege  
Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land  
Would I be guilty of so great a sin.

*Luck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,  
Too ceremonious and traditional:  
Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,  
You break not sanctuary in seizing him.  
The benefit thereof is always granted  
To those whose dealings have deserv'd the place,  
And those who have the wit to claim the place:  
This prince hath neither claim'd it nor deserv'd it;  
And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it:  
Then, taking him from hence that is not there,  
You break no privilege nor charter there.

Oft have I heard of sanctuary-men ;  
But sanctuary-children ne'er till now.

*Card.* My lord, you shall o'errule my mind for once.—  
Come on, Lord Hastings, will you go with me?

*Hast.* I go, my lord.

*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.

[*Exeunt CAR. and HAST.*]

Say, uncle Gloster, if our brother come,  
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?

*Glo.* Where it seems best unto your royal self.  
If I may counsel you, some day or two  
Your highness shall repose you at the Tower:  
Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit  
For your best health and recreation.

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any place.—  
Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord?

*Glo.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place;  
Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

*Prince.* Is it upon record, or else reported  
Successively from age to age, he built it?

*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.

*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not register'd,  
Methinks the truth should live from age to age,  
As 'twere retail'd to all posterity,  
Even to the general all-ending day.

*Glo.* So wise so young, they say, do never live long.

[*Aside.*]

*Prince.* What say you, uncle?

*Glo.* I say, without characters, fame lives long.—  
Thus, like the formal vice, Iniquity,  
I moralize two meanings in one word.

[*Aside.*]

*Prince.* That Julius Cæsar was a famous man;  
With what his valour did enrich his wit,  
His wit set down to make his valour live:  
Death makes no conquest of this conqueror;  
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.—  
I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham,—

*Buck.* What, my gracious lord?

*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man,  
I'll win our ancient right in France again,  
Or die a soldier, as I liv'd a king.

*Glo.* Short summers lightly have a forward spring. [*Aside.*]

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the Duke of York.

*Enter YORK, HASTINGS, and the CARDINAL.*

*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?

*York.* Well, my dread lord ; so must I call you now.

*Prince.* Ay, brother,—to our grief, as it is yours :

Too late he died that might have kept that title,  
Which by his death hath lost much majesty.

*Glo.* How fares our cousin, noble Lord of York?

*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my lord,  
You said that idle weeds are fast in growth :  
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

*Glo.* He hath, my lord.

*York.* And therefore is he idle?

*Glo.* O, my fair cousin, I must not say so.

*York.* Then is he more beholding to you than I.

*Glo.* He may command me as my sovereign ;

But you have power in me as in a kinsman.

*York.* I pray you, uncle, give me this dagger.

*Glo.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.

*Prince.* A beggar, brother?

*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will give ;  
And being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

*Glo.* A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin.

*York.* A greater gift! O, that's the sword to it.

*Glo.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.

*York.* O then, I see, you will part but with light gifts ;  
In weightier things you'll say a beggar nay.

*Glo.* It is too weighty for your grace to wear.

*York.* I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.

*Glo.* What, would you have my weapon, little lord?

*York.* I would, that I might thank you as you call me.

*Glo.* How?

*York.* Little.

*Prince.* My Lord of York will still be cross in talk :—  
Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.

*York.* You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me :—  
Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me ;

Because that I am little, like an ape,  
He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.

*Buck.* With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons!  
To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,

He prettily and aptly taunts himself :

So cunning and so young is wonderful.

*Glo.* My gracious lord, wil't please to pass along?

Myself and my good cousin Buckingham

Will to your mother, to entreat of her

To meet you at the Tower, and welcome you.

*York.* What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord?

*Prince.* My lord protector needs will have it so.

*York.* I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

*Glo.* Why, what should you fear?

*York.* Marry, my uncle Clarence' angry ghost:  
My grandam told me he was murder'd there.

*Prince.* I fear no uncles dead.

*Glo.* Nor none that live, I hope.

*Prince.* An if they live, I hope I need not fear.  
But come, my lord; and with a heavy heart,  
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[*Sennet. Eceunt* PRINCE, YORK, HAST.,  
CAR., and Attendants.

*Buck.* Think you, my lord, this little prating York  
Was not incensed by his subtle mother  
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt: O, 'tis a parlous boy;  
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable:  
He is all the mother's, from the top to toe.

*Buck.* Well, let them rest.—Come hither, Catesby.  
Thou art sworn as deeply to effect what we intead  
As closely to conceal what we impart:  
Thou know'st our reasons urg'd upon the way;—  
What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter  
To make William Lord Hastings of our mind,  
For the instalment of this noble duke  
In the seat royal of this famous isle?

*Cate.* He for his father's sake so loves the prince  
That he will not be won to aught against him.

*Buck.* What think'st thou then of Stanley? will not he?

*Cate.* He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

*Buck.* Well, then, no more but this: go, gentle Catesby,  
And, as it were far off, sound thou Lord Hastings  
How he doth stand affected to our purpose;  
And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,  
To sit about the corenation.

If thou dost find him tractable to us,  
Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons:  
If he be leaden, icy, cold, unwilling,  
Be thou so too; and so break off the talk,  
And give us notice of his inclination:  
For we to-morrow hold divided councils.  
Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd.

*Glo.* Commend me to Lord William: tell him, Catesby,  
His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries  
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret Castle;  
And bid my lord, for joy of this good news,  
Give Mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

*Buck.* Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.

*Cate.* My good lords both, with all the heed I can.

*Glo.* Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep?

*Cate.* You shall, my lord.

*Glo.* At Crosby Place, there shall you find us both.

[*Exit* CATESBY.]

*Buck.* Now, my lord, what shall we do if we perceive Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?

*Glo.* Chop off his head, man;—somewhat we will do:—  
And look, when I am king, claim thou of me  
The earldom of Hereford, and all the movables  
Whereof the king my brother was possess'd.

*Buck.* I'll claim that promise at your grace's hand.

*Glo.* And look to have it yielded with all kindness.  
Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards  
We may digest our complots in some form.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Before* LORD HASTINGS' House.

*Enter* a Messenger.

*Mess.* My lord, my lord!—

[*Knocking.*]

*Hast.* [*within.*] Who knocks?

*Mess.* One from the Lord Stanley.

*Hast.* [*within.*] What is't o'clock?

*Mess.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Enter* HASTINGS.

*Hast.* Cannot my Lord Stanley sleep these tedious nights?

*Mess.* So it appears by that I have to say.

First, he commends him to your noble self.

*Hast.* What then?

*Mess.* Then certifies your lordship that this night  
He dreamt the boar had razed off his helm;  
Besides, he says there are two councils held;  
And that may be determin'd at the one  
Which may make you and him to rue at the other.  
Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure,—  
If you will presently take horse with him,  
And with all speed post with him toward the north,  
To shun the danger that his soul divines.

*Hast.* Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord;  
Bid him not fear the separated councils:  
His honour and myself are at the one,  
And at the other is my good friend Catesby;  
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us

Whereof I shall not have intelligence.  
 Tell him his fears are shallow, without instance:  
 And for his dreams, I wonder he's so simple  
 To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers:  
 To fly the boar before the boar pursues,  
 Were to incense the boar to follow us,  
 And make pursuit where he did mean no chase.  
 Go, bid thy master rise and come to me;  
 And we will both together to the Tower,  
 Where, he shall see, the boar will use us kindly.

*Mess.* I'll go, my lord, and tell him what you say. [*Exit.*]

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Many good-morrows to my noble lord!

*Hast.* Good-morrow, Catesby; you are early stirring:  
 What news, what news, in this our tottering state?

*Cate.* It is a reeling world indeed, my lord;  
 And I believe will never stand upright  
 Till Richard wear the garland of the realm.

*Hast.* How! wear the garland! dost thou mean the  
 crown?

*Cate.* Ay, my good lord.

*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders  
 Before I'll see the crown so foul misplac'd.  
 But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?

*Cate.* Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you forward  
 Upon his party for the gain thereof:  
 And thereupon he sends you this good news,—  
 That this same very day your enemies,  
 The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.

*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,  
 Because they have been still my adversaries:  
 But that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,  
 To bar my master's heirs in true descent,  
 God knows I will not do it to the death.

*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious mind!

*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelve-month hence,—  
 That they who brought me in my master's hate,  
 I live to look upon their tragedy.  
 Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older,  
 I'll send some packing that yet think not on't.

*Cate.* 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,  
 When men are unprepar'd, and look not for it.

*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out  
 With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey: and so 'twill do  
 With some men else that think themselves as safe



As thou and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear  
To princely Richard and to Buckingham.

*Cate.* The princes both make high account of you,—  
For they account his head upon the bridge. [*Aside.*

*Hast.* I know they do; and I have well deserv'd it.

*Enter STANLEY.*

Come on, come on; where is your boar-spear, man?  
Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided?

*Stan.* My lord, good-morrow; and good-morrow, Catesby:—

You may jest on, but, by the holy rood,  
I do not like these several councils, I.

*Hast.* My lord, I hold my life as dear as you do yours;  
And never in my days, I do protest,  
Was it more precious to me than 'tis now:  
Think you, but that I know our state secure,  
I would be so triumphant as I am?

*Stan.* The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from  
London,

Were jocund, and suppos'd their states were sure,—  
And they, indeed, had no cause to mistrust;  
But yet, you see, how soon the day o'ercast!  
This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt;  
Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward!  
What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent.

*Hast.* Come, come, have with you.—Wot you what, my  
lord?

To-day the lords you talk of are beheaded.

*Stan.* They, for their truth, might better wear their  
heads

'Than some that have accus'd them wear their hats.—  
But come, my lord, let's away.

*Enter a Pursuivant.*

*Hast.* Go on before; I'll talk with this good fellow.

[*Exeunt STANLEY and CATESBY.*

How now, sirrah! how goes the world with thee?

*Purs.* The better that your lordship please to ask.

*Hast.* I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me now  
Than when thou mett'st me last where now we meet:  
Then was I going prisoner to the Tower,  
By the suggestion of the queen's allies;  
But now, I tell thee,—keep it to thyself,—  
This day those enemies are put to death,  
And I in better state than e'er I was.

*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good content!

*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow: there, drink that for me.

[*Throwing him his purse.*

*Purs.* I thank your honour.

[*Exit.*

*Enter a Priest.*

*Pr.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour.

*Hast.* I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart.

I am in your debt for your last exercise;

Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain!

Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest;

Your honour hath no shriving-work in hand.

*Hast.* Good faith, and when I met this holy man,

The men you talk of came into my mind. —

What, go you toward the Tower?

*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I cannot stay there:

I shall return before your lordship thence.

*Hast.* Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.

*Buck.* And supper too, although thou know'st it not.

[*Aside.*

Come, will you go?

*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—POMFRET. *Before the Castle.*

*Enter RATCLIFF, with a Guard, conducting RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN to execution.*

*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this,—

To-day shalt thou behold a subject die

For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

*Grey.* God bless the prince from all the pack of you!

A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.

*Vaugh.* You live that shall cry woe for this hereafter.

*Rat.* Despatch; the limit of your lives is out.

*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody prison,

Fatal and ominous to noble peers!

Within the guilty closure of thy walls

Richard the Second here was hack'd to death:

And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,

We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink.

*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon our heads,

When she exclaim'd on Hastings, you, and I,  
For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son.

*Riv.* Then curs'd she Richard, then curs'd she Buckingham—  
Then curs'd she Hastings:—O, remember, God, [I am,  
To hear her prayer for them, as now for us!

And for my sister and her princely sons,  
Be satisfied, dear God, with our true blood,  
Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spilt!

*Rat.* Make haste; the hour of death is expiate.

*Riv.* Come, Grey,—come, Vaughan,—let us here embrace:  
Farewell, until we meet again in heaven. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *A Room in the Tower.*

BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, *the* BISHOP OF ELY,  
RATCLIFF, LOVEL, *and others, sitting at a table:* Officers  
of the Council attending.

*Hast.* Now, noble peers, the cause why we are met  
Is to determine of the coronation.

In God's name, speak,—when is the royal day?

*Buck.* Are all things ready for that royal time?

*Stan.* They are; and wants but nomination.

*Ely.* To-morrow, then, I judge a happy day.

*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?  
Who is most inward with the noble duke?

*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his  
mind.

*Buck.* We know each other's faces: for our hearts,  
He knows no more of mine than I of yours;  
Nor I of his, my lord, than you of mine.—  
Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;  
But for his purpose in the coronation  
I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd  
His gracious pleasure any way therein:  
But you, my noble lords, may name the time;  
And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,  
Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part.

*Ely.* In happy time, here comes the duke himself.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* My noble lords and cousins all, good-morrow.  
I have been long a sleeper; but I trust  
My absence doth neglect no great design  
Which by my presence might have been concluded.

*Buck.* Had you not come upon your cue, my lord,  
William Lord Hastings had pronounc'd your part,—  
I mean, your voice,—for crowning of the king.

*Glo.* Than my Lord Hastings no man might be bolder;  
His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.—  
My Lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn  
I saw good strawberries in your garden there:  
I do beseech you send for some of them.

*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. [*Exit.*]

*Glo.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.

[*Takes him aside.*]

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,  
And finds the testy gentleman so hot  
That he will lose his head ere give consent  
His master's child, as worshipfully he terms it,  
Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

*Buck.* Withdraw yourself awhile; I'll go with you.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Stan.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph  
To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden;  
For I myself am not so well provided  
As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

*Re-enter BISHOP OF ELY.*

*Ely.* Where is my lord the Duke of Gloster!  
I have sent for these strawberries.

*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth this morning;  
There's some conceit or other likes him well  
When that he bids good-morrow with such spirit.  
I think there's ne'er a man in Christendom  
Can lesser hide his love or hate than he;  
For by his face straight shall you know his heart.

*Stan.* What of his heart perceive you in his face  
By any livelihood he showed to-day?

*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended;  
For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

*Re-enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*

*Glo.* I pray you all, tell me what they deserve  
That do conspire my death with devilish plots  
Of damned witchcraft, and that have prevail'd  
Upon my body with their hellish charms?

*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,  
Makes me most forward in this princely presence  
To doom the offenders: whosoe'er they be,  
I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

*Glo.* Then be your eyes the witness of their evil:  
 Look how I am bewitch'd; behold, mine arm  
 Is, like a blasted sapling, wither'd up:  
 And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,  
 Consorted with that harlot-strumpet Shore,  
 That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

*Hast.* If they have done this deed, my noble lord,—

*Glo.* If! thou protector of this damned strumpet,  
 Talk'st thou to me of *i/s?*—Thou art a traitor:—  
 Off with his head!—now, by Saint Paul I swear,  
 I will not dine until I see the same.—  
 Lovel and Ratcliff:—look that it be done:—  
 The rest, that love me, rise and follow me.

[*Exeunt all except HAST., LOV., and RATCLIFF.*]

*Hast.* Woe, woe, for England! not a whit for me;  
 For I, too fond, might have prevented this.  
 Stanley did dream the boar did raze his helm;  
 And I did scorn it, and disdain to fly.  
 Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,  
 And started, when he look'd upon the Tower,  
 As loth to bear me to the slaughter-house.  
 O, now I need the priest that spake to me:  
 I now repent I told the pursuivant,  
 As too triumphing, how mine enemies  
 To-day at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd,  
 And I myself secure in grace and favour.  
 O, Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse  
 Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head.

*Rat.* Come, come, despatch; the duke would be at  
 dinner:

Make a short shrift; he longs to see your head.

*Hast.* O momentary grace of mortal men,  
 Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!  
 Who builds his hope in air of your good looks,  
 Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,  
 Ready, with every nod, to tumble down  
 Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*Lov.* Come, come, despatch; 'tis bootless to exclaim.

*Hast.* O bloody Richard!—miserable England!  
 I prophesy the fearfull'st time to thee  
 That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.—  
 Come, lead me to the block; bear him my head:  
 They smile at me who shortly shall be dead.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—LONDON. *The Tower Walls.*

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM in rusty armour,  
marvellous ill-favoured.*

*Glo.* Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour,

Murder thy breath in middle of a word,  
And then again begin, and stop again,  
As if thou wert distraught and mad with terror?

*Buck.* Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian;  
Speak and look back, and pry on every side,  
Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,  
Intending deep suspicion: ghastly looks  
Are at my service, like enforced smiles;  
And both are ready in their offices,  
At any time, to grace my stratagems.

But what, is Catesby gone?

*Glo.* He is; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

*Enter the Lord Mayor and CATESBY.*

*Buck.* Lord mayor,—

*Glo.* Look to the drawbridge there!

*Buck.* Hark! a drum.

*Glo.* Catesby, o'erlook the walls.

*Buck.* Lord Mayor, the reason we have sent,—

*Glo.* Look back, defend thee,—here are enemies.

*Buck.* God and our innocency defend and guard us!

*Glo.* Be patient, they are friends,—Ratcliff and Lovel.

*Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS' head.*

*Lov.* Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,  
The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

*Glo.* So dear I lov'd the man that I must weep.

I took him for the plainest harmless creature

That breath'd upon the earth a Christian;

Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded

The history of all her secret thoughts:

So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue

That, his apparent open guilt omitted,—

I mean, his conversation with Shore's wife,—

He liv'd from all attainder of suspect.

*Buck.* Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd traitor  
That ever liv'd.—

Would you imagine, or almost believe,—

Were't not that by great preservation

We live to tell it you,—the subtle traitor  
This day had plotted, in the council-house,  
To murder me and my good Lord of Gloster!

*May.* Had he done so?

*Glo.* What! think you we are Turks or Infidels?  
Or that we would, against the form of law,  
Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death,  
But that the extreme peril of the case,  
The peace of England and our persons' safety,  
Enforc'd us to this execution?

*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserv'd his death;  
And your good graces both have well proceeded,  
To warn false traitors from the like attempts.  
I never look'd for better at his hands  
After he once fell in with Mistress Shore.

*Buck.* Yet had we not determin'd he should die  
Until your lordship came to see his end;  
Which now the loving haste of these our friends,  
Something against our meaning, hath prevented:  
Because, my lord, we would have had you heard  
The traitor speak, and timorously confess  
The manner and the purpose of his treasons;  
That you might well have signified the same  
Unto the citizens, who haply may  
Misconstrue us in him, and wail his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's word shall serve  
As well as I had seen, and heard him speak:  
And do not doubt, right noble princes both,  
But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens  
With all your just proceedings in this case.

*Glo.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,  
To avoid the censures of the carping world.

*Buck.* But since you come too late of our intent,  
Yet witness what you hear we did intend:  
And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell.

[Exit Lord Mayor.]

*Glo.* Go, after, after, cousin Buckingham.  
The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all post:—  
There, at your meetest vantage of the time,  
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children:  
Tell them how Edward put to death a citizen,  
Only for saying he would make his son  
Heir to the crown; meaning, indeed, his house,  
Which, by the sign thereof, was termed so.  
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,  
And bestial appetite in change of lust;

Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters, wives,  
 Even where his raging eye or savage heart,  
 Without control, listed to make a prey.  
 Nay, for a need, thus far come near my person :—  
 Tell them, when that my mother went with child  
 Of that insatiate Edward, noble York,  
 My princely father, then had wars in France;  
 And, by true computation of the time,  
 Found that the issue was not his begot;  
 Which well appeared in his lineaments,  
 Being nothing like the noble duke my father:  
 Yet touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off;  
 Because, my lord, you know my mother lives.

*Buck.* Doubt not, my lord, I'll play the orator.  
 As if the golden plea for which I plead  
 Were for myself: and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glo.* If you thrive well, bring them to Baynard's Castle;  
 Where you shall find me well accompanied  
 With reverend fathers and well learned bishops.

*Buck.* I go; and towards three or four o'clock  
 Look for the news that the Guildhall affords. [*Exit.*]

*Glo.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to Doctor Shaw.—  
 Go thou [*to CATE.*] to Friar Penker;—bid them both  
 Meet me within this hour at Baynard's Castle.

[*Exeunt LOV. and CATE.*]

Now will I in, to take some privy order  
 To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;  
 And to give notice that no manner of person  
 Have any time recourse unto the princes. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI.—LONDON. *A Street.*

*Enter a Scrivener.*

*Scriv.* Here is the indictment of the good Lord Hastings;  
 Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,  
 That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.  
 And mark how well the sequel hangs together :—  
 Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
 For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me;  
 The precedent was full as long a-doing:  
 And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,  
 Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.  
 Here's a good world the while! Who is so gross  
 That cannot see this palpable device!  
 Yet who so bold but says he sees it not!



Bad is the world; and all will come to naught  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE VII.—LONDON. *Court of Baynard's Castle.*

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, meeting.*

*Glo.* How now, how now! what say the citizens?

*Buck.* Now, by the holy mother of our Lord,  
The citizens are mum, say not a word.

*Glo.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's children?

*Buck.* I did; with his contract with Lady Lucy,  
And his contract by deputy in France;  
The insatiate greediness of his desires,  
And his enforcement of the city wives;  
His tyranny for trifles; his own bastardy,—  
As being got, your father then in France,  
And his resemblance, being not like the duke:  
Withal I did infer your lineaments,—  
Being the right idea of your father,  
Both in your form and nobleness of mind;  
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,  
Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,  
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility;  
Indeed, left nothing fitting for your purpose  
Untouch'd or slightly handled in discourse:  
And when my oratory drew toward end  
I bid them that did love their country's good  
Cry, *God save Richard, England's royal king!*

*Glo.* And did they so?

*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not a word,  
But, like dumb statuas or breathing stones,  
Star'd each on other, and look'd deadly pale.  
Which when I saw, I reprehended them;  
And ask'd the mayor what meant this wilful silence:  
His answer was,—the people were not us'd  
To be spoke to but by the recorder.  
Then he was urg'd to tell my tale again,—  
*Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke inferr'd;*  
But nothing spoke in warrant from himself.  
When he had done, some followers of mine own,  
At lower end of the hall, hurl'd up their caps,  
And some ten voices cried, *God save King Richard!*  
And thus I took the vantage of those few,—  
*Thanks, gentle citizens and friends, quoth I;*  
*This general applause and cheerful shout*

*Argues your wisdom and your love to Richard:*

And even here brake off and came away.

*Glo.* What tongueless blocks were they! would they not speak?

Will not the mayor, then, and his brethren, come?

*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand. Intend some fear;

Be not you spoke with but by mighty suit:

And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,

And stand between two churchmen, good my lord;

For on that ground I'll make a holy descant:

And be not easily won to our requests;

Play the maid's part,—still answer nay, and take it.

*G'o.* I go; and if you plead as well for them

As I can say nay to thee for myself,

No doubt we bring it to a happy issue.

*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads; the lord mayor knocks.

[*Exit* GLOSTER.]

*Enter the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord: I dance attendance here;

I think the duke will not be spoke withal.

*Enter, from the Castle, CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby,—what says your lord to my request?

*Cate.* He doth entreat your grace, my noble lord,

To visit him to-morrow or next day:

He is within, with two right reverend fathers,

Divinely bent to meditation:

And in no worldly suit would he be mov'd,

To draw him from his holy exercise.

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to the gracious duke;

Tell him, myself, the mayor and aldermen,

In deep designs, in matter of great moment,

No less importing than our general good,

Are come to have some conference with his grace.

*Cate.* I'll signify so much unto him straight. [*Exit.*]

*Buck.* Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an Edward!

He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed,

But on his knees at meditation;

Not dallying with a brace of courtezans,

But meditating with two deep divines;

Not sleeping, to engross his idle body,

But praying, to enrich his watchful soul:

Happy were England would this virtuous prince

Take on himself the sovereignty thereof:

But, sure, I fear, we shall not win him to it.

*May.* Marry, God defend his grace should say us nay!

*Buck.* I fear he will. Here Catesby comes again.

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby, what says his grace?

*Cate.* He wonders to what end you have assembled  
Such troops of citizens to come to him:  
His grace not being warn'd thereof before,  
He fears, my lord, you mean no good to him.

*Buck.* Sorry I am my noble cousin should  
Suspect me, that I mean no good to him:  
By heaven, we come to him in perfect love;  
And so once more return and tell his grace. [*Exit CATESBY.*]  
When holy and devout religious men  
Are at their beads, 'tis much to draw them thence,—  
So sweet is zealous contemplation.

*Enter GLOSTER, in a Gallery above, between two Bishops.*  
*CATESBY returns.*

*May.* See, where his grace stands 'tween two clergymen.

*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,  
To stay him from the fall of vanity:  
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand,—  
True ornament to know a holy man.—  
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,  
Lend favourable ear to our requests;  
And pardon us the interruption  
Of thy devotion and right Christian zeal.

*Glo.* My lord, there needs no such apology:  
I rather do beseech you pardon me,  
Who, earnest in the service of my God,  
Deferr'd the visitation of my friends.  
But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?

*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above,  
And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

*Glo.* I do suspect I have done some offence  
That seems disgracious in the city's eye;  
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

*Buck.* You have, my lord: would it might please your  
grace,  
On our entreaties, to amend your fault!

*Glo.* Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land?

*Buck.* Know, then, it is your fault that you resign  
The supreme seat, the throne majestical,  
The scepter'd office of your ancestors,  
Your state of fortune and your due of birth,

The lineal glory of your royal house,  
 To the corruption of a blemish'd stock :  
 Whilst, in the mildness of your sleepy thoughts,—  
 Which here we waken to our country's good,—  
 This noble isle doth want her proper limbs ;  
 Her face defac'd with scars of infamy,  
 Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,  
 And almost shoulder'd in the swallowing gulf  
 Of dark forgetfulness and deep oblivion.  
 Which to recure, we heartily solicit  
 Your gracious self to take on you the charge  
 And kingly government of this your land ;—  
 Not as protector, steward, substitute,  
 Or lowly factor for another's gain ;  
 But as successively, from blood to blood,  
 Your right of birth, your empery, your own.  
 For this, consorted with the citizens  
 Your very worshipful and loving friends,  
 And, by their vehement instigation,  
 In this just suit come I to move your grace.

*Glo.* I cannot tell if to depart in silence  
 Or bitterly to speak in your reproof  
 Best fitteth my degree or your condition :  
 If not to answer, you might haply think  
 Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded  
 To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,  
 Which fondly you would here impose on me ;  
 If to reprove you for this suit of yours,  
 So season'd with your faithful love to me,  
 Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends.  
 Therefore,—to speak, and to avoid the first,  
 And then, in speaking, not to incur the last,—  
 Definitively thus I answer you.  
 Your love deserves my thanks ; but my desert  
 Unmeritable shuns your high request.  
 First, if all obstacles were cut away,  
 And that my path were even to the crown,  
 As the ripe revenue and due of birth,  
 Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,  
 So mighty and so many my defects,  
 That I would rather hide me from my greatness,—  
 Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,—  
 Than in my greatness covet to be hid,  
 And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.  
 But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me,—  
 And much I need to help you, were there need ;—

The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,  
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,  
Will well become the seat of majesty,  
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.  
On him I lay that you would lay on me,—  
The right and fortune of his happy stars;  
Which God defend that I should wring from him!

*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in your grace;  
But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,  
All circumstances well considered.  
You say that Edward is your brother's son:  
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife;  
For first was he contract to Lady Lucy,—  
Your mother lives a witness to his vow,—  
And afterward by substitute betroth'd  
To Bona, sister to the King of France.  
These both put off, a poor petitioner,  
A care-craz'd mother to a many sons,  
A beauty-waning and distressed widow,  
Even in the afternoon of her best days,  
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,  
Seduc'd the pitch and height of his degree  
To base declension and loath'd bigamy:  
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got  
This Edward, whom our manners call the prince.  
More bitterly could I expestulate,  
Save that, for reverence to some alive,  
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.  
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self  
This proffer'd benefit of dignity;  
If not to bless us and the land withal,  
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry  
From the corruption of abusing time  
Unto a lineal true-derived course.

*May.* Do, good my lord; your citizens entreat you.

*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

*Cate.* O, make them joyful, grant their lawful suit!

*Glo.* Alas, why would you heap those cares on me?

I am unfit for state and majesty:—

I do beseech you, take it not amiss;

I cannot nor I will not yield to you.

*Buck.* If you refuse it,—as, in love and zeal,

Loth to depose the child, your brother's son—

As well we know your tenderness of heart,

And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,

Which we have noted in you to your kindred,

And equally, indeed, to all estates,—  
 Yet know, wher you accept our suit or no,  
 Your brother's son shall never reign our king;  
 But we will plant some other in the throne,  
 To the disgrace and downfall of your house:  
 And in this resolution here we leave you.—  
 Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.

*[Exeunt BUCK., the Mayor and Citizens retiring.]*

*Cate.* Call them again, sweet prince, accept their suit:  
 If you deny them, all the land will rue it.

*Glo.* Will you enforce me to a world of cares?  
 Call them again.

*[CATE. goes to the Mayor, &c., and then Exit.]*

I am not made of stone,  
 But penetrable to your kind entreaties,  
 Albeit against my conscience and my soul.

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM and CATESBY, the Mayor, &c., coming forward.*

Cousin of Buckingham,—and sage, grave men,  
 Since you will buckle fortune on my back,  
 To bear her burden, wher I will or no,  
 I must have patience to endure the load:  
 But if black scandal or foul-fac'd reproach  
 Attend the sequel of your imposition,  
 Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me  
 From all the impure blots and stains thereof;  
 For God he knows, and you may partly see,  
 How far I am from the desire of this.

*May.* God bless your grace! we see it, and will say it.

*Glo.* In saying so, you shall but say the truth.

*Buck.* Then I salute you with this royal title,—  
 Long live King Richard, England's worthy king!

*All.* Amen.

*Buck.* To-morrow may it please you to be crown'd?

*Glo.* Even when you please, for you will have it so.

*Buck.* To-morrow, then, we will attend your grace:  
 And so, most joyfully, we take our leave.

*G'o.* Come, let us to our holy work again.—

*[To the Bishops.]*  
 Farewell, my cousin;—farewell, gentle friends. *[Exeunt]*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *Before the Tower.*

*Enter, on one side, QUEEN ELIZABETH, DUCHESS OF YORK, and MARQUIS OF DORSET; on the other, ANNE DUCHESS OF GLOSTER, leading LADY MARGARET PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE'S young Daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here?—my niece Plantagenet  
Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloster?  
Now, for my life, she's wandering to the Tower,  
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender princes.—  
Daughter, well met.

*Anne.* God give your graces both  
A happy and a joyful time of day!

*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister! Whither away?

*Anne.* No further than the Tower; and, as I guess,  
Upon the like devotion as yourselves,  
To gratulate the gentle princes there.

*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks: we'll enter all together:—  
And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes.

*Enter BRAKENBURY.*

Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,  
How doth the prince, and my young son of York?

*Brak.* Right well, dear madam. By your patience,  
I may not suffer you to visit them;  
The king hath strictly charg'd the contrary.

*Q. Eliz.* The king! who's that?

*Brak.* I mean the lord protector.

*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that kingly title!  
Hath he set bounds between their love and me?  
I am their mother; who shall bar me from them?

*Duch.* I am their father's mother; I will see them.

*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:  
Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame,  
And take thy office from thee, on my peril.

*Brak.* No, madam, no,—I may not leave it so:  
I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me. [*Exit.*

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,  
And I'll salute your grace of York as mother  
And reverend looker-on of two fair queens.—

Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster,  
 [To the DUCHESS OF GLOSTER.]  
 There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, cut my lace asunder,  
 That my pent heart may have some scope to beat,  
 Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news!

*Anne.* Despiteful tidings! O displeasing news!

*Dor.* Be of good cheer: mother, how fares your grace?

*Q. Eliz.* O Dorset, speak not to me, get thee gone!  
 Death and destruction dog thee at the heels;

Thy mother's name is ominous to children.  
 If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas,  
 And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell:  
 Go, hie thee, hie thee from this slaughter-house,  
 Lest thou increase the number of the dead;  
 And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse,  
 Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam.—  
 Take all the swift advantage of the hours;  
 You shall have letters from me to my son  
 In your behalf, to meet you on the way:  
 Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

*Duch.* O ill-dispersing wind of misery!—  
 O my accursed womb, the bed of death!  
 A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world,  
 Whose unavoided eye is murderous.

*Stan.* Come, madam, come; I in all haste was sent.

*Anne.* And I with all unwillingness will go.—  
 O, would to God that the inclusive verge  
 Of golden metal that must round my brow  
 Were red-hot steel, to scar me to the brain!  
 Anointed let me be with deadly venom,  
 And die ere men can say God save the Queen!

*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;  
 To feel my honour, wish thyself no harm.

*Anne.* No, why?—When he that is my husband now  
 Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse;  
 When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands  
 Which issu'd from my other angel husband,  
 And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd;  
 O, when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,  
 This was my wish,—*Be thou, quoth I, accurs'd*  
*For making me, so young, so old a widow!*  
*And when thou wedd'st, let sorrow haunt thy bed;*  
*And be thy wife,—if any be so mad,—*  
*More miserable by the life of thee*



*Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's death!*

I.e, ere I can repeat this curse again,  
 Within so small a time, my woman's heart  
 Grossly grew captive to his honey words,  
 And prov'd the subject of mine own soul's curse,—  
 Which hitherto hath held mine eyes from rest;  
 For never yet one hour in his bed  
 Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,  
 But with his timorous dreams was still awak'd.  
 Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick;  
 And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.

*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu! I pity thy complaining.

*Anne.* No more than with my soul I mourn for yours.

*Q. Eliz.* Farewell, thou woeful welcomer of glory!

*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy leave of it!

*Duch.* Go thou to Richmond, and good fortune guide  
 thee!— [To DORSET.

Go thou to Richard, and good angels tend thee!— [To ANNE.  
 Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee!

[To QUEEN ELIZABETH.

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me!

Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,  
 And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen.

*Q. Eliz.* Stay yet, look back with me unto the Tower.—

Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes,  
 Whom envy hath immur'd within your walls!

Rough cradle for such little pretty ones!

Rude ragged nurse, old sullen playfellow

For tender princes, use my babies well!

So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell.

[*Exeunt*

SCENE II.—LONDON. *A Room of State in the Palace.*

*Flourish of trumpets.* RICHARD, as King, upon his throne;  
 BUCKINGHAM, CATESBY, a Page, and others.

*K. Rich.* Stand all apart.—Cousin of Buckingham,—

*Buck.* My gracious sovereign?

*K. Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by thy advice  
 And thy assistance, is King Richard seated:—

But shall we wear these glories for a day?

Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?

*Buck.* Still live they, and for ever let them last!

*K. Rich.* Ah, Buckingham, now do I play the touch,  
 To try if thou be current gold indeed:—

Young Edward lives;—think now what I would speak.

*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.

*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice-renowned liege.

*K. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'tis so: but Edward lives.

*Buck.* True, noble prince.

*K. Rich.* O bitter consequence,

That Edward still should live,—true, noble prince!—

Cousin, thou wast not wont to be so dull:—

Shall I be plain?—I wish the bastards dead;

And I would have it suddenly perform'd.

What say'st thou now? speak suddenly, be brief.

*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.

*K. Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kindness freezes:  
Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?

*Buck.* Give me some little breath, some pause, dear lord,  
Before I positively speak in this:

I will resolve your grace immediately. *[Exit.*

*Cate.* The king is angry: see, he gnaws his lip. *[Aside.*

*K. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted fools

*[Descends from his throne.*

And unrespective boys; none are for me

That look into me with considerate eyes:

High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.—

Boy!—

*Page.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Know'st thou not any whom corrupting gold  
Would tempt unto a close exploit of death?

*Page.* I know a discontented gentleman,  
Whose humble means match not his haughty spirit:

Gold were as good as twenty orators,  
And will, no doubt, tempt him to anything.

*K. Rich.* What is his name?

*Page.* His name, my lord, is Tyrrel.

*K. Rich.* I partly know the man: go, call him hither,  
boy. *[Exit Page.*

The deep-revolving witty Buckingham

No more shall be the neighbour to my counsels:

Hath he so long held out with me untir'd,

And stops he now for breath?—well, be it so.

*Enter STANLEY.*

How now, Lord Stanley! what's the news?

*Stan.* Know, my loving lord,  
The Marquis Dorset, as I hear, is fled

To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.

*K. Rich.* Come hither, Catesby: rumour it abroad

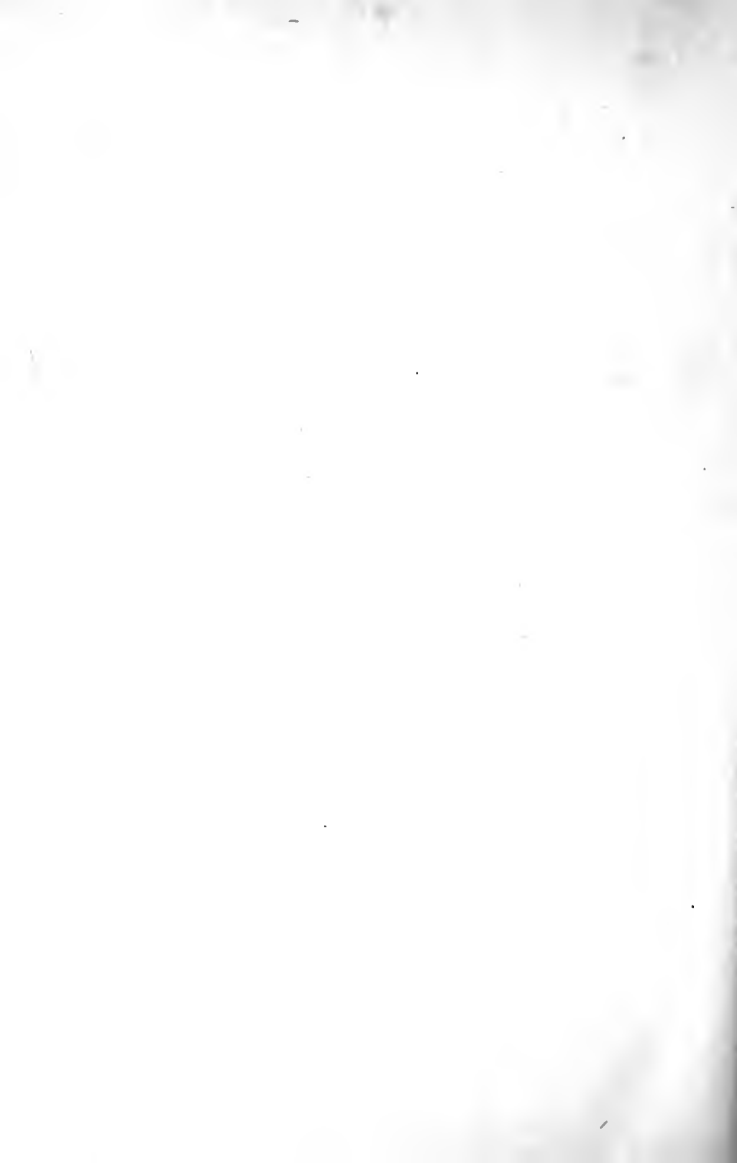




H. DEES, PINX.

MR. COMBLOCK AS RICHARD III.  
*King Richard III., Act IV., Scene 7.*





That Anne, my wife, is very grievous sick;  
 I will take order for her keeping close:  
 Inquire me out some mean poor gentleman  
 Whom I will marry straight to Clarence' daughter;—  
 The boy is foolish, and I fear not him.—  
 Look, how thou dream'st!—I say again, give out  
 That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die:  
 About it; for it stands me much upon,  
 To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me.

[*Exit* CATESBY.]

I must be married to my brother's daughter,  
 Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass:—  
 Murder her brothers, and then marry her!  
 Uncertain way of gain! But I am in  
 So far in blood that sin will pluck on sin:  
 Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.

*Re-enter* Page, with TYRREL.

Is thy name Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.

*K. Rich.* Art thou, indeed?

*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious lord.

*K. Rich.* Dar'st thou resolve to kill a friend of mine?

*Tyr.* Please you. But I had rather kill two enemies.

*K. Rich.* Why, then, thou hast it: two deep enemies,  
 Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep's disturbers,  
 Are they that I would have thee deal upon:—  
 Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to them,  
 And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

*K. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark, come hither,

Tyrrel:

Go, by this token:—rise, and lend thine ear:

[*Whispers.*]

There is no more but so:—say it is done,  
 And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it.

*Tyr.* I will despatch it straight.

[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter* BUCKINGHAM.

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind  
 The late demand that you did sound me in.

*K. Rich.* Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled to Richmond.

*Buck.* I hear the news, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son:—well, look to it.

*Buck.* My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promise,  
 For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;

The earldom of Hereford, and the movables,  
Which you have promised I shall possess.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, look to your wife: if she convey  
Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

*Buck.* What says your highness to my just request?

*K. Rich.* I do remember me,—Henry the Sixth  
Did prophesy that Richmond should be king,  
When Richmond was a little peevish boy.

A king!—perhaps,—

*Buck.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* How chance the prophet could not at that time  
Have told me, I being by, that I should kill him?

*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earldom,—

*K. Rich.* Richmond!—When last I was at Exeter,  
The mayor in courtesy show'd me the castle,  
And call'd it Rouge-mont: at which name I started,  
Because a bard of Ireland told me once  
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

*Buck.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Ay, what 's o'clock?

*Buck.* I am thus bold to put your grace in mind  
Of what you promis'd me.

*K. Rich.* Well, but what 's o'clock?

*Buck.* Upon the stroke of ten.

*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.

*Buck.* Why let it strike?

*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack, thou keep'st the stroke  
Betwixt thy begging and my meditation.  
I am not in the giving vein to-day.

*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whether you will or no.

*K. Rich.* Thou troublest me; I am not in the vein.

[*Exeunt K. RICH. and Train.*]

*Buck.* And is it thus? repays he my deep service  
With such contempt? made I him king for this?

O, let me think on Hastings, and be gone

To Brecknock while my fearful head is on!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. *Another Room in the Palace.*

*Enter TYRREL.*

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody act is done,—  
The most arch deed of piteous massacre  
That ever yet this land was guilty of.  
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn



To do this piece of ruthless butchery,  
 Albeit they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,  
 Melting with tenderness and mild compassion,  
 Wept like two children in their death's sad story.  
*O thus, quoth Dighton, lay the gentle babes,—*  
*Thus, thus, quoth Forrest, girdling one another*  
*Within their alabaster innocent arms:*  
*Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,*  
*Which in their summer beauty kiss'd each other.*  
*A book of prayers on their pillow lay;*  
*Which once, quoth Forrest, almost chang'd my mind;*  
*But, O, the devil,—there the villain stopp'd;*  
 When Dighton thus told on,—*we smothered*  
*The most replenished sweet work of nature*  
*That from the prime creation e'er she fram'd.—*  
 Hence both are gone; with conscience and remorse  
 They could not speak; and so I left them both,  
 To bear this tidings to the bloody king:—  
 And here he comes:—

*Enter KING RICHARD.*

All health, my sovereign lord!

*K. Rich.* Kind Tyrrel, am I happy in thy news?

*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in charge  
 Beget your happiness, be happy then,  
 For it is done.

*K. Rich.* But didst thou see them dead?

*Tyr.* I did, my lord.

*K. Rich.* And buried, gentle Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* The chaplain of the Tower hath buried them;  
 But where, to say the truth, I do not know.

*K. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon, at after supper,  
 When thou shalt tell the process of their death.  
 Meantime, but think how I may do thee good,  
 And be inheritor of thy desire.  
 Farewell till then.

*Tyr.* I humbly take my leave. *[Exit]*

*K. Rich.* The son of Clarence have I pent up close;  
 His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage;  
 The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,  
 And Anne my wife hath bid the world good night.  
 Now, for I know the Bretagne Richmond aims  
 At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,  
 And by that knot looks proudly on the crown,  
 To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

*Enter RATCLIFF.*

*Rat.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Good news or bad, that thou com'st in so bluntly?

*Rat.* Bad news, my lord: Morton is fled to Richmond; And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Welshmen, Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.

*K. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me more near Than Buckingham and his rash-levied strength. Come,—I have learn'd that fearful commenting Is leaden servitor to dull delay; Delay leads impotent and snail-pac'd beggary: Then hery expedition be my wing, Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king! Go, muster men: my counsel is my shield; We must be brief when traitors brave the field. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *Before the Palace.*

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET.*

*Q. Mar.* So, now prosperity begins to mellow,  
And drop into the rotten mouth of death.  
Here in these confines slyly have I lurk'd,  
To watch the waning of mine enemies.  
A dire induction am I witness to,  
And will to France; hoping the consequence  
Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical.—  
Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret: who comes here?

[*Retireæ.*]

*Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and the DUCHESS OF YORK.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, my poor princes! ah, my tender babes!  
My unblown flowers, new-appearing sweets!  
If yet your gentle souls fly in the air,  
And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,  
Hover about me with your airy wings,  
And hear your mother's lamentation!

*Q. Mar.* Hover about her; say, that right for right  
Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.

*Duch.* So many miseries have craz'd my voice  
That my woe-wearied tongue is still and mute.—  
Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

*Q. Mar.* Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet,  
Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.

*Q. Eliz.* Wilt thou, O God, fly from such gentle lambs,  
And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?

When didst thou sleep when such a deed was done?

*Q. Mar.* When holy Harry died, and my sweet son.

*Duch.* Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal-living ghost,  
Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,  
Brief abstract and record of tedious days,  
Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth,

[*Sitting down.*

Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood!

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, that thou wouldst as soon afford a grave  
As thou caust yield a melancholy seat!

Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here.

Ah, who hath any cause to mourn but we?

[*Sitting down by her.*

*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverent,

Give mine the benefit of seniory, [Coming forward.

And let my griefs frown on the upper hand.

If sorrow can admit society, [Sitting down with them.

Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine:—

I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;

I had a Henry, till a Richard kill'd him;

Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;

Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.

*Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him;

I had a Rutland too, thou help'st to kill him.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hadst a Clarence too, and Richard kill'd

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept [Exit.

A hell-hound that doth hunt us all to death:

That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,

To worry lambs and lap their gentle blood;

That foul defacer of God's handiwork;

That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,

That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,—

Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves.—

O upright, just, and true-disposing God,

How do I thank thee that this carnal cur

Preys on the issue of his mother's body,

And makes her pew-fellow with others' moan!

*Duch.* O Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes!

God witness with me, I have wept for thine.

*Q. Mar.* Bear with me; I am hungry for revenge,

And now I cloy me with beholding it.

Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward;

Thy other Edward dead to quit my Edward;

Young York he is but boot, because both they

Match not the high perfection of my loss :  
 Thy Clarence he is dead that stabb'd my Edward ;  
 And the beholders of this frantic play,  
 The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan, Grey,  
 Untimely smother'd in their dusky graves.  
 Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencer ;  
 Only reserv'd their factor to buy souls,  
 And send them thither :—but at hand, at hand,  
 Ensues his piteous and unpitied end :  
 Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,  
 To have him suddenly convey'd from hence.—  
 Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,  
 That I may live to say, The dog is dead !

*Q. Eliz.* O, thou didst prophesy the time would come  
 That I should wish for thee to help me curse  
 That bottled spider, that foul bunch-back'd toad !

*Q. Mar.* I call'd thee then, vain flourish of my fortune ;  
 I call'd thee then, poor shadow, painted queen ;  
 The presentation of but what I was,  
 The flattering index of a direful pageant ;  
 One heav'd a-high, to be hurl'd down below ;  
 A mother only mock'd with two fair babes ;  
 A dream of what thou wast ; a garish flag,  
 To be the aim of every dangerous shot ;  
 A sign of dignity, a breath, a bubble ;  
 A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.  
 Where is thy husband now ? where be thy brothers ?  
 Where be thy two sons ? wherein dost thou joy ?  
 Who sues, and kneels, and says, God save the queen ?  
 Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee ?  
 Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee ?  
 Decline all this, and see what now thou art :  
 For happy wife, a most distressed widow ;  
 For joyful mother, one that wails the name ;  
 For one being su'd to, one that humbly sues ;  
 For queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care ;  
 For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me ;  
 For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one ;  
 For one commanding all, obey'd of none.  
 Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about,  
 And left thee but a very prey to time ;  
 Having no more but thought of what thou wast,  
 To torture thee the more, being what thou art.  
 Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not  
 Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow ?  
 Now thy proud neck bears half my burden'd yoke ;

From which even here I slip my wearied head,  
 And leave the burden of it all on thee.  
 Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad mischance:—  
 These English woes shall make me smile in France.

*Q. Eliz.* O thou well skill'd in curses, stay awhile,  
 And teach me how to curse mine enemies!

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the night and fast the day;  
 Compare dead happiness with living woe;  
 Think that thy babes were fairer than they were,  
 And he that slew them fouler than he is:  
 Bettering thy loss makes the bad-causer worse;  
 Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

*Q. Eliz.* My words are dull; O, quicken them with thine!

*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp, and pierce like  
 mine. [Exit.]

*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words?

*Q. Eliz.* Windy attorneys to their client woes,  
 Airy succeeders of intestate joys,  
 Poor breathing orators of miseries!

Let them have scope: though what they do impart  
 Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.

*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-tied: go with me,  
 And in the breath of bitter words let's smother  
 My damned son, that thy two sweet sons smother'd.

[Drum within.]

I hear his drum:—be copious in exclams.

*Enter KING RICHARD and his Train, marching.*

*K. Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition?

*Duch.* O, she that might have intercepted thee,  
 By strangling thee in her accursed womb,  
 From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done!

*Q. Eliz.* Hidst thou that forehead with a golden crown,  
 Where should be branded, if that right were right,  
 The slaughter of the prince that ow'd that crown,  
 And the dire death of my poor sons and brothers?  
 Tell me, thou villain-slave, where are my children?

*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother  
 Clarence?

And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?

*Q. Eliz.* Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaughan, Grey?

*Duch.* Where is kind Hastings?

*K. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets! strike alarum, drums!  
 Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women  
 Rail on the Lord's anointed: strike, I say!

[Flourish. Alarums]

Either be patient, and entreat me fair,  
Or with the clamorous report of war  
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

*Duch.* Art thou my son?

*K. Rich.* Ay, I thank God, my father, and yourself.

*Duch.* Then patiently hear my impatience.

*K. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your condition,  
That cannot brook the accent of reproof.

*Duch.* O, let me speak!

*K. Rich.* Do, then; but I'll not hear.

*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my words.

*K. Rich.* And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.

*Duch.* Art thou so hasty? I have stay'd for thee,  
God knows, in torment and in agony.

*K. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort you?

*Duch.* No, by the holy rood, thou know'st it well,  
Thou cam'st on earth to make the earth my hell.

A grievous burden was thy birth to me;

Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;

Thy school-days frightful, desperate, wild, and furious;

Thy prime of manhood daring, bold, and venturous;

Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, sly, and bloody,

More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in hatred:

What comfortable hour canst thou name

That ever grac'd me in thy company?

*K. Rich.* Faith, none but Humphrey Hour, that call'd  
To breakfast once forth of my company. [your grace

If I be so disgracious in your eye,

Let me march on, and not offend you, madam.—

Strike up the drum.

*Duch.* I pr'ythee, hear me speak.

*K. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.* Hear me a word;

For I shall never speak to thee again.

*K. Rich.* So.

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die by God's just ordinance  
Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror;

Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish,

And never look upon thy face again.

Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse;

Which in the day of battle tire thee more

Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st!

My prayers on the adverse party fight;

And there the little souls of Edward's children

Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,

And promise them success and victory.

Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end ;  
 Shame serves thy life and doth thy death attend. [Exit.

*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much less spirit to  
 curse

Abides in me ; I say amen to her. [Going

*K. Rich.* Stay, madam, I must talk a word with you.

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal blood  
 For thee to slaughter : for my daughters, Richard,—  
 They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens ;  
 And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*K. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd Elizabeth,  
 Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this? O, let her live,  
 And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty ;  
 Slander myself as false to Edward's bed ;  
 Throw over her the veil of infamy :

So she may live unscarr'd of bleeding slaughter,  
 I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.

*K. Rich.* Wrong not her birth ; she is of royal blood.

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life I'll say she is not so.

*K. Rich.* Her life is safest only in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her brothers.

*K. Rich.* Lo, at their births good stars were opposite.

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives bad friends were contrary.

*K. Rich.* All unavoyded is the doom of destiny.

*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoyded grace makes destiny :  
 My babes were destined to a fairer death  
 If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life.

*K. Rich.* You speak as if that I had slain my cousins.

*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed ; and by their uncle cozen'd  
 Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.

Whose hands soever lanc'd their tender hearts,  
 Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction :  
 No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt  
 Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,  
 To revel in the entrails of my lambs.

But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,  
 My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys  
 Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes ;  
 And I, in such a desperate bay of death,  
 Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,  
 Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

*K. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enterprise  
 And dangerous success of bloody wars,  
 As I intend more good to you and yours  
 Than ever you or yours by me were harm'd!

*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face of heaven,  
To be discover'd, that can do me good?

*K. Rich.* The advancement of your children, gentle lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads?

*K. Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of honour,  
The high imperial type of this earth's glory.

*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrows with report of it;  
Tell me what state, what dignity, what honour,  
Canst thou demise to any child of mine?

*K. Rich.* Even all I have; ay, and myself and all  
Will I withal endow a child of thine;  
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul  
Thou drown the sad remembrance of those wrongs  
Which thou supposest I have done to thee.

*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness  
Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

*K. Rich.* Then know, that from my soul I love thy  
daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it with her soul.

*K. Rich.* What do you think?

*Q. Eliz.* That thou dost love my daughter from thy soul:  
So from thy soul's love didst thou love her brothers;  
And from my heart's love I do thank thee for it.

*K. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my meaning:  
I mean that with my soul I love thy daughter,  
And do intend to make her Queen of England.

*Q. Eliz.* Well, then, who dost thou mean shall be her  
king?

*K. Rich.* Even he that makes her queen: who else should  
be?

*Q. Eliz.* What, thou?

*K. Rich.* I, even I: what think you of it, madam?

*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her?

*K. Rich.* That I would learn of you,  
As one being best acquainted with her humour.

*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me?

*K. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart.

*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers,  
A pair of bleeding hearts; thereon engrave  
Edward and York; then haply will she weep:  
Therefore present to her,—as sometime Margaret  
Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,—  
A handkerchief; which, say to her, did drain  
The purple sap from her sweet brothers' bodies,  
And bid her wipe her weeping eyes withal.  
If this inducement move her not to love,



Send her a letter of thy noble deeds ;  
Tell her thou mad'st away her uncle Clarence,  
Her uncle Rivers ; ay, and for her sake  
Mad'st quick conveyance with her good aunt Anne.

*K. Rich.* You mock me, madam ; this is not the way  
To win your daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* There is no other way ;  
Unless thou couldst put on some other shape,  
And not be Richard that hath done all this.

*K. Rich.* Say that I did all this for love of her ?

*Q. Eliz.* Nay, then indeed she cannot choose but hate thee,  
Having bought love with such a bloody spoil.

*K. Rich.* Look, what is done cannot be now amended :  
Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes,  
Which after-hours give leisure to repent.  
If I did take the kingdom from your sons,  
To make amends I'll give it to your daughter.  
If I have kill'd the issue of your womb,  
To quicken your increase I will beget  
Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter :  
A grandam's name is little less in love  
Than is the doating title of a mother ;  
They are as children but one step below,  
Even of your mettle, of your very blood ;  
Of all one pain,—save for a night of groans  
Endur'd of her, for whom you bid like sorrow.  
Your children were vexation to your youth ;  
But mine shall be a comfort to your age.  
The loss you have is but a son being king,  
And by that loss your daughter is made queen.  
I cannot make you what amends I would,  
Therefore accept such kindness as I can.  
Dorset your son, that with a fearful soul  
Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,  
This fair alliance quickly shall call home  
To high promotions and great dignity :  
The king, that calls your beauteous daughter wife,  
Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother ;  
Again shall you be mother to a king,  
And all the ruins of distressful times  
Repair'd with double riches of content.  
What! we have many goodly days to see :  
The liquid drops of tears that you have shed  
Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl,  
Advantaging their loan with interest  
Of ten-times-double gain of happiness.

Go, then, my mother, to thy daughter go;  
 Make bold her bashful years with your experience;  
 Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale;  
 Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame  
 Of golden sovereignty; acquaint the princess  
 With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys:  
 And when this arm of mine hath chastised  
 The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham,  
 Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,  
 And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed;  
 To whom I will retail my conquest won,  
 And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say? her father's brother  
 Would be her lord? or shall I say her uncle?  
 Or he that slew her brothers and her uncles?  
 Under what title shall I woo for thee,  
 That God, the law, my honour, and her love  
 Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?

*K. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this alliance.

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still-lasting war.

*K. Rich.* Tell her the king, that may command, entreats.

*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands which the king's King forbids.

*K. Rich.* Say she shall be a high and mighty queen.

*Q. Eliz.* To wail the title, as her mother doth.

*K. Rich.* Say I will love her everlastingly.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title, *ever*, last?

*K. Rich.* Sweetly in force unto her fair life's end.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last?

*K. Rich.* As long as heaven and nature lengthens it.

*Q. Eliz.* As long as hell and Richard likes of it.

*K. Rich.* Say I, her sovereign, am her subject low.

*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loathes such sovereignty.

*K. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.

*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best being plainly told.

*K. Rich.* Then, plainly to her tell my loving tale.

*Q. Eliz.* Plain and not honest is too harsh a style.

*K. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.

*Q. Eliz.* O, no, my reasons are too deep and dead;—  
 Too deep and dead, poor infants, in their graves.

*K. Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam; that is past.

*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I till heart-strings break.

*K. Rich.* Now, by my George, my garter, and my  
 crown,—

*Q. Eliz.* Profan'd, dishonour'd, and the third usurp'd.

*K. Rich.* I swear,—

*Q. Eliz.* By nothing; for this is no oath:

Thy George, profan'd, hath lost his holy honour;  
 Thy garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly virtue;  
 Thy crown, usurp'd, disgrac'd his kingly glory.  
 If something thou wouldst swear to be believ'd,  
 Swear, then, by something that thou hast not wrong'd.

*K. Rich.* Now, by the world,—

*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.

*K. Rich.* My father's death,—

*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath that dishonour'd.

*K. Rich.* Then, by myself,—

*Q. Eliz.* Thyself is self-misus'd.

*K. Rich.* Why, then, by God,—

*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.

If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
 The unity the king thy brother made  
 Had not been broken, nor my brother slain:  
 If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
 The imperial metal, circling now thy head,  
 Had grac'd the tender temples of my child;  
 And both the princes had been breathing here,  
 Which now, two tender bedfellows for dust,  
 Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.  
 What canst thou swear by now?

*K. Rich.* The time to come.

*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wronged in the time o'erpast;  
 For I myself have many tears to wash  
 Hereafter time, for time past wrong'd by thee.  
 The children live whose parents thou hast slaughter'd,  
 Ungovern'd youth, to wail it in their age;  
 The parents live whose children thou hast butcher'd,  
 Old barren plants, to wail it with their age.  
 Swear not by time to come; for that thou hast  
 Misus'd ere used, by times ill-us'd o'erpast.

*K. Rich.* As I intend to prosper and repent!  
 So thrive I in my dangerous attempt  
 Of hostile arms! myself myself confound!  
 Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours!  
 Day, yield me not thy light; nor, night, thy rest!  
 Be opposite all planets of good luck  
 To my proceeding!—if, with pure heart's love,  
 Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,  
 I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter!  
 In her consists my happiness and thine;  
 Without her, follows to myself and thee,  
 Herself, the land, and many a Christian soul,  
 Death, desolation, ruin, and decay:

It cannot be avoided but by this ;  
 It will not be avoided but by this.  
 Therefore, dear mother,—I must call you so,—  
 Be the attorney of my love to her :  
 Plead what I will be, not what I have been ;  
 Not my deserts, but what I will deserve :  
 Urge the necessity and state of times,  
 And be not peevish found in great designs.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I be tempted of the devil thus ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt you to do good.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I forget myself to be myself ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if your self's remembrance wrong yourself.

*Q. Eliz.* But thou didst kill my children.

*K. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury them :  
 Where, in that nest of spicery, they shall breed  
 Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy will ?

*K. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the deed.

*Q. Eliz.* I go.—Write to me very shortly,  
 And you shall understand from me her mind.

*K. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss ; and so, farewell.

[*Kissing her.* *Exit Q. ELIZ.*

Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman !

*Enter RATCLIFF, CATESBY following.*

How now ! what news ?

*Rat.* Most mighty sovereign, on the western coast  
 Rideth a puissant navy ; to the shore  
 Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,  
 Unarm'd, and unresolv'd to beat them back :  
 'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral ;  
 And there they hull, expecting but the aid  
 Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore.

*K. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the Duke of Norfolk :—

Ratcliff, thyself,—or Catesby ; where is he ?

*Cate.* Here, my good lord.

*K. Rich.* Catesby, fly to the duke.

*Cate.* I will, my lord, with all convenient haste.

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff, come hither :—post to Salisbury :  
 When thou com'st thither,—Dull, unmindful villain,

[*To CATESBY.*

Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the duke ?

*Cate.* First, mighty liege, tell me your highness' pleasure,  
 What from your grace I shall deliver to him.

*K. Rich.* O, true, good Catesby :—bid him levy straight

The greatest strength and power he can make,  
And meet me suddenly at Salisbury.

*Cate.* I go.

[*Erit.*

*Rat.* What, may it please you, shall I do at Salisbury?

*K. Rich.* Why, what wouldst thou do there before I go?

*Rat.* Your highness told me I should post before.

*Enter STANLEY.*

*K. Rich.* My mind is chang'd.—Stanley, what news with you?

*Stan.* None good, my liege, to please you with the hear-  
Nor none so bad but well may be reported. [ing;

*K. Rich.* Hoyday, a riddle! neither good nor bad!

What need'st thou run so many miles about,  
When thou mayst tell thy tale the nearest way?  
Once more, what news?

*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.

*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas on him!  
White-liver'd runagate, what doth he there?

*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by guess.

*K. Rich.* Well, as you guess?

*Stan.* Stirr'd up by Dorset, Buckingham, and Morton,  
He makes for England here, to claim the crown.

*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty? is the sword unsway'd?  
Is the king dead? the empire unpossess'd?  
What heir of York is there alive but we?  
And who is England's king but great York's heir?  
Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas?

*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess.

*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be your liege,  
You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.  
Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.

*Stan.* No, mighty liege; therefore mistrust me not.

*K. Rich.* Where is thy power, then, to beat him back?  
Where be thy tenants and thy followers?  
Are they not now upon the western shore,  
Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?

*Stan.* No, my good lord, my friends are in the north.

*K. Rich.* Cold friends to me: what do they in the north,  
When they should serve their sovereign in the west?

*Stan.* They have not been commanded, mighty king:  
Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave,  
I'll muster up my friends, and meet your grace  
Where and what time your majesty shall please.

*K. Rich.* Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to join with Rich-  
But I'll not trust thee. [mond;

*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign,  
You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful:  
I never was nor never will be false.

*K. Rich.* Go, then, and muster men. But leave behind  
Your son, George Stanley: look your heart be firm,  
Or else his head's assurance is but frail.

*Stan.* So deal with him as I prove true to you. [Exit.]

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,  
As I by friends am well advertised,  
Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate,  
Bishop of Exeter, his elder brother,  
With many more confederates, are in arms.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*2 Mess.* In Kent, my liege, the Guilfords are in arms;  
And every hour more competitors  
Flock to the rebels, and their power grows strong.

*Enter a third Messenger.*

*3 Mess.* My lord, the army of great Buckingham,—

*K. Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs of death?  
[He strikes him.]

There, take thou that till thou bring better news.

*3 Mess.* The news I have to tell your majesty  
Is, that by sudden floods and fall of waters,  
Buckingham's army is dispers'd and scatter'd:  
And he himself wander'd away alone,  
No man knows whither.

*K. Rich.* I cry you mercy:  
There is my purse to cure that blow of thine.  
Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd  
Reward to him that brings the traitor in?

*3 Mess.* Such proclamation hath been made, my liege.

*Enter a fourth Messenger.*

*4 Mess.* Sir Thomas Lovel and Lord Marquis Dorset,  
'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms.  
But this good comfort bring I to your highness,—  
The Bretagne navy is dispers'd by tempest:  
Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat  
Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks  
If they were his assistants, yea or no;  
Who answer'd him they came from Buckingham.

Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,  
Hois'd sail, and made his course again for Bretagne.

*K. Rich.* March on, march on, since we are up in arms;  
If not to fight with foreign enemies,  
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* My liege, the Duke of Buckingham is taken,—  
That is the best news: that the Earl of Richmond  
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford  
Is colder news, but yet they must be told.

*K. Rich.* Away towards Salisbury! while we reason here  
A royal battle might be won and lost:—  
Some one take order Buckingham be brought  
To Salisbury; the rest march on with me.

*[Flourish. Exit.*

SCENE V.—*A Room in LORD STANLEY'S House.*

*Enter STANLEY and SIR CHRISTOPHER URSWICK.*

*Stan.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me:—  
That in the sty of the most deadly boar  
My son George Stanley is frank'd up in hold:  
If I revolt, off goes young George's head;  
The fear of that holds off my present aid.  
So, get thee gone: commend me to thy lord;  
Withal say that the queen hath heartily consented  
He should espouse Elizabeth her daughter.  
But tell me, where is princely Richmond now?

*Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Ha'rford-west, in Wales.

*Stan.* What men of name resort to him?

*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier;  
Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley;  
Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Plunt,  
And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew;  
And many other of great name and worth:  
And towards London do they bend their power,  
If by the way they be not fought withal.

*Stan.* Well, hie thee to thy lord; I kiss his hand;  
These letters will resolve him of my mind.

Farewell.

*[Gives papers to SIR CHRISTOPHER.*

*[Exit.*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—SALISBURY. *An open place.*

*Enter the Sheriff and Guard, with BUCKINGHAM, led to execution.*

*Buck.* Will not King Richard let me speak with him?

*Sher.* No, my good lord; therefore be patient.

*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children, Grey, and Rivers,  
Holy King Henry, and thy fair son Edward,  
Vaughan, and all that have miscarried  
By underhand corrupted foul injustice,—  
If that your moody discontented souls  
Do through the clouds behold this present hour,  
Even for revenge mock my destruction!—  
This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not?

*Sher.* It is, my lord.

*Buck.* Why, then, All-Souls' day is my body's doomsday.  
This is the day which in King Edward's time  
I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found  
False to his children or his wife's allies;  
This is the day wherein I wish'd to fall  
By the false faith of him whom most I trusted,  
This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul  
Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs:  
That high All-seer which I dallied with  
Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head,  
And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.  
Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men  
To turn their own points on their masters' bosoms:  
Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck,—  
*When he, quoth she, shall split thy heart with sorrow,  
Remember Margaret was a prophetess.—*  
Come, sirs, convey me to the block of shame;  
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Plain near Tamworth.*

*Enter, with drum and colours, RICHMOND, OXFORD, SIR JAMES BLUNT, SIR WALTER HERBERT, and others, with Forces, marching.*

*Richm.* Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,  
Bruis'd underneath the yoke of tyranny,



Thus far into the bowels of the land  
 Have we march'd on without impediment;  
 And here receive we from our father Stanley  
 Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.  
 The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,  
 That spoil'd your summer fields and fruitful vines,  
 Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough  
 In your enbowell'd bosoms,—this foul swine  
 Lies now even in the centre of this isle,  
 Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:  
 From Tamworth thither is but one day's march.  
 In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,  
 To reap the harvest of perpetual peace  
 By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

*Oxf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand swords,  
 To fight against that bloody homicide.

*Herb.* I doubt not but his friends will turn to us.

*Blunt.* He hath no friends but what are friends for fear,  
 Which in his dearest need will fly from him.

*Richm.* All for our vantage. Then, in God's name, march:  
 True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings;  
 Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Bosworth Field.*

*Enter KING RICHARD and Forces; the DUKE OF NORFOLK,  
 EARL OF SURREY, and others.*

*K. Rich.* Here pitch our tents, even here in Bosworth  
 field.—

My Lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?

*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

*K. Rich.* My Lord of Norfolk,—

*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks; ha! must we  
 not?

*Nor.* We must both give and take, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Up with my tent! Here will I lie to-night:

[*Soldiers begin to set up the KING'S tent.*]

But where to-morrow? Well, all's one for that.—

Who hath descried the number of the traitors?

*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost power.

*K. Rich.* Why, our battalia trebles that account:

Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,

Which they upon the adverse faction want.—

Up with the tent!—Come, noble gentlemen,

Let us survey the vantage of the ground ;—  
 Call for some men of sound direction :—  
 Let's lack no discipline, make no delay ;  
 For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter, on the other side of the Field, RICHMOND, SIR WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and other Lords. Some of the Soldiers pitch RICHMOND'S tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a golden set,  
 And by the bright track of his fiery car  
 Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow.—  
 Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.—  
 Give me some ink and paper in my tent :  
 I'll draw the form and model of our battle,  
 Limit each leader to his several charge,  
 And part in just proportion our small power.—  
 My Lord of Oxford,—you, Sir William Brandon,—  
 And you, Sir Walter Herbert,—stay with me.—  
 The Earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment :—  
 Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to him,  
 And by the second hour in the morning  
 Desire the earl to see me in my tent :  
 Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me,—  
 Where is Lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know ?

*Blunt.* Unless I have mista'en his colours much,—  
 Which well I am assur'd I have not done,—  
 His regiment lies half a mile at least  
 South from the mighty power of the king.

*Richm.* If without peril it be possible,  
 Sweet Blunt, make some good means to speak with him,  
 And give him from me this most needful note.

*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it ;  
 And so, God give you quiet rest to-night !

*Richm.* Good-night, good Captain Blunt.—Come, gentlemen,  
 Let us consult upon to-morrow's business :  
 In to my tent ; the air is raw and cold.

[*They withdraw into the tent.*]

*Enter, to his tent, KING RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, and CATESBY.*

*K. Rich.* What is't o'clock ?

*Cate.*

It's supper-time, my lord ;

It's six o'clock.

*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night.—  
 Give me some ink and paper.—

What, is my beaver easier than it was?  
And all my armour laid into my tent?

*Cate* It is, my liege; and all things are in readiness.

*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy charge;  
Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.

*Nor.* I go, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle Norfolk.

*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord. [*Exit.*]

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant-at-arms  
To Stanley's regiment; bid him bring his power  
Before sunrising, lest his son George fall  
Into the blind cave of eternal night.—  
Fill me a bowl of wine.—Give me a watch.—  
Saddle white Surrey to the field to-morrow.—  
Look that my staves be sound, and not too heavy.—  
Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy Lord Northumber-  
land?

*Rat.* Thomas the Earl of Surrey and himself,  
Much about cock-shut time, from troop to troop  
Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.

*K. Rich.* So, I am satisfied.—Give me a bowl of wine:  
I have not that alacrity of spirit  
Nor cheer of mind that I was wont to have.  
Set it down.—Is ink and paper ready?

*Rat.* It is, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch; leave me.  
Ratcliff, about the mid of night come to my tent  
And help to arm me. Leave me, I say.

[*K. RICH. retires into his tent. Exeunt RATCLIFF  
and CATESBY.*]

*RICHMOND'S tent opens, and discovers him and his  
Officers, &c.*

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!

*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can afford  
Be to thy person, noble father-in-law!  
Tell me, how fares our loving mother?

*Stan.* I, by attorney, bless thee from thy mother,  
Who prays continually for Richmond's good:  
So much for that.—The silent hours steal on,  
And fiaky darkness breaks within the east.

In brief,—for so the season bids us be,—  
 Prepare thy battle early in the morning,  
 And put thy fortune to the arbitrement  
 Of bloody strokes and mortal-staring war.  
 I, as I may,—that which I would I cannot,—  
 With best advantage will deceive the time.  
 And aid thee in this doubtful stroke of arms:  
 But on thy side I may not be too forward,  
 Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,  
 Be executed in his father's sight.  
 Farewell: the leisure and the fearful time  
 Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love  
 And ample interchange of sweet discourse,  
 Which so-long-sunder'd friends should dwell upon:  
 God give us leisure for these rites of love!  
 Once more, adieu: be valiant, and speed well!

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his regiment:  
 I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a nap,  
 Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morrow,  
 When I should mount with wings of victory:  
 Once more, good-night, kind lords and gentlemen.

[*Exeunt* Lords, &c., with STANLEY.

O Thou whose captain I account myself,  
 Look on my forces with a gracious eye;  
 Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath,  
 That they may crush down with a heavy fall  
 The usurping helmets of our adversaries!  
 Make us thy ministers of chastisement,  
 That we may praise thee in thy victory!  
 To thee I do commend my watchful soul  
 Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes:  
 Sleeping and waking, O, defend me still!

[*Sleeps.*

*The Ghost of PRINCE EDWARD, son to HENRY THE SIXTH,  
 rises between the two tents.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

[*To* KING RICHARD.

Think how thou stabb'dst me in my prime of youth  
 At Tewksbury: despair, therefore, and die!—

Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wronged souls  
 Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:  
 King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

*The Ghost of KING HENRY THE SIXTH rises.*

*Ghost.* When I was mortal, my anointed body

[*To* KING RICHARD

By thee was punched full of deadly holes :  
 Think on the Tower and me : despair, and die,—  
 Harry the Sixth bids thee despair and die!—

Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror! [*To RICHMOND.*  
 Harry, that prophesied thou shouldst be king,  
 Doth comfort thee in sleep : live, and flourish!

*The Ghost of CLARENCE rises.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

[*To KING RICHARD.*

I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,  
 Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death!  
 To-morrow in the battle think on me,  
 And fall thy edgeless sword : despair, and die!—

Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster, [*To RICHMOND.*  
 The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee:  
 Good angels guard thy battle! live, and flourish!

*The Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN rise.*

*G. of R.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow,

[*To KING RICHARD.*

Rivers, that died at Pomfret! despair, and die!

*G. of G.* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair!

[*To KING RICHARD.*

*G. of V.* Think upon Vaughan, and, with guilty fear,  
 Let fall thy lance : despair, and die!— [*To KING RICHARD.*

*All Three.* Awake, and think our wrongs in Richard's  
 bosom [*To RICHMOND.*

Will conquer him!—awake, and win the day!

*The Ghost of HASTINGS rises.*

*Ghost.* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake,

[*To KING RICHARD.*

And in a bloody battle end thy days!  
 Think on Lord Hastings : despair, and die!—

Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake! [*To RICHMOND.*  
 Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake!

*The Ghosts of the two young Princes rise.*

*Ghosts.* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower :  
 Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,  
 And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death!  
 Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair and die!—

Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake in joy ;  
 Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy !

Live, and beget a happy race of kings!  
Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

*The Ghost of QUEEN ANNE rises.*

*Ghost.* Richard, thy wife, that wretched Anne thy wife,  
That never slept a quiet hour with thee,  
Now fills thy sleep with perturbations:  
To-morrow in the battle think on me,  
And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!—

Thou quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep; [*To RICHMOND*]  
Dream of success and happy victory:  
Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

*The Ghost of BUCKINGHAM rises.*

*Ghost.* The first was I that help'd thee to the crown;  
[*To KING RICHARD.*

The last was I that felt thy tyranny:  
O, in the battle think on Buckingham,  
And die in terror of thy guiltiness!  
Dream on dream on of bloody deeds and death:  
Fainting, despair; despairing, yield thy breath!—

I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid:

[*To RICHMOND.*

But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd:  
God and good angels fight on Richmond's side;  
And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

[*The Ghosts vanish. K. RICH. starts out of his dream.*

*K. Rich.* Give me another horse,—bind up my wounds,—  
Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft! I did but dream.—  
O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!—  
The lights burn blue.—It is now dead midnight.  
Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.  
What, do I fear myself? there's none else by:  
Richard loves Richard; that is, I am I.  
Is there a murderer here? No;—yes; I am:  
Then fly. What, from myself? Great reason why—  
Lest I revenge. What,—myself upon myself!  
Alack, I love myself. Wherefore? for any good  
That I myself have done unto myself?  
O, no! alas, I rather hate myself  
For hateful deeds committed by myself!  
I am a villain: yet I lie, I am not.  
Fool, of thyself speak well:—fool, do not flatter.  
My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,  
And every tongue brings in a several tale,  
And every tale condemns me for a villain.

Perjury, perjury, in the high'st degree;  
 Murder, stern murder, in the dir'st degree;  
 All several sins, all us'd in each degree,  
 Throng to the bar, crying all, Guilty! guilty!  
 I shall despair. There is no creature loves me;  
 And if I die no soul shall pity me:  
 Nay, wherefore should they,—since that I myself  
 Find in myself no pity to myself?  
 Methought the souls of all that I had murder'd  
 Came to my tent; and every one did threat  
 To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

*Enter RATCLIFF.*

*Rat.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Who's there?

*Rat.* Ratcliff, my lord; 'tis I. The early village-cock  
 Hath twice done salutation to the morn;  
 Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream!—  
 What thinkest thou,—will our friends prove all true?

*Rat.* No doubt, my lord.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I fear, I fear,—

*Rat.* Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.

*K. Rich.* By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night  
 Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard  
 Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers  
 Armed in proof and led by shallow Richmond.  
 It is not yet near day. Come, go with me;  
 Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,  
 To hear if any mean to shrink from me.

*[Exeunt K. RICH. and RATCLIFF.]*

*RICHMOND wakes. Enter OXFORD and others.*

*Lords.* Good-morrow, Richmond!

*Richm.* Cry mercy, lords and watchful gentlemen,  
 That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.

*Lords.* How have you slept, my lord?

*Richm.* The sweetest sleep and fairest-boding dreams  
 That ever enter'd in a drowsy head  
 Have I since your departure had, my lords.  
 Methought their souls whose bodies Richard murder'd  
 Came to my tent, and cried on victory:  
 I promise you, my heart is very jocund  
 In the remembrance of so fair a dream.  
 How far in to the morning is it, lords?

*Lords.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Richm.* Why, then, 'tis time to arm and give direction.—  
 [He advances to the Troops.]

More than I have said, loving countrymen,  
 The leisure and enforcement of the time  
 Forbids to dwell on: yet remember this,—  
 God and our good cause fight upon our side;  
 The prayers of holy saints and wronged souls,  
 Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our faces;  
 Richard except, those whom we fight against  
 Had rather have us win than him they follow:  
 For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,  
 A bloody tyrant and a homicide;  
 One rais'd in blood, and one in blood establish'd;  
 One that made means to come by what he hath,  
 And slaughter'd those that were the means to help him;  
 A base foul stoupe, made precious by the foil  
 Of England's chair, where he is falsely set;  
 One that hath ever been God's enemy:  
 Then, if you fight against God's enemy,  
 God will, in justice, ward you as his soldiers;  
 If you do sweat to put a tyrant down,  
 You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;  
 If you do fight against your country's foes,  
 Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire;  
 If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,  
 Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors;  
 If you do free your children from the sword,  
 Your children's children quit it in your age.  
 Then, in the name of God and all these rights,  
 Advance your standards, draw your willing sword's.  
 For me, the ransom of my bold attempt  
 Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold face;  
 But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt  
 The least of you shall share his part thereof.  
 Sound drums and trumpets boldly and cheerfully;  
 God and Saint George! Richmond and victory! [Exeunt.]

*Re-enter* KING RICHARD, RATCLIFF, Attendants, and  
 Forces.

*K. Rich.* What said Northumberland as touching Richmond?

*Rat.* That he was never trained up in arms.

*K. Rich.* He said the truth: and what said Surrey then?

*Rat.* He smil'd, and said, the better for our purpose.

*K. Rich.* He was in the right; and so, indeed, it is.

[Clock strikes.]



Tell the clock there.—Give me a calendar.—  
Who saw the sun to-day?

*Rat.* Not I, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Then he disdains to shine; for by the book  
He should have brav'd the east an hour ago:  
A black day will it be to somebody.—

*Ratcliff,*—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day;  
The sky doth frown and lower upon our army.  
I would these dewy tears were from the ground.  
Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me  
More than to Richmond? for the selfsame heaven  
That frowns on me looks sadly upon him.

*Enter NORFOLK.*

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord; the foe vaunts in the field.

*K. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle; caparison my horse;—  
Call up Lord Stanley, bid him bring his power:  
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain,  
And thus my battle shall be ordered:—  
My forward shall be drawn out all in length,  
Consisting equally of horse and foot;  
Our archers shall be placed in the midst:  
John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Earl of Surrey,  
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse.  
They thus directed, we ourself will follow  
In the main battle; whose puissance on either side  
Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse.  
This, and Saint George to boot!—What think'st thou,  
Norfolk?

*Nor.* A good direction, warlike sovereign.—  
This found I on my tent this morning. [*Giving a scroll.*]

*K. Rich.* [*reads.*] *Jocky of Norfolk, be not too bold,  
For Dickon thy master is bought and sold.*

A thing devised by the enemy.—  
Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge:  
Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls;  
Conscience is but a word that cowards use,  
Devis'd at first to keep the strong in awe:  
Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.  
March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell;  
If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell.—  
What shall I say more than I have inferr'd?  
Remember whom you are to cope withal;—  
A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and runaways,

A scum of Bretagnes, and base lackey peasants,  
 Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth  
 To desperate ventures and assur'd destruction.  
 You sleeping safe, they bring you to unrest;  
 You having lands, and bless'd with beauteous wives,  
 They would restrain the one, distain the other.  
 And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow,  
 Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost?  
 A milk sop, one that never in his life  
 Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow?  
 Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again;  
 Lash hence these over-weening rags of France,  
 These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives;  
 Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,  
 For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themselves:  
 If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,  
 And not these bastard Bretagnes; whom our fathers  
 Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd, and thump'd,  
 And, on record, left them the heirs of shame.  
 Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives?  
 Ravish our daughters?—Hark! I hear their drum.

[*Drum afar off.*]

Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen!  
 Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head!  
 Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood;  
 Amaze the welkin with your broken staves!

*Enter a Messenger.*

What says Lord Stanley? will he bring his power?

*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.

*K. Rich.* Off with his son George's head!

*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is pass'd the marsh:  
 After the battle let George Stanley die.

*K. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within my bosom:  
 Advance our standards, set upon our foes;  
 Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,  
 Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons!  
 Upon them! Victory sits on our helms.

[*Al count.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another part of the Field.*

*Alarum: excursions. Enter NORFOLK and Forces;  
 to him CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Rescue, my Lord of Norfolk, rescue, rescue!  
 The king enacts more wonders than a man,

Daring an opposite to every danger:  
His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,  
Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death,  
Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost!

*Alarum. Enter KING RICHARD.*

*K. Rich.* A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord; I'll help you to a horse.

*K. Rich.* Slave, I have set my life upon a cast,  
And I will stand the hazard of the die:

I think there be six Richmonds in the field;

Five have I slain to-day instead of him.—

A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse! [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Field.*

*Alarums. Enter, from opposite sides, KING RICHARD and RICHMOND; and exeunt fighting. Retreat, and flourish. Then re-enter RICHMOND, with STANLEY bearing the crown, and divers other Lords and Forces.*

*Richm.* God and your arms be prais'd, victorious friends;  
The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

*Stan.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit thee!

Lo, here, this long-usurped royalty  
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch  
Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal:  
Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

*Richm.* Great God of heaven, say Amen to all!—

But, tell me, is young George Stanley living?

*Stan.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester town,  
Whither, if it please you, we may now withdraw us.

*Richm.* What men of name are slain on either side?

*Stan.* John Duke of Norfolk, Walter Lord Ferrers,  
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Brandon.

*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their births:

Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled  
That in submission will return to us:  
And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,  
We will unite the white rose and the red:—

Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction,  
That long hath frown'd upon their enmity!—

What traitor hears me, and says not Amen?

England hath long been mad, and scarr'd herself;  
The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,  
The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,

The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire :  
All this divided York and Lancaster,  
Divided in their dire division,—  
O, now let Richmond and Elizabeth,  
The true succeeders of each royal house,  
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together!  
And let their heirs,—God, if thy will be so,—  
Enrich the time to come with smooth'd-fac'd peace,  
With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous days!  
Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,  
That would reduce these bloody days again,  
And make poor England weep in streams of blood!  
Let them not live to taste this land's increase  
That would with treason wound this fair land's peace!  
Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again :  
That she may long live here, God say Amen!     *[Exeunt.]*

KING HENRY VIII

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

- KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.  
CARDINAL WOLSEY.  
CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.  
CAPUCIUS, *Ambassador from the EMPEROR CHARLES V.*  
CRANMER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
DUKE OF NORFOLK.  
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.  
EARL OF SURREY.  
Lord Chamberlain. Lord Chancellor.  
GARDINER, *Bishop of Winchester.*  
BISHOP OF LINCOLN.  
LORD ABERGAVENNY.  
LORD SANDS.  
SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.  
SIR THOMAS LOVELL.  
SIR ANTHONY DENNY.  
SIR NICHOLAS V. & J.  
*Secretaries to WOLSEY*  
CROMWELL, *Servant to WOLSEY.*  
GRIFFITH, *Gentleman-Usher to QUEEN KATHARINE.*  
Three Gentlemen.  
DR. BUTTS, *Physician to the KING.*  
Garter King-at-Arms.  
*Surveyor to the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.*  
BRANDON, *and a Sergeant-at-Arms.*  
Door-keeper of the Council Chamber.  
Porter, *and his Man.*  
Page to GARDINER. A Crier.
- QUEEN KATHARINE, *Wife to KING HENRY, afterwards divorced.*  
ANNE BULLEN, *her Maid of Honour, afterwards Queen.*  
An Old Lady, *Friend to ANNE BULLEN.*  
PATIENCE, *Woman to QUEEN KATHARINE.*
- Several Lords and Ladies in the Dumb Shows; Women attending upon the QUEEN; Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants; Spirits.*
- SCENE,—*Chiefly in LONDON and WESTMINSTER; once at KIMBOLTON.*

# KING HENRY VIII

---

## PROLOGUE.

I come no more to make you laugh : things now  
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,  
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,  
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,  
We now present. Those that can pity, here  
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear ;  
The subject will deserve it. Such as give  
Their money out of hope they may believe,  
May here find truth too. Those that come to see  
Only a show or two, and so agree  
The play may pass, if they be still and willing,  
I'll undertake may see away their shilling  
Richly in two short hours. Only they  
That come to hear a merry bawdy play,  
A noise of targets, or to see a fellow  
In a long motley coat guarded with yellow,  
Will be deceiv'd ; for, gentle hearers, know,  
To rank our chosen truth with such a show  
As fool and fight is, beside forfeiting  
Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,  
To make that only true we now intend,  
Will leave us never an understanding friend.  
Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known  
The first and happiest hearers of the town,  
Be sad, as we would make ye : think ye see  
The very persons of our noble story  
As they were living ; think you see them great,  
And follow'd with the general throng and sweat  
Of thousand friends ; then, in a moment, see  
How soon this mightiness meets misery :  
And if you can be merry then I'll say  
A man may weep upon his wedding-day.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *An Ante-chamber in the Palace.*

*Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK at one door; at the other, the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and the LORD ABERGAVENNY.*

*Buck.* Good-morrow, and well met. How have you done Since last we saw in France?

*Nor.* I thank your grace,  
Healthful; and ever since a fresh admirer  
Of what I saw there.

*Buck.* An untimely ague  
Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when  
Those suns of glory, those two lights of men,  
Met in the vale of Andren.

*Nor.* 'Twas Gwynes and Arde:  
I was then present, saw them salute on horseback;  
Beheld them, when they lighted, how they clung  
In their embracement, as they grew together;  
Which had they, what four thron'd ones could have weigh'd  
Such a compounded one?

*Buck.* All the whole time  
I was my chamber's prisoner.

*Nor.* Then you lost  
The view of earthly glory: men might say,  
Till this time pomp was single, but now married  
To one above itself. Each following day  
Became the next day's master, till the last  
Made former wonders it's: to-day the French,  
All clinquant, all in gold, like heathen gods,  
Shone down the English; and to-morrow they  
Made Britain India: every man that stood  
Show'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were  
As cherubims, all gilt: the madams too  
Not us'd to toil, did almost sweat to bear  
The pride upon them, that their very labour  
Was to them as a painting: now this masque  
Was cried incomparable; and the ensuing night  
Made it a fool and beggar. The two kings,  
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,  
As presence did present them; him in eye,  
Still him in praise: and, being present both,  
'Twas said they saw but one; and no discerners  
Durst war his tongue in censure. When these suns,—



For so they phrase 'em,—by their heralds challeng'd  
 The noble spirits to arms, they did perform  
 Beyond thought's compass: that former fabulous story,  
 Being now seen possible enough, got credit,  
 That Bevis was believ'd.

*Buck.* O, you go far.

*Nor.* As I belong to worship, and affect  
 In honour honesty, the tract of everything  
 Would by a good discourser lose some life,  
 Which action's self was tongue to. All was royal;  
 To the disposing of it naught rebell'd,  
 Order gave each thing view; the office did  
 Distinctly his full function.

*Buck.* Who did guide,—

I mean, who set the body and the limbs  
 Of this great sport together, as you guess?

*Nor.* One, certes, that promises no element  
 In such a business.

*Buck.* I pray you, who, my lord?

*Nor.* All this was order'd by the good discretion  
 Of the right reverend Cardinal of York.

*Buck.* The devil speed him! no man's pie is freed  
 From his ambitious finger. What had he  
 To do in these fierce vanities? I wonder  
 That such a keech can with his very bulk  
 Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun,  
 And keep it from the earth.

*Nor.* Surely, sir,

There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends;  
 For, being not propp'd by ancestry, whose grace  
 Chalks successors their way; nor call'd upon  
 For high feats done to the crown; neither allied  
 To eminent assistants; but, spider-like,  
 Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note  
 The force of his own merit makes his way;  
 A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys  
 A place next to the king.

*Aber.* I cannot tell

What heaven hath given him,—let some graver eye  
 Pierce into that; but I can see his pride  
 Peep through each part of him: whence has he that?  
 If not from hell, the devil is a niggard;  
 Or has given all before, and he begins  
 A new hell in himself.

*Buck.* Why the devil,

Upon this French going-out, took he upon him,

Without the privity o' the king, to appoint  
 Who should attend on him? He makes up the file  
 Of all the gentry; for the most part such  
 To whom as great a charge as little honour  
 He meant to lay upon: and his own letter,  
 The honourable board of council out,  
 Must fetch him in the papers.

*Aber.* I do know  
 Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have  
 By this so sicken'd their estates that never  
 They shall abound as formerly.

*Buck.* O, many  
 Have broke their backs with laying manors on 'em  
 For this great journey. What did this vanity  
 But minister communication of  
 A most poor issue?

*Nor.* Grievingly I think,  
 The peace between the French and us not values  
 The cost that did conclude it.

*Buck.* Every man,  
 After the hideous storm that follow'd, was  
 A thing inspir'd; and, not consulting, broke  
 Into a general prophecy,—That this tempest,  
 Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded  
 The sudden breach on't.

*Nor.* Which is budded out;  
 For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath attack'd  
 Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

*Aber.* Is it therefore  
 The ambassador is silenc'd?

*Nor.* Marry, is't.

*Aber.* A proper title of a peace; and purchas'd  
 At a superfluous rate!

*Buck.* Why, all this business  
 Our reverend cardinal carried.

*Nor.* Like it your grace,  
 The state takes notice of the private difference  
 Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you,—  
 And take it from a heart that wishes towards you  
 Honour and plenteous safety,—that you read  
 The cardinal's malice and his potency  
 Together; to consider further, that  
 What his high hatred would effect wants not  
 A minister in his power. You know his nature,  
 That he's revengeful; and I know his sword  
 Hath a sharp edge: it's long. and, 't may be said,

It reaches far; and where 'twill not extend,  
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel,  
You'll find it wholesome.—Lo, where comes that rock  
That I advise you shunning.

*Enter* CARDINAL WOLSEY, the purse borne before him,  
certain of the Guard, and two Secretaries with papers.  
The CARDINAL in his passage fixeth his eye on BUCKING-  
HAM, and BUCKINGHAM on him, both full of disdain.

*Wol.* The Duke of Buckingham's surveyor? ha?

Where's his examination?

*I Secr.* Here, so please you.

*Wol.* Is he in person ready?

*I Secr.* Ay, please your grace.

*Wol.* Well, we shall then know more; and Buckingham  
shall lessen this big look. [*Exeunt* WOLSEY and Train.]

*Buck.* This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd, and I  
Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore best  
Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's book  
Outworths a noble's blood.

*Nor.* What, are you chaf'd?  
Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance only  
Which your disease requires.

*Buck.* I read in 's looks  
Matter against me; and his eye revil'd  
Me, as his abject object: at this instant  
He bores me with some trick: he's gone to the king;  
I'll follow, and outstare him.

*Nor.* Stay, my lord,  
And let your reason with your choler question  
What 'tis you go about: to climb steep hills  
Requires slow pace at first: anger is like  
A full-hot horse, who being allow'd his way,  
Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England  
Can advise me like you: be to yourself  
As you would to your friend.

*Buck.* I'll to the king;  
And from a mouth of honour quite cry down  
This Ipswich fellow's insolence; or proclaim  
There's difference in no person's

*Nor.* Be advis'd;  
Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot  
That it do singe yourself: we may outrun,  
By violent swiftness, that which we run at,  
And lose by over-running. Know you not,  
The fire that mounts the liquor till't run o'er,

In seeming to augment it wastes it? Be advis'd:  
 I say again, there is no English soul  
 More stronger to direct you than yourself,  
 If with the sap of reason you would quench  
 Or but allay the fire of passion.

*Buck.*

Sir,

I am thankful to you; and I'll go along  
 By your prescription: but this top-proud fellow,—  
 Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but  
 From sincere motions,—by intelligence,  
 And proofs as clear as founts in July, when  
 We see each grain of gravel, I do know  
 To be corrupt and treasonous.

*Nor.*

Say not, treasonous.

*Buck.* To the king I'll say't; and make my vouch as strong  
 As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,  
 Or wolf, or both,—for he is equal ravenous  
 As he is subtle, and as prone to mischief  
 As able to perform't; his mind and place  
 Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally,—  
 Only to show his pomp as well in France  
 As here at home, suggests the king our master  
 To this last costly treaty, the interview,  
 That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a glass  
 Did break i' the rinsing.

*Nor.*

Faith, and so it did.

*Buck.* Pray, give me favour, sir. This cunning cardinal  
 The articles o' the combination drew  
 As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified  
 As he cried, Thus let be: to as much end  
 As give a crutch to the dead: but our count-cardinal  
 Has done this, and 'tis well; for worthy Wolsey,  
 Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,—  
 Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy  
 To the old dam treason,—Charles the emperor,  
 Under pretence to see the queen his aunt,—  
 For 'twas indeed his colour, but he came  
 To whisper Wolsey,—here makes visitation:  
 His fears were that the interview betwixt  
 England and France might, through their amity,  
 Breed him some prejudice; for from this league  
 Peep'd harms that menac'd him: he privily  
 Deals with our cardinal; and, as I trow,—  
 Which I do well; for I am sure the emperor  
 Paid ere he promis'd, whereby his suit was granted  
 Ere it was ask'd,—but when the way was made,

And pav'd with gold, the emperor thus desir'd,—  
That he would please to alter the king's course,  
And break the foresaid peace. Let the king know,—  
As soon he shall by me,—that thus the cardinal  
Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,  
And for his own advantage.

*Nor.* I am sorry  
To hear this of him; and could wish he were  
Something mistaken in't.

*Buck.* No, not a syllable:  
I do pronounce him in that very shape  
He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON, a Sergeant-at-Arms before him, and two  
or three of the Guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.

*Serg.* Sir,  
My lord the Duke of Buckingham, and Earl  
Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I  
Arrest thee of high treason, in the name  
Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.* Lo, you, my lord,  
The net has fall'n upon me! I shall perish  
Under device and practice.

*Bran.* I am sorry  
To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on  
The business present: 'tis his highness' pleasure  
You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.* It will help me nothing  
To plead mine innocence; for that dye is on me  
Which makes my whit'st part black. The will of heaven  
Be done in this and all things!—I obey.—  
O my Lord Aberga'ny, fare you well!

*Bran.* Nay, he must bear you company.—The king  
[*To ABERGAVENNY.*]  
Is pleas'd you shall to the Tower, till you know  
How he determines further.

*Aber.* As the duke said,  
The will of heaven be done, and the king's pleasure  
By me obey'd!

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from  
The king to attach Lord Montacute; and the bodies  
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Car,  
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—

*Buck.* So, so;  
These are the limbs o' the plot:—no more, I hope.

*Bran.* A monk o' the Chartreux.

*Buck.* O, Nicholas Hopkins?

*Bran.* He.

*Buck.* My surveyor is false; the o'er-great cardinal  
Hath show'd him gold; my life is spann'd already:  
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham,  
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,  
By darkening my clear sun.—My lord, farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—LONDON. *The Council Chamber.*

*Cornets.* Enter KING HENRY, CARDINAL WOLSEY, the  
Lords of the Council, SIR THOMAS LOVELL, Officers, and  
Attendants. *The KING enters, leaning on the CARDINAL'S  
shoulder.*

*K. Hen.* My life itself, and the best heart of it,  
Thanks you for this great care: I stood i' the level  
Of a full-charg'd confederacy, and give thanks  
To you that choked it.—Let be call'd before us  
That gentleman of Buckingham's: in person  
I'll hear him his confessions justify;  
And point by point the treasons of his master  
He shall again relate.

[*The KING takes his state. The Lords of the Council  
take their several places. The CARDINAL places  
himself under the KING'S feet, on his right side.*]

*A noise within, crying, "Room for the Queen!" Enter  
QUEEN KATHARINE, ushered by the DUKES OF NORFOLK  
and SUFFOLK: she kneels. The KING riseth from his  
state, takes her up, kisses, and placeth her by him.*

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel: I am a suitor.

*K. Hen.* Arise, and take place by us:—half your suit  
Never name to us; you have half our power:  
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given;  
Repeat your will, and take it.

*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.  
That you would love yourself, and in that love  
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor  
The dignity of your office, is the point  
Of my petition.

*K. Hen.* Lady mine, proceed.

*Q. Kath.* I am solicited, not by a few,  
And those of true condition, that your subjects

Are in great grievance: there have been commissions  
 Sent down among 'em which have fiaw'd the heart  
 Of all their loyalties:—wherein, although,  
 My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches  
 Most bitterly on you, as putter-on  
 Of these exactions, yet the king our master,—  
 Whose honour Heaven shield from soil!—even he escapes not  
 Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks  
 The sides of loyalty, and almost appears  
 In loud rebellion.

*Nor.* Not almost appears,—  
 It doth appear; for, upon these taxations,  
 The cloóthiers all, not able to maintain  
 The many to them 'longing, have put off  
 The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,  
 Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger  
 And lack of other means, in desperate manner  
 Daring the event to the teeth, are all in uproar,  
 And danger serves among them.

*K. Hen.* Taxation!  
 Wherein? and what taxation?—My lord cardinal,  
 You that are blam'd for it alike with us,  
 Know you of this taxation?

*Wol.* Please you, sir,  
 I know but of a single part, in aught  
 Pertains to the state; and front but in that file  
 Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.* No, my lord,  
 You know no more than others; but you frame  
 Things that are known alike; which are not wholesome  
 To those which would not know them, and yet must  
 Perforce be their acquaintance. These exactions,  
 Whereof my sovereign would have note, they are  
 Most pestilent to the hearing; and to bear 'em  
 The back is sacrifice to the load. They say  
 They are devis'd by you; or else you suffer  
 Too hard an exclamation.

*K. Hen.* Still exaction!  
 The nature of it? in what kind, let's know,  
 Is this exaction?

*Q. Kath.* I am much too venturous  
 In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd  
 Under your promis'd pardon. The subjects' grief  
 Comes through commissions, which compel from each  
 The sixth part of his substance, to be levied  
 Without delay; and the pretence for this

Is nam'd your wars in France: this makes bold mouths;  
 Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts freeze  
 Allegiance in them; their curses now  
 Live where their prayers did: and 't's come to pass  
 This tractable obedience is a slave  
 To each incensed will. I would your highness  
 Would give it quick consideration, for  
 There is no primer business.

*K. Hen.* By my life,  
 This is against our pleasure.

*Wol.* And for me,  
 I have no further gone in this than by  
 A single voice; and that not pass'd me but  
 By learned approbation of the judges. If I am  
 Traduc'd by ignorant tongues, which neither know  
 My faculties nor person, yet will be  
 The chronicles of my doing,—let me say  
 'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake  
 That virtue must go through. We must not stint  
 Our necessary actions, in the fear  
 To cope malicious censurers; which ever,  
 As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow  
 That is new-trimm'd, but benefit no further  
 Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,  
 By sick interpreters, once weak ones, is  
 Not ours, or not allow'd; what worst as oft  
 Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up  
 For our best act. If we shall stand still,  
 In fear our motion will be mock'd or carp'd at,  
 We should take root here where we sit, or sit  
 State-statues only.

*K. Hen.* Things done well  
 And with a care exempt themselves from fear;  
 Things done without example, in their issue  
 Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent  
 Of this commission? I believe, not any.  
 We must not rend our subjects from our laws,  
 And stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?  
 A trembling contribution! Why, we take  
 From every tree lop, bark, and part o' the timber;  
 And, though we leave it with a root, thus hack'd,  
 The air will drink the sap. To every county  
 Where this is question'd send our letters, with  
 Free pardon to each man that has denied  
 The force of this commission: pray, look to't;  
 I put it to your care.



*Wol.* A word with you. [*To the Secretary.*  
 Let there be letters writ to every shire,  
 Of the king's grace and pardon. The griev'd commons  
 Hardly conceive of me; let it be nois'd  
 That through our intercession this revokement  
 And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you  
 Further in the proceeding. [*Exit Secretary.*

*Enter Surveyor.*

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry that the Duke of Buckingham  
 Is run in your displeasure.

*K. Hen.* It grieves many:  
 The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare speaker;  
 To nature none more bound; his training such  
 That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,  
 And never seek for aid out of himself. Yet see,  
 When these so noble benefits shall prove  
 Not well dispos'd, the mind growing once corrupt,  
 They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly  
 Than ever they were fair. This man so complete,  
 Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and when we,  
 Almost with ravish'd list'ning, could not find  
 His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady,  
 Hath into monstrous habits put the graces  
 That once were his, and is become as black  
 As if besmear'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall hear—  
 This was his gentleman in trust,—of him  
 Things to strike honour sad.—Bid him recount  
 The fore-recited practices; whereof  
 We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Wol.* Stand forth, and with bold spirit relate what you,  
 Most like a careful subject, have collected  
 Out of the Duke of Buckingham.

*K. Hen.* Speak freely.

*Surv.* First, it was usual with him, every day  
 It would infect his speech,—that if the king  
 Should without issue die, he'll carry it so  
 To make the sceptre his: these very words  
 I have heard him utter to his son-in-law,  
 Lord Aberg'a'ny; to whom by oath he menac'd  
 Revenge upon the cardinal.

*Wol.* Please your highness, note  
 This dangerous conception in this point.  
 Not friended by his wish, to your high person  
 His will is most malignant; and it stretches  
 Beyond you to your friends.

*Q. Kath.* My learn'd lord cardinal,  
Deliver all with charity.

*K. Hen.* Speak on:  
How grounded he his title to the crown  
Upon our fail? to this point hast thou heard him  
At any time speak aught?

*Surv.* He was brought to this  
By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

*K. Hen.* What was that Hopkins?

*Surv.* Sir, a Chartreux friar,  
His confessor; who fed him every minute  
With words of sovereignty.

*K. Hen.* How know'st thou this?

*Surv.* Not long before your highness sped to France,  
The Duke being at the Rose, within the parish  
Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand  
What was the speech among the Londoners  
Concerning the French journey: I replied,  
Men fear'd the French would prove perfidious,  
To the king's danger. Presently the duke  
Said, 'twas the fear, indeed; and that he doubted  
'Twould prove the verity of certain words  
Spoke by a holy monk; *That oft, says he,*  
*Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit*  
*John de la Car, my chaplain, a choice hour*  
*To hear from him a matter of some moment:*  
*Whom after under the confession's seal*  
*He solemnly had sworn, that what he spoke*  
*My chaplain to no creature living but*  
*To me should utter, with demure confidence*  
*This pausingly ensu'd, — Neither the king nor 's heirs,*  
*Tell you the duke, shall prosper: bid him strive*  
*To gain the love o' the commonalty: the duke*  
*Shall govern England.*

*Q. Kath.* If I know you well,  
You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your office  
On the complaint o' the tenants: take good heed  
You charge not in your spleen a noble person,  
And spoil your nobler soul: I say, take heed;  
Yes, heartily beseech you.

*K. Hen.* Let him on:—  
Go forward.

*Surv.* On my soul, I'll speak but truth.  
I told my lord the duke, by the devil's illusions  
The monk might be deceiv'd; and that 'twas dangerous for  
him

To ruminate on this so far, until  
 It forg'd him some design, which, being believ'd,  
 It was much like to do: he answer'd, *Tush,*  
*It can do me no damage;* adding further,  
 That, had the king in his last sickness fail'd,  
 The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads  
 Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.* Ha! what, so rank? Ah-ha!  
 There's mischief in this man:—Canst thou say further?

*Surv.* I can, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Proceed.

*Surv.* Being at Greenwich,  
 After your highness had reprov'd the duke  
 About Sir William Blomer,—

*K. Hen.* I remember  
 Of such a time:—being my sworn servant,  
 The duke retain'd him his.—But on; what hence?

*Surv.* *If, quoth he, I for this had been committed,*  
*As, to the Tower, I thought,—I would have play'd*  
*The part my father meant to act upon*  
*The usurper Richard; who, being at Salisbury,*  
*Made suit to come in's presence; which, if granted,*  
*As he made semblance of his duty, would*  
*Have put his knife into him.*

*K. Hen.* A giant traitor!

*Wol.* Now, madam, may his highness live in freedom,  
 And this man out of prison?

*Q. Kath.* God mend all!

*K. Hen.* There's something more would out of thee;  
 what say'st?

*Surv.* After the duke his father, with the knife,  
 He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his dagger,  
 Another spread on's breast, mounting his eyes,  
 He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenor  
 Was, were he evil us'd, he would out-go  
 His father by as much as a performance  
 Does an irresolute purpose.

*K. Hen.* There's his period,  
 To sheath his knife in us. He is attach'd;  
 Call him to present trial: if he may  
 Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,  
 Let him not seek't of us: by day and night,  
 He is a daring traitor to the height.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. *A Room in the Palace.**Enter the Lord Chamberlain and LORD SANDS.*

*Cham.* Is't possible the spells of France should juggle  
Men into such strange mysteries?

*Sands.* New customs,  
Though they be never so ridiculous,  
Nay, let them be unmanly, yet are follow'd.

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our English  
Have got by the late voyage is but merely  
A fit or two o' the face; but they are shrewd ones;  
For when they hold them, you would swear directly  
Their very noses had been counsellors  
To Pepin or Clotharius, they keep state so.

*Sands.* They have all new legs, and lame ones:  
                  one would take it,  
That never saw 'em pace before, the spavin  
Or springhalt reigu'd among 'em.

*Cham.* Death! my lord,  
Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,  
That sure they have worn out Christendom.

*Enter SIR THOMAS LOVELL.*

How now?

What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

*Lov.* Faith, my lord,  
I hear of none, but the new proclamation  
That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.* What is't for?

*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gallants,  
That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and tailors.

*Cham.* I am glad 'tis there: now I would pray our mon-  
sieurs  
To think an English courtier may be wise,  
And never see the Louvre.

*Lov.* They must either—  
For so run the conditions—leave those remnants  
Of fool and feather that they got in France,  
With all their honourable points of ignorance  
Pertaining thereunto,—as fights and fireworks,  
Abusing better men than they can be,  
Out of a foreign wisdom,—renouncing clean  
The faith they have in tennis, and tall stockings,  
Short blister'd breeches, and those types of travel,  
And understand again, like honest men;

Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take it,  
They may, *cum privilegio*, wear away  
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd at.

*Sands.* 'Tis time to give 'em physic, their diseases  
Are grown so catching.

*Cham.* What a loss our ladies  
Will have of these trim vanities!

*Lov.* Ay, marry,  
There will be woe indeed, lords: the sly whoresons  
Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies;  
A French song and a fiddle has no fellow.

*Sands.* The devil fiddle 'em! I am glad they're going,—  
For, sure, there's no converting of 'em:—now  
An honest country lord, as I am, beaten  
A long time out of play, may bring his plain-song,  
And have an hour of hearing; and, by'r Lady,  
Held current music too.

*Cham.* Well said, Lord Sands;  
Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

*Sands.* No, my lord;  
Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

*Cham.* Sir Thomas,  
Whither were you a-going?

*Lov.* To the cardinal's:  
Your lordship is a guest too.

*Cham.* O, 'tis true;  
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,  
To many lords and ladies; there will be  
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

*Lov.* That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed,  
A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us;  
His dews fall everywhere.

*Cham.* No doubt he's noble;  
He had a black mouth that said other of him.

*Sands.* He may, my lord,—has wherewithal; in him  
Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doctrine:  
Men of his way should be most liberal;  
They are set here for examples.

*Cham.* True, they are so;  
But few now give so great ones. My barge stays;  
Your lordship shall along.—Come, good Sir Thomas,  
We shall be late else; which I would not be,  
For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford,  
This night to be comptrollers.

*Sands.* I am your lordship's.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *The Presence Chamber in  
York Place.*

*Hautboys.* A small table under a state for the CARDINAL, a longer table for the guests. Enter, at one door, ANNE BULLEN, and divers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, as guests; at another door, enter SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.

*Guild.* Ladies, a general welcome from his grace Salutes ye all; this night he dedicates To fair content and you: none here, he hopes, In all this noble bevy, has brought with her One care abroad; he would have all as merry As, first, good company, good wine, good welcome Can make good people.—O, my lord, you are tardy:

Enter Lord Chamberlain, LORD SANDS, and SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

The very thought of this fair company  
Clapp'd wings to me.

*Cham.* You are young, Sir Henry Guildford.

*Sands.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal  
But half my lay-thoughts in him, some of these  
Should find a running banquet ere they rested;  
I think would better please 'em: by my life,  
They are a sweet society of fair ones.

*Lov.* O, that your lordship were but now confessor  
To one or two of these!

*Sands.* I would I were;  
They should find easy penance.

*Lov.* Faith, how easy?

*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would afford it.

*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit? Sir Harry,  
Place you that side; I'll take the charge of this:  
His grace is ent'ring.—Nay, you must not freeze;  
Two women plac'd together makes cold weather:—  
My Lord Sands, you are one will keep 'em waking;  
Pray, sit between these ladies.

*Sands.* By my faith,  
And thank your lordship.—By your leave, sweet ladies:

[*Sits himself between ANNE BULLEN and another  
Lady.*]

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me;  
I had it from my father.

*Anne.* Was he mad, sir?





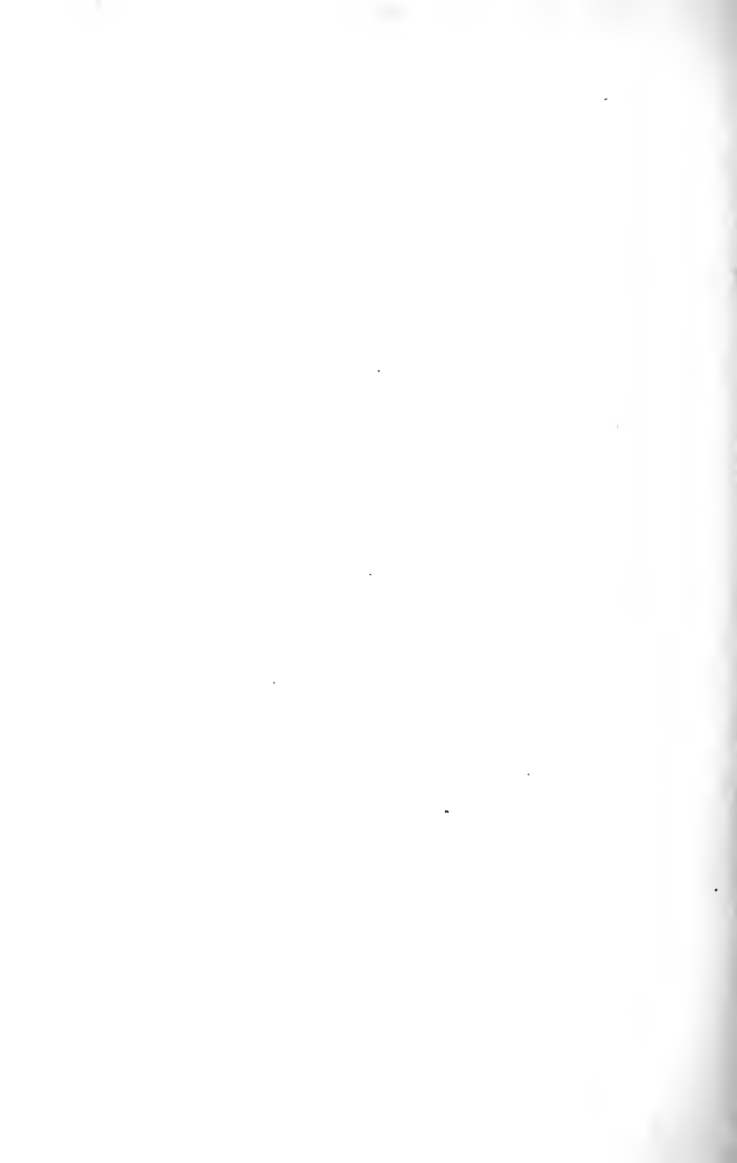




F. PECHT, PINK.

HENRY VIII. KING HENRY VIII. AND ANNE BULLEN.

*King Henry VIII. Act I. Scene II.*



*Sands.* O, very mad, exceeding mad, in love too:  
 But he would bite none; just as I do now,—  
 He would kiss you twenty with a breath. [*Kisses her.*  
*Cham.* Well said, my lord.—

So, now you're fairly seated.—Gentlemen,  
 The penance lies on you if these fair ladies  
 Pass away frowning.

*Sands.* For my little cure,  
 Let me alone.

*Hautboys.* Enter CARDINAL WOLSEY, attended; and takes  
 his state.

*Wol.* Ye're welcome, my fair guests: that noble lady  
 Or gentleman that is not freely merry  
 Is not my friend: this, to confirm my welcome:—  
 And to you all, good health. [*Drinks*

*Sands.* Your grace is noble;  
 Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,  
 And save me so much talking.

*Wol.* My Lord Sands,  
 I am beholden to you: cheer your neighbours.—  
 Ladies, you are not merry:—gentlemen,  
 Whose fault is this?

*Sands.* The red wine first must rise  
 In their fair cheeks, my lord; then we shall have 'em  
 Talk us to silence.

*Anne.* You are a merry gamester,  
 My Lord Sands.

*Sands.* Yes, if I make my play.  
 Here's to your ladyship: and pledge it, madam,  
 For 'tis to such a thing,—

*Anne.* You cannot show me.

*Sands.* I told your grace they would talk anon.

[*Drum and trumpets: Chambers discharged within.*

*Wol.* What's that!

*Cham.* Look out there, some of ye. [*Exit a Servant.*

*Wol.* What warlike voice,

And to what end, is this?—Nay, ladies, fear not;  
 By all the laws of war ye're privileg'd.

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Cham.* How now! what is't?

*Serv.* A noble troop of strangers,—  
 For so they seem: they have left their barge, and  
 landed;

And hither make, as great ambassadors  
From foreign princes.

*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain,  
Go, give 'em welcome; you can speak the French tongue;  
And, pray, receive 'em nobly, and conduct 'em  
Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty  
Shall shine at full upon them.—Some attend him.

[*Exit Chamberlain attended. All rise,  
and tables removed.*]

You have now a broken banquet: but we'll mend it.  
A good digestion to you all: and once more  
I shower a welcome on you;—welcome all.

*Hautboys. Enter the KING, and others, as maskers, habited  
like shepherds, with Torch-bearers, ushered by the Lord  
Chamberlain. They pass directly before the CARDINAL,  
and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company! what are their pleasures?

*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd  
To tell your grace,—that, having heard by fame  
Of this so noble and so fair assembly  
This night to meet here, they could do no less,  
Out of the great respect they bear to beauty,  
But leave their flocks; and, under your fair conduct,  
Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat  
An hour of revels with 'em.

*Wol.* Say, lord chamberlain,  
They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay 'em  
A thousand thanks, and pray 'em take their pleasures.

[*Ladies chosen for the dance. The KING chooses  
ANNE BULLEN.*]

*K. Hen.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd! O beauty,  
Till now I never knew thee! [*Music. Dance.*]

*Wol.* My lord,—

*Cham.* Your grace?

*Wol.* Pray tell them thus much from me:—  
There should be one amongst them, by his person,  
More worthy this place than myself; to whom,  
if I but knew him, with my love and duty  
I would surrender it.

*Cham.* I will, my lord.

[*Goes to the Maskers, and returns.*]

*Wol.* What say they?

*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess,  
There is indeed; which they would have your grace  
Find out, and he will take it.

*Wol.*

Let me see, then.—

[*Comes from his state.*]

By all your good leaves, gentlemen;—here I'll make  
My royal choice.

*K. Hen.* Ye have found him, cardinal: [*Unmasking.*]

You hold a fair assembly; you do well, lord:  
You are a churchman, or I'll tell you, cardinal,  
I should judge now unhappily.

*Wol.*

I am glad

Your grace is grown so pleasant.

*K. Hen.*

My lord chamberlain,

Pr'ythee, come hither: what fair lady's that?

*Chan.* An't please your grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's  
daughter,—

The Viscount Rochford,—one of her highness' women.

*K. Hen.* By heaven, she is a dainty one.—Sweetheart,  
I were unmannerly to take you out,  
And not to kiss you.—A health, gentlemen!  
Let it go round.

*Wol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready  
I' the privy chamber?

*Lov.*

Yes, my lord.

*Wol.*

Your grace,

I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

*K. Hen.* I fear, too much.

*Wol.*

There's fresher air, my lord,

In the next chamber.

*K. Hen.* Lead in your ladies, every one:—sweet partner,  
I must not yet forsake you:—let's be merry:—  
Good my lord cardinal, I have half a dozen healths  
To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure  
To lead 'em once again; and then let's dream  
Who's best in favour.—Let the music knock it.

[*Exeunt, with trumpets.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Street.*

*Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.*

1 *Gent.* Whither away so fast?

2 *Gent.*

O, God save ye!

E'en to the hall, to hear what shall become  
Of the great Duke of Buckingham.

- 1 *Gent.* I'll save you  
That labour, sir. All's now done, but the ceremony  
Of bringing back the prisoner.
- 2 *Gent.* Were you there?
- 1 *Gent.* Yes, indeed, was I.
- 2 *Gent.* Pray, speak what has happen'd.
- 1 *Gent.* You may guess quickly what.
- 2 *Gent.* Is he found guilty?
- 1 *Gent.* Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd upon't.
- 2 *Gent.* I am sorry for't.
- 1 *Gent.* So are a number more.
- 2 *Gent.* But, pray, how pass'd it?
- 1 *Gent.* I'll tell you in a little. The great duke  
Came to the bar; where to his accusations  
He pleaded still not guilty, and alleg'd  
Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.  
The king's attorney, on the contrary,  
Urg'd on the examinations, proofs, confessions  
Of divers witnesses; which the duke desir'd  
To have brought, *vivâ voce*, to his face:  
At which appear'd against him his surveyor;  
Sir Gilbert Peck, his chancellor; and John Car  
Confessor to him; with that devil-monk,  
Hopkins, that made this mischief.
- 2 *Gent.* That was he  
That fed him with his prophecies?
- 1 *Gent.* The same.  
All these accus'd him strongly; which he fain  
Would have flung from him, but, indeed, he could not:  
And so his peers, upon this evidence,  
Have found him guilty of high treason. Much  
He spake, and learnedly, for life; but all  
Was either pitied in him or forgotten.
- 2 *Gent.* After all this, how did he bear himself?
- 1 *Gent.* When he was brought again to the bar to hear  
His knell rung out, his judgment,—he was stirr'd  
With such an agony, he sweat extremely,  
And something spoke in choler, ill, and hasty;  
But he fell to himself again, and sweetly  
In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.
- 2 *Gent.* I do not think he fears death.
- 1 *Gent.* Sure, he does not,  
He never was so womanish; the cause  
He may a little grieve at.
- 2 *Gent.* Certainly  
The cardinal is the end of this.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis likely,  
By all conjectures: first, Kildare's attainder,  
Then deputy of Ireland; who remov'd,  
Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,  
Lest he should help his father.

2 *Gent.* That trick of state  
Was a deep envious one.

1 *Gent.* At his return  
No doubt he will requite it. This is noted,  
And generally,—whoever the king favours  
The cardinal instantly will find employment,  
And far enough from court too.

2 *Gent.* All the commons  
Hate him perniciously, and, o' my conscience,  
Wish him ten fathom deep: this duke as much  
They love and dote on; call him bounteous Buckingham,  
The mirror of all courtesy,—

1 *Gent.* Stay there, sir,  
And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM from his arraignment; Tipstaves before him; the axe with the edge towards him; halberds on each side: with him SIR THOMAS LOVELL, SIR NICHOLAS VAUX, SIR WILLIAM SANDS, and common people.*

2 *Gent.* Let's stand close, and behold him.

*Buck.* All good people,  
You that thus far have come to pity me,  
Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.  
I have this day receiv'd a traitor's judgment,  
And by that name must die: yet, heaven bear witness,  
And if I have a conscience, let it sink me,  
Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful!  
The law I bear no malice for my death;  
'T has done, upon the premises, but justice:  
But those that sought it I could wish more Christians:  
Be what they will, I heartily forgive 'em:  
Yet let 'em look they glory not in mischief,  
Nor build their evils on the graves of great men;  
For then my guiltless blood must cry against 'em.  
For further life in this world I ne'er hope,  
Nor will I sue, although the king have mercies  
More than I dare make faults. You few that lov'd me,  
And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham,  
His noble friends and fellows, whom to leave  
Is only bitter to him, only dying,  
Go with me, like good angels, to my end;

And as the long divorce of steel falls on me  
 Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice,  
 And lift my soul to heaven.—Lead on, o' God's name.

*Lov.* I do beseech your grace, for charity,  
 If ever any malice in your heart  
 Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.

*Buck.* Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive you  
 As I would be forgiven: I forgive all;  
 There cannot be those numberless offences  
 'Gainst me that I cannot take peace with: no black envy  
 Shall make my grave.—Commend me to his grace;  
 And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray tell him  
 You met him half in heaven: my vows and prayers  
 Yet are the king's; and, till my soul forsake,  
 Shall cry for blessings on him: may he live  
 Longer than I have time to tell his years!  
 Ever belov'd and loving may his rule be!  
 And when old time shall lead him to his end,  
 Goodness and he fill up one monument!

*Lov.* To the water side I must conduct your grace;  
 Then give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux,  
 Who undertakes you to your end.

*Vaux.* Prepare there,  
 The duke is coming: see the barge be ready;  
 And fit it with such furniture as suits  
 The greatness of his person.

*Buck.* Nay, Sir Nicholas,  
 Let it alone; my state now will but mock me.  
 When I came hither I was lord high constable  
 And Duke of Buckingham; now, poor Edward Bohun:  
 Yet I am richer than my base accusers,  
 That never knew what truth meant: I now seal it;  
 And with that blood will make 'em one day groan for't  
 My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,  
 Who first rais'd head against usurping Richard,  
 Flying for succour to his servaut Banister,  
 Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,  
 And without trial fell; God's peace be with him!  
 Henry the Seventh succeeding, truly pitying  
 My father's loss, like a most royal prince,  
 Restor'd me to my honours, and out of ruins  
 Made my name once more noble. Now his son,  
 Henry the Eighth, life, honour, name, and all  
 That made me happy, at one stroke has taken  
 For ever from the world. I had my trial,  
 And must needs say a noble one; which makes me



A little happier than my wretched father:  
 Yet thus far we are one in fortunes,—both  
 Fell by our servants, by those men we lov'd most;  
 A most unnatural and faithless service!  
 Heaven has an end in all: yet, you that hear me,  
 This from a dying man receive as certain:—  
 Where you are liberal of your loves and counsels,  
 Be sure you be not loose; for those you make friends  
 And give your hearts to, when they once perceive  
 The least rub in your fortunes, fall away  
 Like water from ye, never found again  
 But where they mean to sink ye. All good people,  
 Pray for me! I must now forsake ye: the last hour  
 Of my long weary life is come upon me.  
 Farewell:

And when you would say something that is sad,  
 Speak how I fell.—I have doue; and God forgive me!

[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM and Train,

1 *Gent.* O, this is full of pity!—Sir, it calls,  
 I fear, too many curses on their heads  
 That were the authors.

2 *Gent.* If the duke be guiltless,  
 'Tis full of woe: yet I can give you inkling  
 Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,  
 Greater than this.

1 *Gent.* Good angels keep it from us!  
 Where may it be? You do not doubt my faith, sir?

2 *Gent.* This secret is so weighty, 'twill require  
 A strong faith to conceal it.

1 *Gent.* Let me have it;  
 I do not talk much.

2 *Gent.* I am confident;  
 You shall, sir: did you not of late days hear  
 A buzzing of a separation  
 Between the king and Katharine?

1 *Gent.* Yes, but it held not:  
 For when the king once heard it, out of anger  
 He sent command to the lord mayor straight  
 To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues  
 That durst disperse it.

2 *Gent.* But that slander, sir,  
 Is found a truth now: for it grows again  
 Fresher than e'er it was; and held for certain  
 The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,  
 Or some about him near, have, out of malice  
 To the good queen, possess'd him with a scruple

That will undo her: to confirm this too,  
Cardinal Campeius is arriv'd, and lately;  
As all think, for this business.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis the cardinal;  
And merely to revenge him on the emperor  
For not bestowing on him, at his asking,  
The archbishopric of Toledo, this is purpos'd.

2 *Gent.* I think you have hit the mark: but is't not cruel  
That she should feel the smart of this? The cardinal  
Will have his will, and she must fall.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis woeful.  
We are too open here to argue this;  
Let's think in private more.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—LONDON. *An Ante-chamber in the Palace.*

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain reading a letter.*

*Cham.* My lord,—*The horses your lordship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were young and handsome, and of the best breed in the north. When they were ready to set out for London, a man of my lord cardinal's, by commission and main power, took 'em from me; with this reason,—His master would be served before a subject, if not before the king; which stopped our mouths, sir.*

I fear he will indeed: well, let him have them:  
He will have all, I think.

*Enter the DUKES OF NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*Nor.* Well met, my Lord Chamberlain.

*Cham.* Good-day to both your graces.

*Suf.* How is the king employ'd?

*Cham.* I left him private,  
Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

*Nor.* What's the cause?

*Cham.* It seems the marriage with his brother's wife  
Has crept too near his conscience.

*Suf.* No, his conscience  
Has crept too near another lady.

*Nor.* 'Tis so:

This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:  
That blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,  
Turns what he lists. The king will know him one day.

*Suf.* Pray God he do! he'll never know himself else.

*Nor.* How holily he works in all his business!

And with what zeal! for, now he has crack'd the league  
 Between us and the emperor, the queen's great-nephew,  
 He dives into the king's soul, and there scatters  
 Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience,  
 Fears, and despairs,—and all these for his marriage:  
 And out of all these to restore the king,  
 He counsels a divorce; a loss of her  
 That, like a jewel, has hung twenty years  
 About his neck, yet never lost her lustre:  
 Of her that loves him with that excellence  
 That angels love good men with; even of her  
 That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,  
 Will bless the king: and is not this course pious?

*Cham.* Heaven keep me from such counsel! 'Tis most  
 true

These news are everywhere; every tongue speaks 'em,  
 And every true heart weeps for't: all that dare  
 Look into these affairs see this main end,—  
 The French king's sister. Heaven will one day open  
 The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon  
 This bold bad man.

*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nor.* We had need pray,  
 And heartily, for our deliverance;  
 Or this imperious man will work us all  
 From princes into pages: all men's honours  
 Lie like one lump before him, to be fashion'd  
 Into what pitch he please.

*Suf.* For me, my lords,  
 I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:  
 As I am made without him, so I'll stand,  
 If the king please; his curses and his blessings  
 Touch me alike, they are breath I not believe in.  
 I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him  
 To him that made him proud, the pope.

*Nor.* Let's in;  
 And with some other business put the king  
 From these sad thoughts that work too much upon  
 him:—

My lord, you'll bear us company?

*Cham.* Excuse me;  
 The king has sent me other-where: besides,  
 You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:  
 Health to your lordships.

*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.  
 [Exit Lord Chamberlain.]

NORFOLK *opens a folding door.* *The KING is discovered sitting, and reading pensively.*

*Suf.* How sad he looks! sure, he is much afflicted.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, ha?

*Nor.*

Pray God he be not angry.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, I say? How dare you thrust yourselves

Into my private meditations?

Who am I, ha?

*Nor.* A gracious king, that pardons all offences  
Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty this way  
Is business of estate; in which we come  
To know your royal pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Ye are too bold:  
Go to; I'll make ye know your times of business:  
Is this an hour for temporal affairs, ha?

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.*

Who's there? my good lord cardinal?—O my Wolsey,  
The quiet of my wounded conscience;  
Thou art a cure fit for a king.—You're welcome,

[*To CAMPEIUS.*

Most learned reverend sir, into our kingdom:  
Use us and it.—My good lord, have great care  
I be not found a talker.

[*To WOLSEY.*

*Wol.* Sir, you cannot.  
I would your grace would give us but an hour  
Of private conference.

*K. Hen.* We are busy; go.

[*To NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*Nor.* [*aside to Suf.*] This priest has no pride in him!

*Suf.* [*aside to Nor.*] Not to speak of:

I would not be so sick though for his place:  
But this cannot continue.

*Nor.* [*aside to Suf.*] If it do,  
I'll venture one have-at-him.

*Suf.* [*aside to Nor.*] I another.

[*Exeunt NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*Wol.* Your grace has given a precedent of wisdom  
Above all princes, in committing freely  
Your scruple to the voice of Christendom.  
Who can be angry now? what envy reach you?  
The Spaniard, tied by blood and favour to her,  
Must now confess, if they have any goodness,  
The trial just and noble. All the clerks,

I mean the learned ones, in Christian kingdoms,  
 Have their free voices: Rome, the nurse of judgment,  
 Invited by your noble self, hath sent  
 One general tongue unto us, this good man,  
 This just and learned priest, Cardinal Campeius,—  
 Whom once more I present unto your highness.

*K. Hen.* And once more in mine arms I bid him welcome,  
 And thank the holy conclave for their loves:  
 They have sent me such a man I would have wish'd for.

*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve all strangers' loves,  
 You are so noble. To your highness' hand  
 I tender my commission;—by whose virtue,—  
 The court of Rome commanding,—you, my lord  
 Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their servant  
 In the impartial judging of this business.

*K. Hen.* Two equal men. The queen shall be acquainted  
 Forthwith for what you come.—Where's Gardiner?

*Wol.* I know your majesty has always lov'd her  
 So dear in heart, not to deny her that  
 A woman of less place might ask by law,—  
 Scholars allow'd freely to argue for her.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and the best she shall have; and my favour  
 To him that does best: God forbid else. Cardinal,  
 Pr'ythee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary:  
 I find him a fit fellow. *[Exit WOLSEY.]*

*Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.*

*Wol.* [*aside to GARD.*] Give me your hand: much joy and  
 favour to you;  
 You are the king's now.

*Gard.* [*aside to WOL.*] But to be commanded  
 For ever by your grace, whose hand has rais'd me.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, Gardiner. *[They converse apart.]*

*Cam.* My Lord of York, was not one Doctor Pace  
 In this man's place before him?

*Wol.* Yes, he was.

*Cam.* Was he not held a learned man?

*Wol.* Yes, surely.

*Cam.* Believe me, there's an ill opinion spread, then,  
 Even of yourself, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How! of me?

*Cam.* They will not stick to say you envied him;  
 And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,  
 Kept him a foreign man still; which so griev'd him  
 That he ran mad and died.

*Wol.* Heaven's peace be with him!

That's Christian care enough: for living murmurers  
 There's places of rebuke. He was a fool;  
 For he would needs be virtuous: that good fellow,  
 If I command him, follows my appointment:  
 I will have none so near else. Learn this, brother,  
 We live not to be grip'd by meaner persons.

*K. Hen.* Deliver this with modesty to the queen.

[*Exit GARDINER.*]

The most convenient place that I can think of  
 For such receipt of learning is Black-Friars;  
 There ye shall meet about this weighty business:—  
 My Wolsey, see it furnish'd.—O, my lord,  
 Would it not grieve an able man to leave  
 So sweet a bedfellow? But, conscience, conscience,—  
 O, 'tis a tender place! and I must leave her. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—LONDON. *An Ante-chamber in the  
 QUEEN'S Apartments.*

*Enter ANNE BULLEN and an Old Lady.*

*Anne.* Not for that neither: here's the pang that  
 pinches:—

His highness having liv'd so long with her, and she  
 So good a lady that no tongue could ever  
 Pronounce dishonour of her,—by my life,  
 She never knew harm-doing;—O, now, after  
 So many courses of the sun enthron'd,  
 Still growing in a majesty and pomp,—the which  
 To leave a thousand-fold more bitter than  
 'Tis sweet at first to acquire,—after this process,  
 To give her the avaunt! it is a pity  
 Would move a monster.

*Old L.* Hearts of most hard temper  
 Melt and lament for her.

*Anne.* O, God's will! much better  
 She ne'er had known pomp: though it be temporal,  
 Yet, if that quarrel, fortune, do divorce  
 It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance panging  
 As soul and body's severing.

*Old L.* Alas, poor lady!  
 She's a stranger now again.

*Anne.* So much the more  
 Must pity drop upon her. Verily,  
 I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,  
 And range with humble livers in content,

Than to be perk'd up in a glistering grief,  
And wear a golden sorrow.

*Old L.* Our content

Is our best having.

*Anne.* By my troth and maidenhead,  
I would not be a queen.

*Old L.* Beshrew me, I would,  
And venture maidenhead for't; and so would you,  
For all this spice of your hypocrisy:  
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,  
Have too a woman's heart; which ever yet  
Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty;  
Which, to say sooth, are blessings; and which gifts,—  
Saving your mincing,—the capacity  
Of your soft cheveril conscience would receive  
If you might please to stretch it.

*Anne.* Nay, good troth,—

*Old L.* Yes, troth and troth;—you would not be a queen?

*Anne.* No, not for all the riches under heaven.

*Old L.* 'Tis strange: a threepence bowed would hire me,  
Old as I am, to queen it: but, I pray you,  
What think you of a duchess? have you limbs  
To bear that load of title?

*Anne.* No, in truth.

*Old L.* Then you are weakly made: pluck off a little;  
I would not be a young count in your way  
For more than blushing comes to: if your back  
Cannot vouchsafe this burden, 'tis too weak  
Ever to get a boy.

*Anne.* How you do talk!  
I swear again I would not be a queen  
For all the world.

*Old L.* In faith, for little England  
You'd venture an emballing: I myself  
Would for Carnarvonshire, although there long'd  
No more to the crown but that.—Lo, who comes here?

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Good-morrow, ladies. What wer't worth to know  
The secret of your conference?

*Anne.* My good lord,  
Not your demand; it values not your asking:  
Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.

*Cham.* It was a gentle business, and becoming  
The action of good women: there is hope  
All will be well.

*Anne.* Now, I pray God, amen!

*Cham.* You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly blessings  
Follow such creatures. That you may, fair lady,  
Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's  
Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty  
Commends his good opinion of you to you, and  
Does purpose honour to you no less flowing  
Thian Marchioness of Pembroke; to which title  
A thousand pound a year, annual support,  
Out of his grace he adds.

*Anne.* I do not know  
What kind of my obedience I should tender;  
More than my all is nothing: nor my prayers  
Are not words duly hallow'd, nor my wishes  
More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers and wishes  
Are all I can return. Beseech your lordship,  
Vouchsafe to speak my thanks and my obedience,  
As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness;  
Whose health and royalty I pray for.

*Cham.* Lady,  
I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit  
The king hath of you.—I have perus'd her well; [*Aside.*  
Beauty and honour in her are so mingled  
That they have caught the king: and who knows yet  
But from this lady may proceed a gem  
To lighten all this isle?—I'll to the king  
And say I spoke with you.

*Anne.* My honour'd lord.

[*Exit* Lord Chamberlain.

*Old L.* Why, this it is; see, see!  
I have been begging sixteen years in court, - -  
Am yet a courtier beggarly, —nor could  
Come pat betwixt too early and too late  
For any suit of pounds; and you, O fate!  
A very fresh-fish here, —fie, fie, fie upon  
This compell'd fortune! —have your mouth fill'd up  
Before you open it.

*Anne.* This is strange to me.

*Old L.* How tastes it? is it bitter? forty pence, no.  
There was a lady once, —'tis an old story, -  
That would not be a queen, that would she not,  
For all the mud in Egypt: —have you heard it?

*Anne.* Come, you are pleasant.

*Old L.* With your theme I could  
O'er mount the lark. The Marchioness of Pembroke!  
A thousand pounds a year for pure respect!



No other obligation! By my life,  
That promises more thousands: honour's train  
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time  
I know your back will bear a duchess:—say,  
Are you not stronger than you were?

*Anne.* Good lady,  
Make yourself mirth with your particular fancy,  
And leave me out on't. Would I had no being,  
If this salute my blood a jot: it faints me  
To think what follows.

The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful  
In our long absence: pray, do not deliver  
What here you've heard to her.

*Old L.* What do you think me?

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—LONDON. *A Hall in Black-Friars.*

*Trumpet, sennet, and cornets. Enter two Vergers, with short silver wands; next them, two Scribes, in the habits of doctors; after them, the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY alone; after him, the BISHOPS OF LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHESTER, and SAINT ASAPH; next them, with some small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing the purse, with the great seal, and a Cardinal's hat; then two Priests, bearing each a si'ver cross; then a Gentleman-Usher bareheaded, accompanied with a Sergeant-at-Arms bearing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen bearing two great silver pillars; after them, side by side, the two Cardinals, WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS; two Noblemen with the sword and mace. Then enter the KING and QUEEN, and their Trains. The KING takes place under the cloth of state; the two Cardinals sit under him as judges. The QUEEN takes place at some distance from the KING. The Bishops place themselves on each side the court, in manner of a consistory; between them the Scribes. The Lords sit next the Bishops. The Crier and the rest of the Attendants stand in convenient order about the hall.*

*Vol.* Whilst our commission from Rome is read,  
Let silence be commanded.

*K. Hen.* What's the need?  
It hath already publicly been read,  
And on all sides the authority allow'd;  
You may, then, spare that time.

*Vol.*

Be't so.—Proceed.

*Scribe.* Say, Henry King of England, come into the court

*Crier.* Henry King of England, &c.

*K. Hen.* Here.

*Scribe.* Say, Katharine Queen of England, come into the

*Crier.* Katharine Queen of England, &c. [court.

[*The QUEEN makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the KING, and kneels at his feet; then speaks.*

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you do me right and justice;  
 And to bestow your pity on me: for  
 I am a most poor woman, and a stranger,  
 Born out of your dominions; having here  
 No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance  
 Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas, sir,  
 In what have I offended you? what cause  
 Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure,  
 That thus you should proceed to put me off,  
 And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,  
 I have been to you a true and humble wife,  
 At all times to your will conformable;  
 Ever in fear to kindle your dislike,  
 Yea, subject to your countenance,—glad or sorry  
 As I saw it inclin'd. When was the hour  
 I ever contradicted your desire,  
 Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends  
 Have I not strove to love, although I knew  
 He were mine enemy? what friend of mine  
 That had to him deriv'd your anger, did I  
 Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice  
 He was from thence discharg'd? Sir, call to mind  
 That I have been your wife, in this obedience,  
 Upward of twenty years, and have been blest  
 With many children by you: if, in the course  
 And process of this time, you can report,  
 And prove it too, against mine honour aught,  
 My bond to wedlock or my love and duty,  
 Against your sacred person, in God's name,  
 Turn me away; and let the foul'st contempt  
 Shut door upon me, and so give me up  
 To the sharp'st kind of justice. Please you, sir,  
 The king, your father, was reputed for  
 A prince most prudent, of an excellent  
 And unmatched wit and judgment: Ferdinand,  
 My father, King of Spain, was reckon'd one  
 The wisest prince that there had reign'd by many  
 A year before: it is not to be question'd  
 That they had gather'd a wise council to them

Of every realm, that did debate this business,  
 Who deem'd our marriage lawful: wherefore I humbly  
 Beseech you, sir, to spare me, till I may  
 Be by my friends in Spain advis'd; whose counsel  
 I will implore: if not, i' the name of God,  
 Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.* You have here, lady,—  
 And of your choice,—these reverend fathers; men  
 Of singular integrity and learning,  
 Yea, the elect o' the land, who are assembled  
 To plead your cause: it shall be therefore bootless  
 That longer you desire the court; as well  
 For your own quiet as to rectify  
 What is unsettled in the king.

*Cam.* His grace  
 Hath spoken well and justly: therefore, madam,  
 It's fit this royal session do proceed;  
 And that, without delay, their arguments  
 Be now produc'd and heard.

*Q. Kath.* Lord cardinal,—  
 To you I speak.

*Wol.* Your pleasure, madam?

*Q. Kath.* Sir,  
 I am about to weep; but, thinking that  
 We are a queen,—or long have dream'd so,—certain  
 The daughter of a king, my drops of tears  
 I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.* Be patient yet.

*Q. Kath.* I will, when you are humble; nay, before,  
 Or God will punish me. I do believe,  
 Induc'd by potent circumstances, that  
 You are mine enemy; and make my challenge  
 You shall not be my judge: for it is you  
 Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me,—  
 Which God's dew quench! Therefore I say again,  
 I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul  
 Refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once more,  
 I hold my most malicious foe, and think not  
 At all a friend to truth.

*Wol.* I do profess  
 You speak not like yourself; who ever yet  
 Have stood to charity, and display'd the effects  
 Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom  
 O'ertopping woman's power. Madam, you do me wrong:  
 I have no spleen against you, nor injustice  
 For you or any: how far I have proceeded,

Or how far further shall, is warranted  
 By a commission from the consistory,  
 Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me  
 That I have blown this coal: I do deny it:  
 The king is present: if it be known to him  
 That I gainsay my deed, how may he wound,  
 And worthily, my falsehood! yea, as much  
 As you have done my truth. If he know  
 That I am free of your report, he knows  
 I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him  
 It lies to cure me: and the cure is, to  
 Remove these thoughts from you: the which before  
 His highness shall speak in, I do beseech  
 You, gracious madam, to unthink your speaking,  
 And to say so no more.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord,  
 I am a simple woman, much too weak  
 To oppose your cunning. You're meek and humble  
 mouth'd;

You sign your place and calling, in full seeming,  
 With meekness and humility; but your heart  
 Is cramm'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride.  
 You have, by fortune and his highness' favours,  
 Gone slightly o'er low steps, and now are mounted  
 Where powers are your retainers; and your words,  
 Domestics to you, serve your will as't please  
 Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell you,  
 You tender more your person's honour than  
 Your high profession spiritual: that again  
 I do refuse you for my judge; and here,  
 Before you all, appeal unto the pope,  
 To bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness,  
 And to be judg'd by him.

[*She curtsies to the KING, and offers to depart.*]

*Cam.* The queen is obstinate,  
 Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and  
 Disdainful to be tried by it: 'tis not well.  
 She's going away.

*K. Hen.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine Queen of England, come into the court.

*Grif.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? pray you, keep your  
 way:

When you are call'd, return.—Now the Lord help,  
 They vex me past my patience!—Pray you, pass on:  
 I will not tarry; no, nor ever more

Upon this business my appearance make  
In any of their courts.

[*Exeunt* QUEEN, GRIF., and her other Attendants.

*K. Hen.* Go thy ways, Kate:

That man i' the world who shall report he has  
A better wife, let him in naught be trusted  
For speaking false in that: thou art, alone,—  
If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,  
Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government—  
Obeying in commanding—and thy parts  
Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee out,—  
The queen of earthly queens:—she's noble born;  
And like her true nobility she has  
Carried herself towards me.

*Wol.*

Most gracious sir,  
In humblest manner I require your highness  
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing  
Of all these ears,—for where I am robb'd and bound,  
There must I be unloos'd; although not there  
At once and fully satisfied,—whether ever I  
Did broach this business to your highness; or  
Laid any scruple in your way, which might  
Induce you to the question on't? or ever  
Have to you,—but with thanks to God for such  
A royal lady,—spake one the least word that might  
Be to the prejudice of her present state,  
Or touch of her good person?

*K. Hen.*

My lord cardinal,  
I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,  
I free you from't. You are not to be taught  
That you have many enemies, that know not  
Why they are so, but, like to village curs,  
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these  
The queen is put in anger. You are excus'd:  
But will you be more justified? you ever  
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business; never  
Desir'd it to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd, oft,  
The passages made toward it:—on my honour,  
I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,  
And thus far clear him. Now, what mov'd me to't,  
I will be bold with time and your attention:—  
Then mark the inducement. Thus it came;—give heed  
to't:—

My conscience first receiv'd a tenderness,  
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd  
By the Bishop of Bayonne, then French ambassador;

Who had been hither sent on the debating  
 A marriage 'twixt the Duke of Orleans and  
 Our daughter Mary: I' the progress of this business,  
 Ere a determinate resolution, he,—  
 I mean the bishop,—did require a respite;  
 Wherein he might the king his lord advertise  
 Whether our daughter were legitimate,  
 Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,  
 Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite shook  
 The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,  
 Yea, with a splitting power, and made to tremble  
 The region of my breast; which forc'd such way  
 That many maz'd considerings did throng,  
 And press'd in with this caution. First, methought  
 I stood not in the smile of heaven; who had  
 Commanded nature that my lady's womb,  
 If it conceiv'd a male child by me, should  
 Do no more offices of life to't than  
 The grave does to the dead; for her male issue  
 Or died where they were made, or shortly after  
 This world had air'd them: hence I took a thought  
 This was a judgment on me; that my kingdom,  
 Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should not  
 Be gladdened in't by me: then follows that  
 I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in  
 By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me  
 Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling in  
 The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer  
 Toward this remedy, whereupon we are  
 Now present here together; that's to say,  
 I meant to rectify my conscience,—which  
 I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,—  
 By all the reverend fathers of the land,  
 And doctors learn'd:—first I began in private  
 With you, my Lord of Lincoln; you remember  
 How under my oppression I did reek  
 When I first mov'd you.

*Lin.*

Very well, my liege.

*K. Hen.* I have spoke long: be pleas'd yourself to  
 say

How far you satisfied me.

*Lin.*

So please your highness,  
 The question did at first so stagger me,—  
 Bearing a state of mighty moment in't,  
 And consequence of dread,—that I committed  
 The daring'st counsel which I had to doubt;

And did entreat your highness to this course  
Which you are running here.

*K. Hen.* I then mov'd you,  
My Lord of Canterbury; and got your leave  
To make this present summons:—unsolicited  
I left no reverend person in this court;  
But by particular consent proceeded  
Under your hands and seals: therefore, go on;  
For no dislike i' the world against the person  
Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points  
Of my alleged reasons, drive this forward:  
Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life  
And kingly dignity, we are contented  
To wear our mortal state to come with her,  
Katharine our queen, before the primest creature  
That's paragon'd o' the world.

*Cam.* So pleasure your highness,  
The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness  
That we adjourn this court till further day:  
Meanwhile must be an earnest motion  
Made to the queen to call back her appeal  
She intends unto his holiness. [*They rise to depart.*]

*K. Hen.* I may perceive  
These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor  
This dilatory sloth and tricks of Rome. [*Aside.*]  
My learn'd and well-belov'd servant, Cranmer,  
Pr'ythee, return! with thy approach, I know,  
My comfort comes along. Break up the court:  
I say, set on. [*Exeunt in manner as they entered.*]

---

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *Palace at Bridewell. A Room  
in the QUEEN'S Apartment.*

*The QUEEN and some of her Women at work*

*Q. Kath.* Take thy lute, wench: my soul grows sad with  
troubles;  
Sing and disperse 'em, if thou canst: leave working.

SONG.

Orpheus with his lute made trees,  
And the mountain-tops that freeze,  
Bow themselves, when he did sing:  
To his music plants and flowers  
Ever sprung; as sun and showers  
There had made a lasting spring.

Everything that heard him play,  
 Even the billows of the sea,  
 Hung their heads and then lay by.  
 In sweet music is such art :  
 Killing care and grief of heart  
 Fall asleep, or, hearing, die.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Q. Kath.* How now?

*Gent.* An't please your grace, the two great cardinals  
 Wait in the presence.

*Q. Kath.* Would they speak with me?

*Gent.* They will'd me say so, madam.

*Q. Kath.* Pray their graces  
 To come near. [*Erit Gent.*] What can be their business  
 With me, a poor weak woman, fallen from favour?  
 I do not like their coming, now I think on't.  
 They should be good men; their affairs as righteous:  
 But all hoods make not monks.

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.*

*Wol.* Peace to your highness!

*Q. Kath.* Your graces find me here part of a housewife;  
 I would be all, against the worst may happen.  
 What are your pleasures with me, reverend lords?

*Wol.* May it please you, noble madam, to withdraw  
 Into your private chamber, we shall give you  
 The full cause of our coming.

*Q. Kath.* Speak it here;  
 There's nothing I have done yet, o' my conscience,  
 Deserves a corner: would all other women  
 Could speak this with as free a soul as I do!  
 My lords, I care not,—so much I am happy  
 Above a number,—if my actions  
 Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw 'em,  
 Envy and base opinion set against 'em,  
 I know my life so even. If your business  
 Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,  
 Out with it boldly: truth loves open dealing.

*Wol.* *Tanta est erga te mentis integritas, regina serenissima,*—

*Q. Kath.* O, good my lord, no Latin;  
 I am not such a truant since my coming  
 As not to know the language I have lived in:  
 A strange tongue makes my cause more strange, suspicious;  
 Pray, speak in English: here are some will thank you,  
 If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake,—



Believe me, she has had much wrong: lord cardinal,  
The willing'st sin I ever yet committed  
May be absolv'd in English.

*Wol.* Noble lady,  
I am sorry my integrity should breed,—  
And service to his majesty and you,—  
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.  
We come not by the way of accusation  
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses,  
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow,—  
You have too much, good lady; but to know  
How you stand minded in the weighty difference  
Between the king and you; and to deliver,  
Like free and honest men, our just opinions,  
And comforts to your cause.

*Cam.* Most honour'd madam,  
My Lord of York,—out of his noble nature,  
Zeal and obedience he still bore your grace,—  
Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure  
Both of his truth and him,—which was too far,—  
Offers, as I do, in a sign of peace,  
His service and his counsel.

*Q. Kath.* To betray me. [*Aside.*]  
My lords, I thank you both for your good-wills;  
Ye speak like honest men,—pray God ye prove so!  
But how to make ye suddenly an answer,  
In such a point of weight, so near mine honour,—  
More near my life, I fear,—with my weak wit,  
And to such men of gravity and learning,  
In truth, I know not. I was set at work  
Among my maids; full little, God knows, looking  
Either for such men or such business.  
For her sake that I have been,—for I feel  
The last fit of my greatness,—good your graces,  
Let me have time and counsel for my cause:  
Alas, I am a woman, friendless, hopeless!

*Wol.* Madam, you wrong the king's love with these  
fears:

Your hopes and friends are infinite.

*Q. Kath.* In England  
But little for my profit: can you think, lords,  
That any Englishman dare give me counsel?  
Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness' pleasure,—  
Though he be grown so desperate to be honest,—  
And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,  
They that must weigh out my afflictions,

They that my trust must grow to, live not here:  
They are, as all my other comforts, far hence,  
In mine own country, lords.

*Cam.* I would your grace  
Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

*Q. Kath.* How, sir?

*Cam.* Put your main cause into the king's protection;  
He's loving and most gracious: 'twill be much  
Both for your honour better and your cause;  
For if the trial of the law o'ertake ye  
You'll part away disgrac'd.

*Wol.* He tells you rightly.

*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for both,—my ruin:  
Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye!  
Heaven is above all yet; there sits a Judge  
That no king can corrupt.

*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.

*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye: holy men I thought ye,  
Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues;  
But cardinal sins and hollow hearts I fear ye:  
Mend them, for shame, my lords. Is this your comfort?  
The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady,—  
A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?  
I will not wish ye half my miseries;  
I have more charity: but say I warn'd ye;  
Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at once  
The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

*Wol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;  
You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing: woe upon ye,  
And all such false professors! would you have me,—  
If you have any justice, any pity,  
If ye be anything but churchmen's habits,—  
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?  
Alas! has banish'd me his bed already,  
His love too long ago! I am old, my lords,  
And all the fellowship I hold now with him  
Is only my obedience. What can happen  
To me above this wretchedness? all your studies  
Make me a curse like this.

*Cam.* Your fears are worse.

*Q. Kath.* Have I liv'd thus long,—let me speak myself,  
Since virtue finds no friends,—a wife, a true one?  
A woman,—I dare say without vain-glory,—  
Never yet branded with suspicion?  
Have I with all my full affections

Still met the king? lov'd him next heaven? obey'd him?  
 Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him?  
 Almost forgot my prayers to content him?  
 And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.  
 Bring me a constant woman to her husband,  
 One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his pleasure;  
 And to that woman, when she has done most,  
 Yet will I add an honour,—a great patience.

*Wol.* Madam, you wander from the good we aim at.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself so guilty,  
 To give up willingly that noble title  
 Your master wed me to: nothing but death  
 Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Wol.* Pray, hear me.

*Q. Kath.* Would I had never trod this English earth,  
 Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!  
 Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your hearts.  
 What will become of me now, wretched lady?  
 I am the most unhappy woman living.—  
 Alas, poor wenches, where are now your fortunes?

[*To her Women*]

Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,  
 No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me;  
 Almost no grave allow'd me:—like the lily,  
 That once was mistress of the field and flourish'd,  
 I'll hang my head and perish.

*Wol.* If your grace

Could but be brought to know our ends are honest,  
 You'd feel more comfort: why should we, good lady,  
 Upon what cause, wrong you? alas, our places,  
 The way of our profession is against it:  
 We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow 'em,  
 For goodness' sake, consider what you do;  
 How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly  
 Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this carriage.  
 The hearts of princes kiss obedience,  
 So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits  
 They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.  
 I know you have a gentle, noble temper,  
 A soul as even as a calm: pray, think us  
 Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and servants.

*Cam.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong your virtues  
 With these weak women's fears: a noble spirit,  
 As yours was put into you, ever casts  
 Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king loves you;  
 Beware you lose it not: for us, if you please

To trust us in your business, we are ready  
To use our utmost studies in your service.

*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords: and, pray, forgive  
If I have us'd myself unmannerly; [me

You know I am a woman, lacking wit  
To make a seemly answer to such persons.

Pray, do my service to his majesty:

He has my heart yet; and shall have my prayers  
While I shall have my life. Come, reverend fathers,

Bestow your counsels on me; she now begs

That little thought, when she set footing here,

She should have bought her dignities so dear. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—LONDON. *Ante-chamber to the KING'S Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter the DUKE OF NORFOLK, the DUKE OF SUFFOLK, the  
EARL OF SURREY, and the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your complaints,  
And force them with a constancy, the cardinal  
Cannot stand under them: if you omit  
The offer of this time, I cannot promise  
But that you shall sustain more new disgraces,  
With these you bear already.

*Sur.* I am joyful  
To meet the least occasion that may give me  
Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,  
To be reveng'd on him.

*Suf.* Which of the peers  
Have uncontemn'd gone by him, or at least  
Strangely neglected? when did he regard  
The stamp of nobleness in any person  
Out of himself?

*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures:  
What he deserves of you and me I know;  
What we can do to him,—though now the time  
Gives way to us,—I much fear. If you cannot  
Bar his access to the king, never attempt  
Anything on him; for he hath a witchcraft  
Over the king in's tongue.

*Nor.* O, fear him not;  
His spell in that is out: the king hath found  
Matter against him that for ever mars  
The honey of his language. No, he's settled,  
Not to come off, in his displeasure.

*Sur.* Sir,  
I should be glad to hear such news as this  
Once every hour.

*Nor.* Believe it, this is true :  
In the divorce his contrary proceedings  
Are all unfolded ; wherein he appears  
As I would wish mine enemy.

*Sur.* How came  
His practices to light ?

*Suf.* Most strangely.

*Sur.* O, how, how ?  
*Suf.* The cardinal's letters to the pope miscarried,  
And came to the eye o' the king : wherein was read  
How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness  
To stay the judgment o' the divorce ; for if  
It did take place, *I do*, quoth he, *perceive*  
*My king is tangled in affection to*  
*A creature of the queen's, Lady Anne Bullen.*

*Sur.* Has the king this ?

*Suf.* Believe it.

*Sur.* Will this work ?

*Cham.* The king in this perceives him how he coasts  
And hedges his own way. But in this point  
All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic  
After his patient's death : the king already  
Hath married the fair lady.

*Sur.* Would he had !

*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my lord !  
For, I profess, you have it.

*Sur.* Now, all my joy  
Trace the conjunction !

*Suf.* My amen to't !

*Nor.* All men's !

*Suf.* There's order given for her coronation :  
Marry, this is yet but young, and may be left  
To some ears unrecounted.—But, my lords,  
She is a gallant creature, and complete  
In mind and feature : I persuade me, from her  
Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall  
In it be memoriz'd.

*Sur.* But will the king  
Digest this letter of the cardinal's ?  
The Lord forbid !

*Nor.* Marry, amen !

*Suf.* No, no ;  
There be more wasps that buzz about his nose

Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius  
Is stol'n away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave;  
Has left the cause o' the king unhandled; and  
Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal,  
To second all his plot. I do assure you  
The king cried Ha! at this.

*Cham.* Now, God incense him,  
And let him cry Ha! louder!

*Nor.* But, my lord,  
When returns Cranmer?

*Suf.* He is return'd, in his opinions; which  
Have satisfied the king for his divorce,  
Together with all famous colleges  
Almost in Christendom: shortly, I believe,  
His second marriage shall be publish'd, and  
Her coronation. Katharine no more  
Shall be call'd queen, but princess dowager  
And widow to Prince Arthur.

*Nor.* This same Cranmer's  
A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain  
In the king's business.

*Suf.* He has; and we shall see him  
For it an archbishop.

*Nor.* So I hear.  
*Suf.* 'Tis so.—

The cardinal!

*Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.*

*Nor.* Observe, observe, he's moody.

*Wol.* The packet, Cromwell,  
Gave't you the king?

*Crom.* To his own hand, in's bedchamber.

*Wol.* Look'd he o' the inside of the paper?

*Crom.* Presently

He did unseal them: and the first he view'd,  
He did it with a serious mind; a heed  
Was in his countenance. You he bade  
Attend him here this morning.

*Wol.* Is he ready  
To come abroad?

*Crom.* I think by this he is.

*Wol.* Leave me awhile. *[Exit CROMWELL.]*

It shall be to the Duchess of Alençon,  
The French king's sister: he shall marry her.—  
Anne Bullen! No; I'll no Anne Bullens for him:  
There's more in't than fair visage.—Bullen!

No, we'll no Bullens.—Speedily I wish  
To hear from Rome.—The Marchioness of Pembroke!

*Nor.* He's discontented.

*Suf.* May be he hears the king  
Does whet his anger to him.

*Sur.* Sharp enough,  
Lord, for thy justice!

*Wol.* The late queen's gentlewoman, a knight's daughter  
To be her mistress' mistress! the queen's queen!—  
This candle burns not clear: 'tis I must snuff it;  
Then out it goes.—What though I know her virtuous  
And well deserving? yet I know her for  
A spleeny Lutherau; and not wholesome to  
Our cause, that she should lie i' the bosom of  
Our hard-ru'd king. Again, there is sprung up  
An heretic, an arch one, Craumer; one  
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,  
And is his oracle.

*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.

*Suf.* I would 'twere something that would fret the  
string,  
The master-cord on's heart!

*Suf.* The king, the king!

*Enter the KING reading a schedule, and LOVELL.*

*K. Hen.* What piles of wealth hath he accumulated  
To his own portion! and what expense by the hour  
Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of thrift,  
Does he rake this together?—Now, my lords,  
Saw you the cardinal?

*Nor.* My lord, we have  
Stood here observing him: some strange commotion  
Is in his brain: he bites his lip and starts;  
Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,  
Then lays his finger on his temple; straight  
Springs out into fast gait; then stops again,  
Strikes his breast hard; and anon he casts  
His eye against the moon: in most strange postures  
We have seen him set himself.

*K. Hen.* It may well be;  
There is a mutiny in's mind. This morning  
Papers of state he sent me to peruse,  
As I requir'd: and wot you what I found  
There,—on my conscience, put unwittingly?  
Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing,—

The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,  
Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household; which  
I find at such proud rate that it out-speaks  
Possession of a subject.

*Nor.* It's heaven's will:  
Some spirit put this paper in the packet  
To bless your eye withal.

*K. Hen.* If we did think  
His contemplation were above the earth,  
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still  
Dwell in his musings: but I am afraid  
His thinkings are below the moon, not worth  
His serious considering.

[*He takes his seat and whispers* LOVELL,  
*who goes to* WOLSEY.

*Wol.* Heaven forgive me!  
Ever God bless your highness!

*K. Hen.* Good my lord,  
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the inventory  
Of your best graces in your mind; the which  
You were now running o'er: you have scarce time  
To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span  
To keep your earthly audit: sure, in that  
I deem you an ill husband, and am glad  
To have you therein my companion.

*Wol.* Sir,  
For holy offices I have a time; a time  
To think upon the part of business which  
I bear i' the state; and nature does require  
Her times of preservation, which perforce  
I, her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,  
Must give my tendance to.

*K. Hen.* You have said well.

*Wol.* And ever may your highness yoke together,  
As I will lend you cause, my doing well  
With my well-saying!

*K. Hen.* 'Tis well said again;  
And 'tis a kind of good deed to say well:  
And yet words are no deeds. My father lov'd you:  
He said he did; and with his deed did crown  
His word upon you. Since I had my office  
I have kept you next my heart; have not alone  
Employ'd you where high profits might come home,  
But par'd my present havings to bestow  
My bounties upon you.

*Wol.* What should this mean?

[*Aside.*]



*Sur.* The Lord increase this business! [*Aside to others.*

*K. Hen.* Have I not made you  
The prime man of the state? I pray you, tell me  
If what I now pronounce you have found true:  
And, if you may confess it, say withal  
If you are bound to us or no. What say you?

*Wol.* My sovereign, I confess your royal graces,  
Shower'd on me daily, have been more than could  
My studied purposes requite; which went  
Beyond all man's endeavours:—my endeavours  
Have ever come too short of my desires,  
Yet fill'd with my abilities: mine own ends  
Have been mine so that evermore they pointed  
To the good of your most sacred person and  
The profit of the state. For your great graces  
Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I  
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks;  
My prayers to heaven for you; my loyalty,  
Which ever has and ever shall be growing,  
Till death, that winter, kill it.

*K. Hen.* Fairly answer'd;  
A loyal and obedient subject is  
Therein illustrated: the honour of it  
Does pay the act of it; as, i' the contrary,  
The foulness is the punishment. I presume  
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,  
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour, more  
On you than any; so your hand and heart,  
Your brain, and every function of your power,  
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,  
As 'twere in love's particular, be more  
To me, your friend, than any.

*Wol.* I do profess  
That for your highness' good I ever labour'd  
More than mine own; that am, have, and will be,—  
Though all the world should crack their duty to you,  
And throw it from their soul; though perils did  
Abound as thick as thought could make 'em, and  
Appear in forms more horrid,—yet my duty,  
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,  
Should the approach of this wild river break,  
And stand unshaken yours.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis nobly spoken:  
Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast,  
For you have seen him open't.—Read o'er this;

[*Giving him papers.*

And after, this: and then to breakfast with  
 What appetite you have.

*[Exit, frowning upon CARDINAL WOLSEY: the Nobles  
 throng after him, smiling and whispering.]*

*Wol.* What should this mean?

What sudden anger's this? how have I reap'd it?  
 He parted frowning from me, as if ruin  
 Leap'd from his eyes: so looks the chafed lion  
 Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;  
 Then makes him nothing. I must read this paper;  
 I fear, the story of his anger.—'Tis so;  
 This paper has undone me:—'tis the account  
 Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together  
 For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the popedom,  
 And fee my friends in Rome. O negligence,  
 Fit for a fool to fall by! What cross devil  
 Made me put this main secret in the packet  
 I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?  
 No new device to beat this from his brains?  
 I know 'twill stir him strongly; yet I know  
 A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune,  
 Will bring me off again.—What's this—*To the Pope?*  
 The letter, as I live, with all the business  
 I writ to 's holiness. Nay then, farewell!  
 I have touch'd the highest point of all my greatness;  
 And from that full meridian of my glory  
 I haste now to my setting: I shall fall  
 Like a bright exhalation in the evening,  
 And no man see me more.

*Re-enter the DUKES OF NORFOLK and SUFFOLK, the EARL OF  
 SURREY, and the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal: who commands  
 you

To render up the great seal presently  
 Into our hands; and to confine yourself  
 To Asher House, my Lord of Winchester's,  
 Till you hear further from his highness.

*Wol.* Stay,—

Where's your commission, lords? words cannot carry  
 Authority so weighty.

*Suf.* Who dare cross 'em,  
 Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly?

*Wol.* Till I find more than will or words to do it,—  
 I mean your malice,—know, officious lords,  
 I dare and must deny it. Now I feel

Of what coarse metal ye are moulded,—envy:  
 How eagerly ye follow my disgraces,  
 As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton  
 Ye appear in everything may bring my ruin!  
 Follow your envious courses, men of malice;  
 You have Christian warrant for them, and, no doubt,  
 In time will find their fit rewards. That seal,  
 You ask with such a violence, the king,—  
 Mine and your master,—with his own hand gave me;—  
 Bade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,  
 During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,  
 Tied it by letters-patents: now, who'll take it?

*Sur.* The king, that gave it.

*Wol.* It must be himself then.

*Sur.* Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

*Wol.* Proud lord, thou liest:

Within these forty hours Surrey durst better  
 Have burnt that tongue than said so.

*Sur.* Thy ambition,

Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land  
 Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:  
 The heads of all thy brother cardinals.—  
 With thee and all thy best parts bound together,—  
 Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your policy!  
 You sent me deputy for Ireland;  
 Far from his succour, from the king, from all  
 That might have mercy on the fault thou gav'st him;  
 Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,  
 Absolv'd him with an axe.

*Wol.* This, and all else

This talking lord can lay upon my credit,  
 I answer, is most false. The duke by law  
 Found his deserts: how innocent I was  
 From any private malice in his end,  
 His noble jury and foul cause can witness.  
 If I lov'd many words, lord, I should tell you  
 You have as little honesty as honour,  
 That in the way of loyalty and truth  
 Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
 Dare mate a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
 And all that love his follies.

*Sur.* By my soul,

Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou shouldst feel  
 My sword i' the life-blood of thee else.—My lords,  
 Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?  
 And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely,

To be thus jaded by a piece of scarlet,  
Farewell nobility; let his grace go forward,  
And dare us with his cap like larks.

*Wol.* All goodness  
Is poison to thy stomach.

*Sur.* Yes, that goodness  
Of gleaning all the land's wealth into one,  
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;  
The goodness of your intercepted packets  
You writ to the pope against the king: your goodness,  
Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious. —  
My Lord of Norfolk,—as you are truly noble,  
As you respect the common good, the state  
Of our despis'd nobility, our issues,  
Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen, —  
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles  
Collected from his life:—I'll startle you  
Worse than the sacring bell, when the brown wench  
Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How much, methinks, I could despise this man,  
But that I am bound in charity against it!

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in the king's hand:  
But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Wol.* So much fairer  
And spotless shall mine innocence arise,  
When the king knows my truth.

*Sur.* This cannot save you:  
I thank my memory I yet remember  
Some of these articles; and out they shall.  
Now, if you can blush and cry guilty, cardinal,  
You'll show a little honesty.

*Wol.* Speak on, sir;  
I dare your worst objections: if I blush,  
It is to see a nobleman want manners.

*Sur.* I'd rather want those than my head.—Have at you!  
First, that, without the king's assent or knowledge  
You wrought to be a legate; by which power  
You main'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

*Nor.* Then, that in all you writ to Rome, or else  
To foreign princes, *Ego et Rex meus*  
Was still inscrib'd; in which you brought the king  
To be your servant.

*Suf.* Then, that, without the knowledge  
Either of king or council, when you went  
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold  
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

*Sur.* Item, you sent a large commission  
To Gregory de Cassalis, to conclude,  
Without the king's will or the state's allowance,  
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

*Suf.* That, out of mere ambition, you have caus'd  
Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin.

*Sur.* Then, that you have sent innumerable substance,  
By what means got I leave to your own conscience,  
To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways  
You have for dignities; to the mere undoing  
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are,  
Which, since they are of you, and odious,  
I will not taint my mouth with.

*Cham.* O my lord,  
Press not a falling man too far! 'tis virtue:  
His faults lie open to the laws; let them,  
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see him  
So little of his great self.

*Sur.* I forgive him.

*Suf.* Lord cardinal, the king's further pleasure is,—  
Because all those things you have done of late,  
By your power legatine within this kingdom,  
Fall into the compass of a *præmunire*,—  
That therefore such a writ be sued against you;  
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,  
Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be  
Out of the king's protection:—this is my charge.

*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your meditations  
How to live better. For your stubborn answer  
About the giving back the great seal to us,  
The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall thank you.  
So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

[*Exeunt all but WOLSEY.*]

*Wol.* So farewell to the little good you bear me.  
Farewell, a long farewell, to all my greatness!  
This is the state of man: to-day he puts forth  
The tender leaves of hope; to-morrow blossoms,  
And bears his blushing honours thick upon him;  
The third day comes a frost, a killing frost,  
And,—when he thinks, good easy man, full surely  
His greatness is a-ripening,—nips his root,  
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventur'd,  
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,  
This many summers in a sea of glory;  
But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride  
At length broke under me; and now has left me,

Weary and old with service, to the mercy  
 Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me.  
 Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye:  
 I feel my heart new opened. O, how wretched  
 Is that poor man that hangs on prince's favours!  
 There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,  
 That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,  
 More pangs and fears than wars or women have:  
 And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,  
 Never to hope again.

*Enter CROMWELL, amazedly.*

Why, how now, Cromwell!

*Crom.* I have no power to speak, sir.

*Wol.* What, amaz'd

At my misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder  
 A great man should decline? Nay, an you weep,  
 I am fallen indeed.

*Crom.* How does your grace?

*Wol.* Why, well;

Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.  
 I know myself now; and I feel within me  
 A peace above all earthly dignities,  
 A still and quiet conscience. The king has cur'd me,  
 I humbly thank his grace; and from these shoulders,  
 These ruin'd pillars, out of pity, taken  
 A load would sink a navy,—too much honour:  
 O, 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden  
 Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven!

*Crom.* I am glad your grace has made that right use  
 of it.

*Wol.* I hope I have: I am able now, methinks,—  
 Out of a fortitude of soul I feel,—  
 To endure more miseries and greater far  
 Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer.  
 What news abroad?

*Crom.* The heaviest and the worst  
 Is your displeasure with the king.

*Wol.* God bless him!

*Crom.* The next is that Sir Thomas More is chosen  
 Lord Chancellor in your place.

*Wol.* That's somewhat sudden:

But he's a learned man. May he continue  
 Long in his highness' favour, and do justice,  
 For truth's sake and his conscience; that his bones,  
 When he has run his course and sleeps in blessings,

May have a tomb of orphans' tears wept on 'em!  
What more?

*Crom.* That Cranmer is return'd with welcome,  
Install'd Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.

*Wol.* That's news indeed.

*Crom.* Last, that the Lady Anne,  
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,  
This day was view'd in open as his queen,  
Going to chapel; and the voice is now  
Only about her coronation.

*Wol.* There was the weight that pull'd me down. O Crom-  
well,

The king has gone beyond me: all my glories  
In that one woman I have lost for ever:  
No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,  
Or gild again the noble troops that waited  
Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell;  
I am a poor fallen man, unworthy now  
To be thy lord and master: seek the king;  
That sun, I pray, may never set! I have told him  
What and how true thou art: he will advance thee;  
Some little memory of me will stir him,—  
I know his noble nature,—not to let  
Thy hopeful service perish too: good Cromwell,  
Neglect him not; make use now, and provide  
For thine own future safety.

*Crom.* O my lord,  
Must I then leave you? must I needs forego  
So good, so noble, and so true a master?  
Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,  
With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord.  
The king shall have my service; but my prayers  
For ever and for ever shall be yours.

*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear  
In all my miseries; but thou hast forc'd me,  
Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman.  
Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, Cromwell;  
And,—when I am forgotten, as I shall be,  
And sleep in dull cold marble, where no mention  
Of me more must be heard of,—say I taught thee;  
Say Wolsey,—that once trod the ways of glory,  
And sounded all the depths and shoals of honour,—  
Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;  
A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it.  
Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me.  
Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition:

By that sin fell the angels; how can man, then,  
 The image of his Maker, hope to win by it?  
 Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee;  
 Corruption wins not more than honesty.  
 Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,  
 To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear not:  
 Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,  
 Thy God's, and truth's; then, if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,  
 Thou fall'st a blessed martyr! Serve the king;  
 And,—pr'ythee, lead me in:  
 There take an inventory of all I have,  
 To the last penny; 'tis the king's: my robe,  
 And my integrity to heaven, is all  
 I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Cromwell!  
 Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal  
 I serv'd my king, he would not in mine age  
 Have left me naked to mine enemies.

*Crom.* Good sir, have patience.

*Wol.* So I have. Farewell

The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do dwell. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—*A Street in Westminster.*

*Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.*

1 *Gent.* You are well met once again.

2 *Gent.* So are you.

1 *Gent.* You come to take your stand here, and behold  
 The Lady Anne pass from her coronation?

2 *Gent.* 'Tis all my business. At our last encounter  
 The Duke of Buckingham came from his trial.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd sorrow;  
 This, general joy.

2 *Gent.* 'Tis well: the citizens,  
 I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds;  
 As, let 'em have their rights, they are ever forward,  
 In celebration of this day with shows,  
 Pageants, and sights of honour.

1 *Gent.* Never greater,  
 Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, sir.

2 *Gent.* May I be bold to ask what that contains,  
 That paper in your hand?



1 *Gent.* Yes; 'tis the list  
Of those that claim their offices this day,  
By custom of the coronation.

The Duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims  
To be high-steward; next, the Duke of Norfolk,  
He to be earl marshal: you may read the rest.

2 *Gent.* I thank you, sir; had I not known those customs,  
I should have been beholden to your paper.  
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine,  
The princess dowager? how goes her business?

1 *Gent.* That I can tell you too. The Archbishop  
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other  
Learned and reverend fathers of his order,  
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off  
From Amptill, where the princess lay; to which  
She was often cited by them, but appear'd not:  
And, to be short, for not appearance and  
The king's late scruple, by the main assent  
Of all these learned men, she was divorc'd,  
And the late marriage made of none effect:  
Since which she was remov'd to Kimbolton,  
Where she remains now sick.

2 *Gent.* Alas, good lady!—[*Trumpets.*  
The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is coming.

THE ORDER OF THE PROCESSION.

*A lively flourish of trumpets: then enter,*

1. Two Judges.
2. Lord Chancellor, with the purse and mace before him.
3. Choristers singing. *[Music.*
4. Mayor of London, bearing the mace. Then Garter, in his coat of arms, and on his head a gilt copper crown.
5. Marquis Dorset, bearing a sceptre of gold, on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With him, the Earl of Surrey, bearing the rod of silver with the dove, crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.
6. Duke of Suffolk, in his robe of estate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high-steward. With him, the Duke of Norfolk, with the rod of marshalship, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.
7. A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-ports; under it the Queen in her robe; her hair richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each side of her, the Bishops of London and Winchester.
8. The old Duchess of Norfolk, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the Queen's train.
9. Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain circlets of gold without flowers.

A royal train, believe me.—These I know:—  
Who's that that bears the sceptre?

1 *Gent.* Marquis Dorset:  
And that the Earl of Surrey, with the rod.

2 *Gent.* A bold brave gentleman. That should be  
The Duke of Suffolk?

1 *Gent.* 'Tis the same,—high-steward.

2 *Gent.* And that my Lord of Norfolk?

1 *Gent.*

Yes.

2 *Gent.*

Heaven bless thee!

[*Looking on the QUEEN.*]

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.—

Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel;

Our king has all the Indies in his arms,

And more and richer, when he strains that lady:

I cannot blame his conscience.

1 *Gent.* They that bear  
The cloth of honour over her are four barons  
Of the Cinque-ports.

2 *Gent.* Those men are happy; and so are all are near her.  
I take it, she that carries up the train  
Is that old noble lady, Duchess of Norfolk.

1 *Gent.* It is; and all the rest are countesses.

2 *Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are stars indeed;  
And sometimes falling ones.

1 *Gent.* No more of that.

[*Exit Procession, with a great flourish of trumpets.*]

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

God save you, sir! where have you been broiling?

3 *Gent.* Among the crowd i' the abbey; where a finger  
Could not be wedg'd in more: I am stifled  
With the mere rankness of their joy.

2 *Gent.* You saw  
The ceremony?

3 *Gent.* That I did.

1 *Gent.* How was it?

3 *Gent.* Well worth the seeing.

2 *Gent.* Good sir, speak it to us.

3 *Gent.* As well as I am able. The rich stream  
Of lords and ladies, having brought the queen  
To a prepar'd place in the choir, fell off  
A distance from her: while her grace sat down  
To rest awhile, some half an hour or so,  
In a rich chair of state, opposing freely  
The beauty of her person to the people.  
Believe me, sir, she is the goodliest woman  
That ever lay by man: which when the people  
Had the full view of, such a noise arose  
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,

As loud, and to as many tunes : hats, cloaks,—  
 Doublets, I think,—flew up; and had their faces  
 Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such joy  
 I never saw before. Great-bellied women,  
 That had not half a week to go, like rams  
 In the old time of war, would shake the press,  
 And make 'em reel before 'em. No man living  
 Could say, *This is my wife*, there; all were woven  
 So strangely in one piece.

2 *Gent.* But what follow'd?

3 *Gent.* At length her grace rose, and with modest  
 paces

Came to the altar; where she kneel'd, and, saintlike,  
 Cast her fair eyes to heaven, and pray'd devoutly.  
 Then rose again, and bow'd her to the people :  
 When by the Archbishop of Canterbury  
 She had all the royal makings of a queen ;  
 As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,  
 The rod, and bird of peace, and all such emblems  
 Laid nobly on her : which perform'd, the choir,  
 With all the choicest music of the kingdom,  
 Together sung *Te Deum*. So she parted,  
 And with the same full state pac'd back again  
 To York Place, where the feast is held.

1 *Gent.*

Sir,

You must no more call it York Place, that's past :  
 For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost :  
 'Tis now the king's, and call'd Whitehall.

3 *Gent.*

I know it;

But 'tis so lately alter'd that the old name  
 Is fresh about me.

2 *Gent.*

What two reverend bishops

Were those that went on each side of the queen?

3 *Gent.* Stokesly and Gardiner; the one of Winchester,—  
 Newly prefer'd from the king's secretary,—  
 The other, London.

2 *Gent.*

He of Winchester

Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,  
 The virtuous Cranmer.

3 *Gent.*

All the land knows that :

However, yet there is no great breach; when it comes,  
 Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him.

2 *Gent.* Who may that be, I pray you?

3 *Gent.*

Thomas Cromwell;

A man in much esteem with the king, and truly  
 A worthy friend.—The king

Has made him master o' the jewel-house,  
And one, already, of the privy council.

2 *Gent.* He will deserve more.

3 *Gent.*

Yes, without all doubt.—

Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which  
Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests:  
Something I can command. As I walk thither  
I'll tell ye more.

*Both.*

You may command us, sir.

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II.—*Kimbolton.*

*Enter* KATHARINE, *Dowager, sick; led between* GRIFFITH  
and PATIENCE.

*Grif.* How does your grace?

*Kath.*

O Griffith, sick to death!

My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,  
Willing to leave their burden. Reach a chair:—  
So,—now, methinks, I feel a little ease.

Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou ledd'st me,  
That the great child of honour, Cardinal Wolsey,  
Was dead?

*Grif.* Yes, madam; but I think your grace,  
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to't.

*Kath.* Pr'ythee, good Griffith, tell me how he died:  
If well, he stepp'd before me, happily,  
For my example.

*Grif.*

Well, the voice goes, madam:  
For after the stout Earl Northumberland  
Arrested him at York, and brought him forward,—  
As a man sorely tainted,—to his answer,  
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill  
He could not sit his mule.

*Kath.*

Alas, poor man!

*Grif.* At last, with easy roads, he came to Leicester,  
Lodg'd in the abbey; where the reverend abbot,  
With all his covent, honourably receiv'd him;  
To whom he gave these words,—*O, father abbot,*  
*An old man, broken with the storms of state,*  
*Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;*  
*Give him a little earth for charity!*

So went to bed; where eagerly his sickness  
Pursu'd him still: and three nights after this,  
About the hour of eight,—which he himself  
Foretold should be his last,—full of repentance,

Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,  
He gave his honours to the world again,  
His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.

*Kath.* So may he rest; his faults lie gently on him!  
Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak him,  
And yet with charity. He was a man  
Of an unbounded stomach, ever ranking  
Himself with princes; one that, by suggestion,  
Tied all the kingdom: simony was fair play;  
His own opinion was his law: i' the presence  
He would say untruths; and be ever double  
Both in his words and meaning: he was never,  
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful:  
His promises were, as he then was, mighty;  
But his performance, as he is now, nothing:  
Of his own body he was ill, and gave  
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble madam,  
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues  
We write in water. May it please your highness  
To hear me speak his good now!

*Kath.* Yes, good Griffith;  
I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,  
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to much honour from his cradle.  
He was a scholar, and a ripe and good one;  
Exceeding wise, fair-spoken, and persuading:  
Lofty and sour to them that lov'd him not;  
But to those men that sought him sweet as summer.  
And though he were unsatisfied in getting,—  
Which was a sin,—yet in bestowing, madam,  
He was most princely: ever witness for him  
Those twins of learning that he rais'd in you,  
Ipswich and Oxford! one of which fell with him,  
Unwilling to outlive the good that did it;  
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,  
So excellent in art, and still so rising,  
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.  
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;  
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,  
And found the blessedness of being little:  
And, to add greater honours to his age  
Than man could give him, he died fearing God.

*Kath.* After my death I wish no other herald,  
No other speaker of my living actions,

To keep mine honour from corruption,  
 But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.  
 Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,  
 With thy religious truth and modesty,  
 Now in his ashes honour: peace be with him!—  
 Patience, be near me still; and set me lower:  
 I have not long to trouble thee.—Good Griffith,  
 Cause the musicians play me that sad note  
 I nam'd my knell, whilst I sit meditating  
 On that celestial harmony I go to. [*Sad and solemn music.*]

*Grif.* She is asleep; good wench, let's sit down quiet,  
 For fear we wake her:—softly, gentle Patience.

**THE VISION.** *Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six Personages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads garlands of bays, and golden vizards on their faces; branches of bays or palm in their hands. They first conge unto her, then dance; and, at certain changes, the first two hold a spare garland over her head; at which the other four make reverent courtesies; then the two that held the garland deliver the same to the other next two, who observe the same order in their changes, and holding the garland over her head: which done, they deliver the same garland to the last two, who likewise observe the same order: at which,—as it were by inspiration,—she makes in her sleep signs of rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to heaven: and so in their dancing they vanish, carrying the garland with them. The music continues.*

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? Are ye all gone?  
 And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?

*Grif.* Madam, we are here.

*Kath.* It is not you I call for:  
 Saw ye none enter since I slept?

*Grif.* None, madam.

*Kath.* No? Saw you not, even now, a blessed troop  
 Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces  
 Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?  
 They promis'd me eternal happiness;  
 And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel  
 I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall,  
 Assuredly.

*Grif.* I am most joyful, madam, such good dreams  
 Possess your fancy.

*Kath.* Bid the music leave,  
 They are harsh and heavy to me. [*Music ceases.*]

*Pat.* Do you note  
 How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?  
 How long her face is drawn? how pale she looks,  
 And of an earthy cold? Mark you her eyes!

*Grif.* She is going, wench: pray, pray.

*Pat.* Heaven comfort her!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* An't like your grace,—

*Kath.* You are a saucy fellow:  
Deserve we no more reverence?

*Grif.* You are to blame,  
Knowing she will not lose her wonted greatness,  
To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel.

*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness' pardon;  
My haste made me unmannerly. There is staying  
A gentleman, sent from the king, to see you.

*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith: but this fellow  
Let me ne'er see again. [*Exeunt GRIFFITH and Messenger.*]

*Re-enter GRIFFITH, with CAPUCIUS.*

If my sight fail not,  
You should be lord ambassador from the emperor,  
My royal nephew, and your name Capucius.

*Cap.* Madam, the same,—your servant.

*Kath.* O, my lord,  
The times and titles now are alter'd strangely  
With me since first you knew me. But, I pray you,  
What is your pleasure with me?

*Cap.* Noble lady,  
First, mine own service to your grace; the next,  
The king's request that I would visit you;  
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by me  
Sends you his princely commendations,  
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.

*Kath.* O, my good lord, that comfort comes too late;  
'Tis like a pardon after execution:  
That gentle physic, given in time, had cur'd me;  
But now I am past all comforts here, but prayers.  
How does his highness?

*Cap.* Madam, in good health.

*Kath.* So may he ever do! and ever flourish,  
When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor name  
Banish'd the kingdom!—Patience, is that letter  
I caus'd you write yet sent away?

*Pat.* No, madam.

[*Giving it to KATHARINE.*]

*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver  
This to my lord the king.

*Cap.* Most willing, madam.

*Kath.* In which I have commended to his goodness  
The model of our chaste loves, his young daughter,—

The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on her!—  
 Beseeching him to give her virtuous breeding;  
 She is young, and of a noble modest nature,—  
 I hope she will deserve well;—and a little  
 To love her for her mother's sake, that lov'd him,  
 Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor petition  
 Is, that his noble grace would have some pity  
 Upon my wretched women, that so long  
 Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:  
 Of which there is not one, I dare avow,—  
 And now I should not lie,—but will deserve,  
 For virtue and true beauty of the soul,  
 For honesty and decent carriage,  
 A right good husband, let him be a noble;  
 And, sure, those men are happy that shall have them.  
 The last is, for my men,—they are the poorest,  
 But poverty could never draw 'em from me,—  
 That they may have their wages duly paid 'em,  
 And something over to remember me by:  
 If heaven had pleas'd to have given me longer life  
 And able means, we had not parted thus.  
 These are the whole contents:—and, good my lord,  
 By that you love the dearest in this world,  
 As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,  
 Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the king  
 To do me this last right.

*Cap.* By heaven, I will,

Or let me lose the fashion of a man!

*Kath.* I thank you, honest lord. Remember me  
 In all humility unto his highness:

Say his long trouble now is passing

Out of this world; tell him, in death I bless'd him,

For so I will.—Mine eyes grow dim.—Farewell,

My lord.—Griffith, farewell.—Nay, Patience,

You must not leave me yet: I must to bed;

Call in more women.—When I am dead, good wench,

Let me be us'd with honour: strew me over

With maiden flowers, that all the world may know

I was a chaste wife to my grave: embalm me,

Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet like

A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.

I can no more.

[*Exeunt, leading KATHARINE*



## ACT V.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *A Gallery in the Palace.**Enter GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, a Page with a torch before him.**Gar.* It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?*Boy.* It has struck.*Gar.* These should be hours for necessities,  
Not for delights; times to repair our nature  
With comforting repose, and not for us  
To waste these times.*Enter SIR THOMAS LOVELL.*

Good hour of night, Sir Thomas!

Whither so late?

*Lov.* Came you from the king, my lord?*Gar.* I did, Sir Thomas; and left him at primero  
With the Duke of Suffolk.*Lov.* I must to him too,  
Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.*Gar.* Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's the matter?  
It seems you are in haste: an if there be  
No great offence belongs to't, give your friend  
Some touch of your late business: affairs that walk,—  
As they say spirits do,—at midnight, have  
In them a wilder nature than the business  
That seeks despatch by day.*Lov.* My lord, I love you;  
And durst commend a secret to your ear  
Much weightier than this work. The queen's in labour,  
They say in great extremity; and fear'd  
She'll with the labour end.*Gar.* The fruit she goes with  
I pray for heartily, that it may find  
Good time, and live: but for the stock, Sir Thomas,  
I wish it grubb'd up now.*Lov.* Methinks I could  
Cry thee amen; and yet my conscience says  
She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does  
Deserve our better wishes.*Gar.* But, sir, sir,—  
Hear me, Sir Thomas: you are a gentleman  
Of mine own way; I know you wise, religious;  
And, let me tell you, it will ne'er be well.—

"Twill not, Sir Thomas Lovel, take't of me,—  
Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and she,  
Sleep in their graves.

*Lov.* Now, sir, you speak of two  
The most remark'd i' the kingdom. As for Cromwell,—  
Beside that of the jewel-house, he's made master  
O' the rolls, and the king's secretary; further, sir,  
Stands in the gap and trade of more preferments,  
With which the time will load him. The archbishop  
Is the king's hand and tongue; and who dare speak  
One syllable against him?

*Gar.* Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,  
There are that dare; and I myself have ventur'd  
To speak my mind of him: and indeed this day,  
Sir,—I may tell it you,—I think I have  
Incens'd the lords o' the council, that he is,—  
For so I know he is, they know he is,—  
A most arch heretic, a pestilence  
That does infect the land: with which they moved,  
Have broken with the king; who hath so far  
Given ear to our complaint,—of his great grace  
And princely care; foreseeing those fell mischiefs  
Our reasons laid before him,—hath commanded  
To-morrow morning to the council-board  
He be convented. He's a rank weed, Sir Thomas,  
And we must root him out. From your affairs  
I hinder you too long: good night, Sir Thomas.

*Lov.* Many good nights, my lord: I rest your servant.

*[Exeunt GARDINER and Page.]*

*As LOVELL is going out, enter the KING and the DUKE OF  
SUFFOLK.*

*K. Hen.* Charles, I will play no more to-night;  
My mind's not on't; you are too hard for me.

*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.

*K. Hen.* But little, Charles;  
Nor shall not, when my fancy's on my play.—  
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news?

*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her  
What you commanded me, but by her woman  
I sent your message; who return'd her thanks  
In the greatest humbleness, and desir'd your highness  
Most heartily to pray for her.

*K. Hen.* What say'st thou, ha?  
To pray for her? what, is she crying out?

*Lov.* So said her woman: and that her sufferance made  
Almost each pang a death.

*K. Hen.* Alas, good lady!

*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burden, and  
With gentle travail, to the gladding of  
Your highness with an heir!

*K. Hen.* 'Tis midnight, Charles;  
Prythee, to bed; and in thy prayers remember  
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone;  
For I must think of that which company  
Will not be friendly to.

*Suf.* I wish your highness  
A quiet night; and my good mistress will  
Remember in my prayers.

*K. Hen.* Charles, good-night.

[*Exit* SUFFOLK.]

*Enter* SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

Well, sir, what follows?

*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the archbishop,  
As you commanded me.

*K. Hen.* Ha! Canterbury?

*Den.* Ay, my good lord.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis true: where is he, Denny?

*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.*

Bring him to us.

[*Exit* DENNY.]

*Lov.* This is about that which the bishop spake:  
I am happily come hither. [*Aside.*]

*Re-enter* DENNY, with CRANMER.

*K. Hen.* Avoid the gallery.

[*LOVELL seems to stay.*]

Ha! I have said. Be gone.

What!

[*Exeunt* LOVELL and DENNY.]

*Cran.* I am fearful:--wherefore frowns he thus?

'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well. [*Aside.*]

*K. Hen.* How now, my lord? you do desire to know  
Wherefore I sent for you.

*Cran.* It is my duty  
To attend your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Pray you, arise,  
My good and gracious Lord of Canterbury.

Come, you and I must walk a turn together;

I have news to tell you: come, come, give me your hand.

Ah, my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,

And am right sorry to repeat what follows:  
 I have, and most unwillingly, of late  
 Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,  
 Grievous complaints of you; which, being consider'd,  
 Have mov'd us and our council that you shall  
 This morning come before us; where, I know,  
 You cannot with such freedom purge yourself  
 But that, till further trial in those charges  
 Which will require your answer, you must take  
 Your patience to you, and be well contented  
 To make your house our Tower: you a brother of us,  
 It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness  
 Would come against you.

*Cran.* I humbly thank your highness;  
 And am right glad to catch this good occasion  
 Most thoroughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff  
 And corn shall fly asunder: for I know  
 There's none stands under more calumnious tongues  
 Than I myself, poor man.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, good Canterbury:  
 Thy truth and thy integrity is rooted  
 In us, thy friend: give me thy hand, stand up:  
 Pr'ythee, let's walk. Now, by my holy-dame,  
 What manner of man are you? My lord, I look'd  
 You would have given me your petition that  
 I should have ta'en some pains to bring together  
 Yourself and your accusers; and to have heard you,  
 Without indurance, further.

*Cran.* Most dread liege,  
 The good I stand on is my truth and honesty:  
 If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,  
 Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh not,  
 Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing  
 What can be said against me.

*K. Hen.* Know you not  
 How your state stands i' the world, with the whole world?  
 Your enemies are many, and not small; their practices  
 Must bear the same proportion; and not ever  
 The justice and the truth o' the question carries  
 The due o' the verdict with it: at what ease  
 Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt  
 To swear against you? such things have been done.  
 You are potently oppos'd; and with a malice  
 Of as great size. Ween you of better luck,  
 I mean in perjurd witness, than your Master,  
 Whose minister you are, whiles here he liv'd

Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to;  
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,  
And woe your own destruction.

*Cran.* God and your majesty  
Protect mine innocence, or I fall into  
The trap is laid for me!

*K. Hen.* Be of good cheer;  
They shall no more prevail than we give way to.  
Keep comfort to you; and this morning see  
You do appear before them: if they shall chance,  
In charging you with matters, to commit you,  
The best persuasions to the contrary  
Fail not to use, and with what vehemency  
The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties  
Will render you no remedy, this ring  
Deliver them, and your appeal to us  
There make before them.—Look, the good man weeps!  
He's honest, on mine honour. God's bless'd mother!  
I swear he is true-hearted; and a soul  
None better in my kingdom.—Get you gone,  
And do as I have bid you. [*Exit CRANMER.*—He has stran-  
His language in his tears. [gled

*Enter an Old Lady.*

*Gent.* [*within.*] Come back: what mean you?

*Old L.* I'll not come back; the tidings that I bring  
Will make my boldness manners.—Now, good angels  
Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person  
Under their blessed wings!

*K. Hen.* Now, by thy looks  
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?  
Say ay; and of a boy.

*Old L.* Ay, ay, my liege;  
And of a lovely boy: the God of heaven  
Both now and ever bless her!—'tis a girl,—  
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen  
Desires your visitation, and to be  
Acquainted with this stranger; 'tis as like you  
As cherry is to cherry.

*K. Hen.* Lovell,—

*Re-enter LOVELL.*

*Lov.* Sir?

*K. Hen.* Give her an hundred marks. I'll to the queen.

*Old L.* An hundred marks! By this light, I'll ha' more. [*Exit.*

An ordinary groom is for such payment.  
 I will have more, or scold it out of him.  
 Said I for this, the girl was like to him?  
 I will have more, or else unsay't; and now,  
 While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue.

[*Exeunt.*]SCENE II.—*Lobby before the Council Chamber.*

*Enter* CRANMER; Servants, Door-keeper, &c., *attending.*

*Cran.* I hope I am not too late; and yet the gentleman  
 That was sent to me from the council pray'd me  
 To make great haste. All fast? what means this?—Ho!  
 Who waits there?—Sure, you know me?

*D. Keep.* Yes, my lord;  
 But yet I cannot help you.

*Cran.* Why?

*D. Keep.* Your grace must wait till you be call'd for.

*Enter* DOCTOR BUTTS.

*Cran.*

So.

*Butts.* [*aside.*] This is a piece of malice. I am glad  
 I came this way so happily: the king  
 Shall understand it presently.

[*Exit.*]

*Cran.* [*aside.*] 'Tis Butts,  
 The king's physician: as he pass'd along,  
 How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me!  
 Pray, heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For certain,  
 This is of purpose laid by some that hate me,—  
 God turn their hearts! I never sought their malice,—  
 To quench mine honour: they would shame to make me  
 Wait else at door, a fellow-counsellor,  
 'Mong boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their pleasures  
 Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*The KING and BUTTS appear at a window above.*

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest sight,—

*K. Hen.* What's that, Butts?

*Butts.* I think your highness saw this many day.

*K. Hen.* Body o' me, where is it?

*Butts.* There, my lord:

The high promotion of his grace of Canterbury;  
 Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuivants,  
 Pages, and footboys.

*K. Hen.* Ha! 'tis he indeed:  
 Is this the honour they do one another?

'Tis well there's one above 'em yet. I had thought  
 They had parted so much honesty among 'em,—  
 At least good manners,—as not thus to suffer  
 A man of his place, and so near our favour,  
 To dance attendance on their lordships' pleasures,  
 And at the door too, like a post with packets.  
 By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:  
 Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain close;  
 We shall hear more anon.

[*Exeunt.*]

*The Council Chamber.*

*Enter the Lord Chancellor, the DUKE OF SUFFOLK, the  
 DUKE OF NORFOLK, EARL OF SURREY, Lord Chamberlain,  
 GARDINER, and CROMWELL. The Chancellor places him-  
 self at the upper end of the table on the left hand; a seat  
 being left void above him, as for the ARCHBISHOP OF CAN-  
 TERBURY. The rest seat themselves in order on each side.  
 CROMWELL at the lower end, as Secretary.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master secretary:  
 Why are we met in council?

*Crom.* Please your honours,  
 The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury.

*Gar.* Has he had knowledge of it?

*Crom.* Yes.

*Nor.*

Who waits there?

*D. Keep.* Without, my noble lords?

*Gar.* Yes.

*D. Keep.*

My lord archbishop;

And has done half an hour, to know your pleasures.

*Chan.* Let him come in.

*D. Keep.*

Your grace may enter now.

[*CRAN. approaches the Council-table.*]

*Chan.* My good lord archbishop, I am very sorry  
 To sit here at this present, and behold  
 That chair stand empty: but we all are men,  
 In our own natures frail, and capable  
 Of our flesh; few are angels: out of which frailty  
 And want of wisdom, you, that best should teach us,  
 Have misdemean'd yourself, and not a little,  
 Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling  
 The whole realm, by your teaching and your chaplains,—  
 For so we are inform'd,—with new opinions,  
 Divers and dangerous; which are heresies,  
 And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

*Gar.* Which reformation must be sudden too,

My noble lords; for those that tame wild horses  
 Pace 'em not in their hands to make 'em gentle,  
 But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and spur 'em,  
 Till they obey the manage. If we suffer,—  
 Out of our easiness, and childish pity  
 To one man's honour,—this contagious sickness,  
 Farewell all physic: and what follows then?  
 Commotions, uproars, with a general taint  
 Of the whole state: as, of late days, our neighbours.  
 The upper Germany, can dearly witness,  
 Yet freshly pitied in our memories.

*Cran.* My good lords, hitherto, in all the progress  
 Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,  
 And with no little study, that my teaching  
 And the strong course of my authority  
 Might go one way, and safely; and the end  
 Was ever, to do well: nor is there living,—  
 I speak it with a single heart, my lords,—  
 A man that more detests, more stirs against,  
 Both in his private conscience and his place,  
 Defacers of a public peace, than I do.  
 Pray heaven, the king may never find a heart  
 With less allegiance in it! Men that make  
 Envy and crooked malice nourishment  
 Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lordships  
 That, in this case of justice, my accusers,  
 Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,  
 And freely urge against me.

*Suf.* Nay, my lord,  
 That cannot be: you are a counsellor,  
 And, by that virtue, no man dare accuse you.

*Gar.* My lord, because we have business of more  
 moment,  
 We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,  
 And our consent, for better trial of you,  
 From hence you be committed to the Tower;  
 Where, being but a private man again,  
 You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,  
 More than, I fear, you are provided for.

*Cran.* Ah, my good Lord of Winchester, I thank you;  
 You are always my good friend; if your will pass  
 I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,  
 You are so merciful: I see your end,—  
 'Tis my undoing: love and meekness, lord,  
 Become a churchman better than ambition:  
 Win straying souls with modesty again,



Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,  
Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,  
I make as little doubt as you do conscience  
In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,  
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a sectary,  
That's the plain truth: your painted gloss discovers,  
To men that understand you, words and weakness.

*Crom.* My Lord of Winchester, you are a little.  
By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,  
However faulty, yet should find respect  
For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty  
To load a falling man.

*Gar.* Good master secretary,  
I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst  
Of all this table, say so.

*Crom.* Why, my lord?

*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer  
Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

*Crom.* Not sound?

*Gar.* Not sound, I say.

*Crom.* Would you were half so honest!  
Men's prayers then would seek you, not their fears.

*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.

*Crom.* Do.

Remember your bold life too.

*Chan.* This is too much;

Forbear, for shame, my lords.

*Gar.* I have done.

*Crom.* And I.

*Chan.* Then thus for you, my lord: it stands agreed,  
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith  
You be conveyed to the Tower a prisoner;  
There to remain till the king's further pleasure  
Be known unto us:—are you all agreed, lords?

*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,  
But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

*Gar.* What other  
Would you expect? You are strangely troublesome.—  
Let some o' the guard be ready there.

*Enter Guard.*

*Cran.* For me?  
Must I go like a traitor thither?

*Gar.* Receive him,  
And see him safe i' the Tower.

*Cran.* Stay, good my lords,  
I have a little yet to say. Look there, my lords;  
By virtue of that ring I take my cause  
Out of the gripes of eruel men, and give it  
To a most noble judge, the king my master.

*Cham.* This is the king's ring.

*Sur.* 'Tis no counterfeit.

*Suf.* 'Tis the right ring, by heaven: I told ye all,  
When we first put this dangerous stone a-rolling,  
'Twould fall upon ourselves.

*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,  
The king will suffer but the little finger  
Of this man to be vex'd?

*Chan.* 'Tis now too certain:  
How much more is his life in value with him?  
Would I were fairly out on't!

*Crom.* My mind gave me,  
In seeking tales and informations  
Against this man,—whose honesty the devil  
And his disciples only envy at,—  
Ye blew the fire that burns ye: now have at ye.

*Enter the KING, frowning on them; he takes his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven  
In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;  
Not only good and wise, but most religious:  
One that, in all obedience, makes the church  
The chief aim of his honour; and, to strengthen  
That holy duty, out of dear respect,  
His royal self in judgment comes to hear  
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

*K. Hen.* You were ever good at sudden commendations,  
Bishop of Winchester. But know, I come not  
To hear such flattery now, and in my presence;  
They are too thin and bare to hide offences.  
To me you cannot reach: you play the spaniel,  
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me;  
But whatsoe'er thou tak'st me for, I am sure  
Thou hast a cruel nature, and a bloody.—  
Good man [*to CRANMER*], sit down. Now let me see the  
proudest,  
He that dares most, but wag his finger at thee  
By all that's holy, he had better starve  
Than but once think this place becomes thee not.

*Sur.* May it please your grace,—

*K. Hen.* No, sir, it does not please me,  
I had thought I had had men of some understanding  
And wisdom of my council; but I find none.  
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,  
This good man,—few of you deserve that title,—  
This honest man, wait like a lousy footboy  
At chamber door? and one as great as you are?  
Why, what a shame was this! Did my commission  
Bid ye so far forget yourselves? I gave ye  
Power as he was a counsellor to try him,  
Not as a groom: there's some of ye, I see,  
More out of malice than integrity,  
Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean;  
Which ye shall never have while I live.

*Chan.* Thus far,  
My most dread sovereign, may it like your grace  
To let my tongue excuse all. What was purpos'd  
Concerning his imprisonment was rather,—  
If there be faith in men,—meant for his trial,  
And fair purgation to the world, than malice,—  
I'm sure in me.

*K. Hen.* Well, well, my lords, respect him;  
Take him, and use him well, he's worthy of it.  
I will say thus much for him,—if a prince  
May be beholding to a subject, I  
Am, for his love and service, so to him.  
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him:  
Be friends, for shame, my lords!—My Lord of Canterbury,  
I have a suit which you must not deny me;  
That is, a fair young maid that yet wants baptism,  
You must be godfather, and answer for her.

*Cran.* The greatest monarch now alive may glory  
In such an honour: how may I deserve it,  
That am a poor and humble subject to you?

*K. Hen.* Come, come, my lord, you'd spare your spoons:  
you shall have  
Two noble partners with you: the old Duchess of Norfolk  
And Lady Marquis Dorset: will these please you?  
Once more, my Lord of Winchester, I charge you,  
Embrace and love this man.

*Gar.* With a true heart  
And brother-love I do it.

*Cran.* And let heaven  
Witness how dear I hold this confirmation. [heart

*K. Hen.* Good man, those joyful tears show thy true

The common voice, I see, is verified  
 Of thee, which says thus,—*Do my Lord of Canterbury*  
*A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever.*—  
 Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long  
 To have this young one made a Christian.  
 As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;  
 So I grow stronger, you more honour gain.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Palace Yard.*

*Noise and tumult within. Enter Porter and his Man.*

*Port.* You'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals: do you take the court for Paris garden? ye rude slaves, leave your gaping.

[*Within.*] Good master porter, I belong to the larder.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, you rogue! is this a place to roar in?—Fetch me a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones: these are but switches to 'em.—I'll scratch your heads: you must be seeing christenings? do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals?

*Man.* Pray, sir, be patient: 'tis as much impossible, Unless we sweep 'em from the door with cannons,— To scatter 'em as 'tis to make 'em sleep  
 On May-day morning; which will never be:

We may as well push against Paul's as stir 'em.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd?

*Man.* Alas, I know not; how gets the tide in? As much as one sound cudgel of four foot,— You see the poor remainder,—could distribute,  
 I made no spare, sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, sir.

*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand, To mow 'em down before me: but if I spar'd any That had a head to hit, either young or old, He or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker, Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again; And that I would not for a cow, God save her!

[*Within.*] Do you hear, master porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good master puppy.— Keep the door close, sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock 'em down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is

at door! On my Christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand: here will be father, godfather, and all together.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for, o' my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in's nose; all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other penance: that fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me; he stands there, like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pinked porringer fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I miss'd the meteor once, and hit that woman, who cried out *Clubs!* when I might see from far some forty trunchcoons draw to her succour, which were the hope of the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place: at length they came to the broomstaff to me; I defied 'em still: when suddenly a file of boys behind 'em, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let 'em win the work: the devil was amongst 'em, I think, surely.

*Port.* These are the youths that thunder at a play-house and fight for bitten apples; that no audience, but the Tribulation of Tower-hill or the limbs of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of them in *Limbo Patrum*, and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two beadles that is to come.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Mercy o' me, what a multitude are here! They grow still too; from all parts they are coming, As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters, These lazy knaves?—Ye have made a fine hand, fellows. There's a trim rabble let in: are all these Your faithful friends o' the suburbs? We shall have Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies, When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An't please your honour,  
We are but men; and what so many may do,  
Not being torn a pieces, we have done:  
An army cannot rule 'em.

*Cham.* As I live,  
If the king blame me for't, I'll lay ye all  
By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads  
Clap round fines for neglect: you're lazy knaves;

And here ye lie baiting of bombard, when  
 Ye should do service. Hark! the trumpets sound;  
 They are come already from the christening:  
 Go, break among the press, and find a way out  
 To let the troop pass fairly; or I'll find  
 A Marshalsea shall hold you play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princess.

*Man.* You great fellow,  
 Stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You i' the camlet, get up o' the rail;  
 I'll pick you o'er the pales else. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*The Palace.*

*Enter trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen, Lord Mayor, Garter, CRANMER, DUKE OF NORFOLK, with his marshal's staff, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing great standing-bowls for the christening gifts; then four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the DUCHESS OF NORFOLK, godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c. Train borne by a Lady; then follows the MARCHIONESS OF DORSET, the other godmother, and Ladies. The troop pass once about the stage, and Garter speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven, from thy endless goodness, send prosperous life, long, and ever-happy, to the high and mighty princess of England, Elizabeth!

*Flourish. Enter KING and Train.*

*Cran.* [*kneeling.*] And to your royal grace and the good queen,  
 My noble partners and myself thus pray;—  
 All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,  
 Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy,  
 May hourly fall upon ye!

*K. Hen.* Thank you, good lord archbishop  
 What is her name?

*Cran.* Elizabeth.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, lord.—

[*The KING kisses the child.*

With this kiss take my blessing: God protect thee!  
 Into whose hand I give thy life.

*Cran.* Amen.

*K. Hen.* My noble gossips, ye have been too prodigal.  
 I thank ye heartily; so shall this lady,  
 When she has so much English.

*Cran.* Let me speak, sir,  
 For heaven now bids me; and the words I utter  
 Let none think flattery, for they'll find 'em truth.  
 This royal infant,—Heaven still move about her!—  
 Though in her cradle, yet now promises  
 Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,  
 Which time shall bring to ripeness: she shall be,—  
 But few now living can behold that goodness,—  
 A pattern to all princes living with her,  
 And all that shall succeed: Saba was never  
 More covetous of wisdom and fair virtue  
 Than this pure soul shall be: all princely graces,  
 That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,  
 With all the virtues that attend the good,  
 Shall still be doubled on her: truth shall nurse her,  
 Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her:  
 She shall be lov'd and fear'd: her own shall bless her;  
 Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn,  
 And hang their heads with sorrow: good grows with her:  
 In her days every man shall eat in safety,  
 Under his own vine, what he plants; and sing  
 The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours:  
 God shall be truly known; and those about her  
 From her shall read the perfect ways of honour,  
 And by those claim their greatness, not by blood.  
 Nor shall this peace sleep with her: but as when  
 The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix,  
 Her ashes new create another heir,  
 As great in admiration as herself;  
 So shall she leave her blessedness to one,—  
 When heaven shall call her from this cloud of darkness,—  
 Who from the sacred ashes of her honour  
 Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,  
 And so stand fix'd: peace, plenty, love, truth, terror,  
 That were the servants to this chosen infant,  
 Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him:  
 Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine,  
 His honour and the greatness of his name  
 Shall be, and make new nations: he shall flourish,  
 And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches  
 To all the plains about him:—our children's children  
 Shall see this and bless Heaven.

*K. Hen.*

Thou speakest wonders.

*Cran.* She shall be, to the happiness of England,  
 An aged princess; many days shall see her,  
 And yet no day without a deed to crown it.

Would I had known no more! but she must die,  
 She must, the saints must have her,—yet a virgin;  
 A most unspotted lily shall she pass  
 To the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.

*K. Hen.* O lord archbishop,  
 Thou hast made me now a man; never, before  
 This happy child, did I get anything:  
 This oracle of comfort has so pleas'd me  
 That when I am in heaven I shall desire  
 To see what this child does, and praise my Maker.—  
 I thank ye all.—To you, my good lord mayor,  
 And you, good brethren, I am much beholding;  
 I have received much honour by your presence,  
 And ye shall find me thankful.—Lead the way, lords:—  
 Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye,  
 She will be sick else. This day, no man think  
 Has business at his house; for all shall stay:  
 This little one shall make it holiday.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

#### EPILOGUE.

'Tis ten to one this play can never please  
 All that are here: some come to take their ease,  
 And sleep an act or two; but those we fear,  
 We have frighted with our trumpets; so, 'tis clear,  
 They'll say 'tis naught: others to hear the city  
 Abus'd extremely, and to cry,—*That's witty!*  
 Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,  
 All the expected good we're like to hear  
 For this play at this time, is only in  
 The merciful construction of good women;  
 For such a one we show'd 'em: if they smile,  
 And say 'twill do, I know, within awhile  
 All the best men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,  
 If they hold when their ladies bid 'em clap.



**TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.**

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

---

PRIAM, *King of Troy.*

HECTOR,  
TROILUS,  
PARIS,  
DEIPHOBUS,  
HELENUS, } *his Sons.*

MARGARELON, *a bastard Son of PRIAM.*

ÆNEAS,  
ANTENOR, } *Trojan Commanders.*

CALCHAS, *a Trojan Priest, taking part with the Greeks.*

PANDARUS, *Uncle to CRESSIDA.*

AGAMEMNON, *the Grecian General.*

MENELAUS, *his Brother.*

ACHILLES,  
AJAX,  
ULYSSES,  
NESTOR,  
DIOMEDES,  
PATROCLUS, } *Grecian Commanders.*

THERSITES, *a deformed and scurrilous Grecian.*

ALEXANDER, *Servant to CRESSIDA.*

Servant to TROILUS.

Servant to PARIS.

Servant to DIOMEDES.

HELEN, *Wife to MENELAUS.*

ANDROMACHE, *Wife to HECTOR.*

CASSANDRA, *Daughter to PRIAM, a Prophetess.*

CRESSIDA, *Daughter to CALCHAS.*

Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE,—TROY, and the Grecian Camp before it.

## TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.

---

### PROLOGUE.

In Troy, there lies the scene. From isles of Greece  
The princes orgulous, their high blood chaf'd,  
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,  
Fraught with the ministers and instruments  
Of cruel war: sixty and nine, that wore  
Their crownets regal, from the Athenian bay  
Put forth toward Phrygia: and their vow is made  
To ransack Troy; within whose strong immures  
The ravish'd Helen, Menelaus' queen,  
With wanton Paris sleeps; and that's the quarrel.  
To Tenedos they come;  
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge  
Their warlike fraughtage: now on Dardan plains  
The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch  
Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city,  
Dardan, and Tymbria, Helias, Chetas, Troien,  
And Antenorides, with massy staples  
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,  
Sperr up the sons of Troy.  
Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits,  
On one and other side, Trojan and Greek,  
Sets all on hazard:—and hither am I come  
A prologue arm'd,—but not in confidence  
Of author's pen or actor's voice; but suited  
In like conditions as our argument,—  
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play  
Leaps o'er the vaunt and firstlings of those broils,  
Beginning in the middle; starting thence away  
To what may be digested in a play.  
Like, or find fault; do as your pleasures are;  
Now good or bad, 'tis but the chance of war.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—TROY. *Before PRIAM'S Palace.*

*Enter TROIILUS armed, and PANDARUS.*

*Tro.* Call here my varlet; I'll unarm again:  
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,  
That find such cruel battle here within?  
Each Trojan that is master of his heart,  
Let him to field; Troilus, alas! hath none.

*Pan.* Will this gear ne'er be mended?

*Tro.* The Greeks are strong, and skilful to their strength,  
Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness valiant;  
But I am weaker than a woman's tear,  
Tamer than sleep, fonder than ignorance,  
Less valiant than the virgin in the night,  
And skillless as unpractis'd infancy.

*Pan.* Well, I have told you enough of this: for my part,  
I'll not meddle nor make no further. He that will have a  
cake out of the wheat must needs tarry the grinding.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the grinding; but you must tarry the bolting.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the bolting; but you must tarry the leavening.

*Tro.* Still have I tarried.

*Pan.* Ay, to the leavening; but here's yet in the word  
*hereafter*, the kneading, the making of the cake, the heating  
of the oven, and the baking; nay, you must stay the cooling  
too, or you may chance to burn your lips.

*Tro.* Patience herself, what goddess e'er she be,  
Doth lesser blench at sufferance than I do.

At Priam's royal table do I sit;  
And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts,—  
So, traitor!—when she comes!—When is she thence?

*Pan.* Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw  
her look, or any woman else.

*Tro.* I was about to tell thee,—when my heart,  
As wedged with a sigh, would rive in twain;  
Lest Hector or my father should perceive me,  
I have,—as when the sun doth light a storm,—  
Buried this sigh in wrinkle of a smile:  
But sorrow that is couch'd in seeming gladness  
Is like that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

*Pan.* An her hair were not somewhat darker than

Helen's,—well, go to,—there were no more comparison between the women,—but, for my part, she is my kinswoman; I would not, as they term it, praise her,—but I would somebody had heard her talk yesterday, as I did. I will not dispraise your sister Cassandra's wit; but,—

*Tro.* O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus,—  
When I do tell thee there my hopes lie drown'd,  
Reply not in how many fathoms deep  
They lie indrench'd. I tell thee, I am mad  
In Cressid's love: thou answer'st, she is fair;  
Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart  
Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice;  
Handlest in thy discourse, O, that her hand,  
In whose comparison all whites are ink,  
Writing their own reproach; to whose soft seizure  
The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense  
Hard as the palm of ploughman!—This thou tell'st me,  
As true thou tell'st me, when I say I love her;  
But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,  
Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me  
The knife that made it.

*Pan.* I speak no more than truth.

*Tro.* Thou dost not speak so much.

*Pan.* Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be as she is: if she be fair, 'tis the better for her; an she be not, she has the mends in her own hands.

*Tro.* Good Pandarus,—how now, Pandarus!

*Pan.* I have had my labour for my travail; ill-thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you: gone between and between, but small thanks for my labour.

*Tro.* What, art thou angry, Pandarus? what, with me?

*Pan.* Because she is kin to me, therefore she 's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday as Helen is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not an she were a blackamoor; 'tis all one to me.

*Tro.* Say I, she is not fair?

*Pan.* I do not care whether you do or no. She 's a fool to stay behind her father; let her to the Greeks; and so I'll tell her the next time I see her: for my part, I'll meddle nor make no more in the matter.

*Tro.* Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Not I.

*Tro.* Sweet Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Pray you, speak no more to me: I will leave all  
as I found it, and there an end. [Exit. An alarum.

*Tro.* Peace, you ungracious clamours! peace, rude sounds!

Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be fair,  
 When with your blood you daily paint her thus.  
 I cannot fight upon this argument;  
 It is too starv'd a subject for my sword.  
 But Pandarus,—O gods, how do you plague me!  
 I cannot come to Cressid but by Pandar;  
 And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo  
 As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit.  
 Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love,  
 What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we?  
 Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl:  
 Between our Ilium and where she resides  
 Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood;  
 Ourself the merchant; and this sailing Pandar  
 Our doubtful hope, our convoy, and our bark.

*Alarum. Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* How now, Prince Troilus! wherefore not afield?

*Tro.* Because not there: this woman's answer sorts,  
 For womanish it is to be from thence.  
 What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?

*Æne.* That Paris is returned home, and hurt.

*Tro.* By whom, Æneas?

*Æne.* Troilus, by Menelaus.

*Tro.* Let Paris bleed: 'tis but a scar to scorn;  
 Paris is gor'd with Menelaus' horn. [*Alarum.*]

*Æne.* Hark, what good sport is out of town to-day!

*Tro.* Better at home, if *would I might* were *may*.—

But to the sport abroad;—are you bound thither?

*Æne.* In all swift haste.

*Tro.* Come, go we, then, together.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—TROY. *A Street.*

*Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER.*

*Cres.* Who were those went by?

*Alex.* Queen Hecuba and Helen.

*Cres.* And whither go they?

*Alex.* Up to the eastern tower,

Whose height commands as subject all the vale,

To see the battle. Hector, whose patience

Is as a virtue fix'd, to-day was mov'd:

He chid Andromache, and struck his armourer;

And, like as there were husbandry in war,

Before the sun rose he was harness'd light,  
 And to the field goes he; where every flower  
 Did, as a prophet, weep what it foresaw  
 In Hector's wrath.

*Cres.* What was his cause of anger?

*Alex.* The noise goes, this: there is among the Greeks  
 A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;  
 They call him Ajax.

*Cres.* Good; and what of him?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man *per se*,  
 And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men,—unless they are drunk, sick, or have  
 no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many beasts of their  
 particular additions: he is as valiant as the lion, churlish as  
 the bear, slow as the elephant: a man into whom nature  
 hath so crowded humours that his valour is crushed into  
 folly, his folly sauced with discretion: there is no man hath  
 a virtue that he hath not a glimpse of; nor any man an  
 attain, but he carries some stain of it: he is melancholy  
 without cause, and merry against the hair: he hath the  
 joints of everything; but everything so out of joint that  
 he is a gouty Briareus, many hands and no use; or purblind  
 Argus, all eyes and no sight.

*Cres.* But how should this man, that makes me smile,  
 make Hector angry?

*Alex.* They say he yesterday coped Hector in the battle,  
 and struck him down; the disdain and shame whercof hath  
 ever since kept Hector fasting and waking.

*Cres.* Who comes here?

*Alex.* Madam, your uncle Pandarus.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* Hector's a gallant man.

*Alex.* As may be in the world, lady.

*Pan.* What's that? what's that?

*Cres.* Good-morrow, uncle Pandarus.

*Pan.* Good-morrow, cousin Cressid: what do you talk  
 of?—Good-morrow, Alexander.—How do you, cousin?  
 When were you at Ilium?

*Cres.* This morning, uncle.

*Pan.* What were you talking of when I came? Was  
 Hector armed and gone ere ye came to Ilium? Helen was  
 not up, was she?

*Cres.* Hector was gone; but Helen was not up.

*Pan.* E'en so: Hector was stirring early.

*Cres.* That were we talking of, and of his anger.

*Pan.* Was he angry?

*Cres.* So he says here.

*Pan.* True, he was so; I know the cause too; he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell them that: and there is Troilus will not come far behind him; let them take heed of Troilus, I can tell them that too.

*Cres.* What, is he angry too?

*Pan.* Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better man of the two.

*Cres.* O Jupiter! there's no comparison.

*Pan.* What, not between Troilus and Hector? Do you know a man if you see him?

*Cres.* Ay, if I ever saw him before, and knew him.

*Pan.* Well, I say Troilus is Troilus.

*Cres.* Then you say as I say; for I am sure he is not Hector.

*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus in some degrees.

*Cres.* 'Tis just to each of them; he is himself

*Pan.* Himself! Alas, poor Troilus! I would he were,—

*Cres.* So he is.

*Pan.* Condition, I had gone barefoot to India.

*Cres.* He is not Hector.

*Pan.* Himself! no, he's not himself,—would 'a were himself! Well, the gods are above; time must friend or end: well, Troilus, well,—I would my heart were in her body!—No, Hector is not a better man than Troilus.

*Cres.* Excuse me.

*Pan.* He is elder.

*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me.

*Pan.* The other's not come to't; you shall tell me another tale when the other's come to't. Hector shall not have his wit this year,—

*Cres.* He shall not need it if he have his own.

*Pan.* Nor his qualities,—

*Cres.* No matter.

*Pan.* Nor his beauty.

*Cres.* 'Twould not become him,—his own's better.

*Pan.* You have no judgment, niece: Helen herself swore the other day that Troilus, for a brown favour,—for so 'tis, I must confess,—not brown neither,—

*Cres.* No, but brown.

*Pan.* Faith, to say truth, brown and not brown.

*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.

*Pan.* She praised his complexion above Paris.

*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.

*Pan.* So he has.



*Cres.* Then Troilus should have too much: if she praised him above, his complexion is higher than his; he having colour enough, and the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a good complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden tongue had commended Troilus for a copper nose.

*Pan.* I swear to you I think Helen loves him better than Paris.

*Cres.* Then she 's a merry Greek indeed.

*Pan.* Nay, I am sure she does. She came to him the other day into the compassed window,—and, you know, he has not past three or four hairs on his chin,—

*Cres.* Indeed, a tapster's arithmetic may soon bring his particulars therein to a total.

*Pan.* Why, he is very young: and yet will he, within three pound, lift as much as his brother Hector.

*Cres.* Is he so young a man and so old a lifter?

*Pan.* But, to prove to you that Helen loves him,—she came, and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin,—

*Cres.* Juno have mercy! how came it cloven?

*Pan.* Why, you know, 'tis dimpled: I think his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.

*Cres.* O, he smiles valiantly.

*Pan.* Does he not?

*Cres.* O yes, an 'twere a cloud in autumn.

*Pan.* Why, go to, then:—but to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,—

*Cres.* Troilus will stand to the proof if you'll prove it so.

*Pan.* Troilus! why, he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.

*Cres.* If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens i' the shell.

*Pan.* I cannot choose but laugh to think how she tickled his chin;—indeed, she has a marvellous white hand, I must needs confess,—

*Cres.* Without the rack.

*Pan.* And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.

*Cres.* Alas, poor chin! many a wart is richer.

*Pan.* But there was such laughing!—Queen Hecuba laughed, that her eyes ran o'er,—

*Cres.* With millstones.

*Pan.* And Cassandra laughed,—

*Cres.* But there was more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes.—Did her eyes run o'er too?

*Pan.* And Hector laugh'd.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An't had been a green hair I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair as at his pretty answer.

*Cres.* What was his answer?

*Pan.* Quoth she, *Here's but one and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white.*

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That's true; make no question of that. *One and fifty hairs*, quoth he, *and one white: that white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons.—Jupiter!* quoth she, *which of these hairs is Paris my husband?*—*The forked one*, quoth he; *pluck it out and give it him.* But there was such laughing! and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.

*Cres.* So let it now; for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn 'tis true; he will weep you, an 'twere a man born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an 'twere a nettle against May. *[A retreat sounded.]*

*Pan.* Hark! they are coming from the field: shall we stand up here, and see them as they pass toward Ilium? good niece, do; sweet niece Cressida.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here, here 's an excellent place; here we may see most bravely: I'll tell you them all by their names as they pass by; but mark Troilus above the rest.

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*ÆNEAS passes.*

*Pan.* That's Æneas: is not that a brave man? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you. But mark Troilus; you shall see anon.

*ANTENOR passes.*

*Cres.* Who's that?

*Pan.* That's Antenor: he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he's a man good enough: he's one o' the soundest judgments in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person. When comes Troilus?—I'll show you Troilus anon: if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod?

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

*HECTOR passes.*

*Pan.* That's Hector, that, that, look you, that; there's a fellow!—Go thy way, Hector!—There's a brave man, niece.—O brave Hector!—Look how he looks! there's a countenance! Is't not a brave man?

*Cres.* O, a brave man!

*Pan.* Is 'a not? It does a man's heart good.—Look you what hacks are on his helmet! look you yonder, do you see? look you there: there's no jesting; there's laying on; take't off who will, as they say: there be hacks!

*Cres.* Be those with swords?

*Pan.* Swords! anything, he cares not; an the devil come to him, it's all one: by god's lid, it does one's heart good. Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris:

*PARIS passes.*

look ye yonder niece; is't not a gallant man too, is't not?—Why, this is brave now.—Who said he came hurt home to-day? he's not hurt: why, this will do Helen's heart good now, ha!—Would I could see Troilus now!—you shall see Troilus anon.

*HELENUS passes.*

*Cres.* Who's that?

*Pan.* That's Helenus:—I marvel where Troilus is:—that's Helenus:—I think he went not forth to-day:—that's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle?

*Pan.* Helenus! no;—yes, he'll fight indifferent well.—I marvel where Troilus is.—Hark! do you not hear the people cry *Troilus*?—Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

*TROIILUS passes.*

*Pan.* Where? yonder? that's Deiphobus:—'tis Troilus! there's a man, niece!—Hem!—Brave Troilus! the prince of chivalry!

*Cres.* Peace, for shame, peace!

*Pan.* Mark him; note him:—O brave Troilus!—look well upon him, niece; look you how his sword is bloodied, and his helm more hack'd than Hector's; and how he looks, and how he goes!—O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three and twenty.—Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way!—Had I a

sister were a grace, or a daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable man! Paris?—Paris is dirt to him; and, I warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to boot.

*Cres.* Here come more.

*Forces pass.*

*Pan.* Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran, chaff and bran! porridge after meat!—I could live and die i' the eyes of Troilus.—Ne'er look, ne'er look; the eagles are gone: crows and daws, crows and daws!—I had rather be such a man as Troilus than Agamemnon and all Greece.

*Cres.* There is among the Greeks Achilles,—a better man than Troilus.

*Pan.* Achilles! a drayman, a porter, a very camel.

*Cres.* Well, well.

*Pan.* Well, well!—Why, have you any discretion? have you any eyes? do you know what a man is? Is not birth, beauty, good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, virtue, youth, liberality, and such like, the spice and salt that season a man?

*Cres.* Ay, a minced man: and then to be baked with no date in the pie,—for then the man's date's out.

*Pan.* You are such a woman! one knows not at what ward you lie.

*Cres.* Upon my back, to defend my belly; upon my wit, to defend my wiles; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my mask, to defend my beauty; and you, to defend all these: and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand watches.

*Pan.* Say one of your watches.

*Cres.* Nay, I'll watch you for that; and that's one of the chiefest of them too: if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I can watch you for telling how I took the blow; unless it swell past hiding, and then it is past watching.

*Pan.* You are such another!

*Enter TROIILUS' Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.

*Pan.* Where?

*Boy.* At your own house; there he unarms him.

*Pan.* Good boy, tell him I come. *[Exit Boy.]*

I doubt he be hurt.—Fare ye well, good niece.

*Cres.* Adieu, uncle.

*Pan.* I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

*Cres.* To bring, uncle.

*Pan.* Ay, a token from Troilus.

*Cres.* By the same token—you are a bawd.

[*Exit PANDARUS.*]

Words, vows, gifts, tears, and love's full sacrifice,  
 He offers in another's enterprise:  
 But more in Troilus thousand-fold I see  
 Than in the glass of Pandar's praise may be;  
 Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing:  
 Things won are done, joy's soul lies in the doing:  
 That she belov'd knows naught that knows not this,—  
 Men prize the thing ungain'd more than it is:  
 That she was never yet that ever knew  
 Love got so sweet as when desire did sue:  
 Therefore this maxim out of love I teach,—  
 Achievement is command; ungain'd beseech:  
 Then though my heart's content firm love doth bear,  
 Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear. [*Exeunt*]

SCENE III.—THE GRECIAN CAMP. *Before*  
 AGAMEMNON'S Tent.

*Sennet. Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, MENELAUS,  
 NESTOR, *and others.*

*Agam.* Princes,

What grief hath set the jaundice on your cheeks?  
 The ample proposition that hope makes  
 In all designs begun on earth below  
 Fails in the promis'd largeness: checks and disasters  
 Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd;  
 As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap,  
 Infect the sound pine, and divert his grain  
 Tortive and errant from his course of growth.  
 Nor, princes, is it matter new to us  
 That we come short of our suppose so far  
 That, after seven years' siege, yet Troy walls stand;  
 Sith every action that hath gone before,  
 Whereof we have record, trial did draw  
 Bias and thwart, not answering the aim,  
 And that unbodied figure of the thought  
 That gav't surmised shape. Why, then, you princes,  
 Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our works;  
 And call them shames, which are, indeed, naught else  
 But the protractive trials of great Jove  
 To find persistive constancy in men?  
 The fineness of which metal is not found  
 In fortune's love: for then the bold and coward,

The wise and fool, the artist and unread,  
 The hard and soft, seem all affin'd and kin:  
 But, in the wind and tempest of her frown,  
 Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan,  
 Puffing at all, winnows the light away;  
 And what hath mass or matter, by itself  
 Lies rich in virtue and unmingled.

*Nest.* With due observance of thy godlike seat,  
 Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply  
 Thy latest words. In the reproof of chance  
 Lies the true proof of men: the sea being smooth,  
 How many shallow bauble boats dare sail  
 Upon her patient breast, making their way  
 With those of nobler bulk!  
 But let the ruffian Boreas once enrage  
 The gentle Thetis, and, anon, behold  
 The strong-ribb'd bark through liquid mountains cut,  
 Bounding between the two moist elements,  
 Like Perseus' horse: where's then the saucy boat,  
 Whose weak untimber'd sides but even now  
 Co-rivall'd greatness? either to harbour fled  
 Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so  
 Doth valour's show and valour's worth divide  
 In storms of fortune: for in her ray and brightness  
 The herd hath more annoyance by the breeze  
 Than by the tiger: but when the splitting wind  
 Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks,  
 And flies fled under shade,—why, then the thing of courage,  
 As rous'd with rage, with rage doth sympathize,  
 And with an accent tun'd in self-same key  
 Retorts to chiding fortune.

*Ulyss.* Agamemnon,—  
 Thou great commander, nerve and bone of Greece,  
 Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit,  
 In whom the tempers and the minds of all  
 Should be shut up,—hear what Ulysses speaks.  
 Besides the applause and approbation  
 The which,—most mighty for thy place and sway,—  
 [To AGAMEMNON.  
 And thou most reverend for thy stretch'd-out life,—  
 [To NESTOR.

I give to both your speeches,—which were such  
 As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece  
 Should hold up high in brass; and such again  
 As venerable Nestor, hatch'd in silver,  
 Should with a bond of air,—strong as the axletree

On which heaven rides,—knit all the Greekish ears  
To his experienc'd tongue,—yet let it please both,—  
Thou great,—and wise,—to hear Ulysses speak.

*Agam.* Speak, Prince of Ithaca; and be't of less expect,  
That matter needless, of importless burden,  
Divide thy lips, than we are confident,  
When rank Thersites opes his mastiff jaws,  
We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.

*Ulyss.* Troy, yet upon his basis, had been down,  
And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a master,  
But for these instances.  
The specialty of rule hath been neglected:  
And look, how many Grecian tents do stand  
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow factions.  
When that the general is not like the hive,  
To whom the foragers shall all repair,  
What honey is expected? Degree being vizarded,  
The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.  
The heavens themselves, the planets, and this centre,  
Observe degree, priority, and place,  
Insisture, course, proportion, season, form,  
Office, and custom, in all line of order:  
And therefore is the glorious planet Sol  
In noble eminence enthron'd and spher'd  
Amidst the other; whose medicinable eye  
Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil,  
And posts, like the commandment of a king,  
Sans check, to good and bad: but when the planets,  
In evil mixture, to disorder wander,  
What plagues and what portents! what mutiny!  
What raging of the sea! shaking of earth!  
Commotion in the winds! frights, changes, horrors,  
Divert and crack, rend and deracinate  
The unity and married calm of states  
Quite from their fixture! O, when degree is shak'd,  
Which is the ladder to all high designs,  
The enterprise is sick! How could communities,  
Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods in cities,  
Peaceful commerce from dividable shores,  
The primogenitive and due of birth,  
Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
But by degree, stand in authentic place?  
Take but degree away, untune that string,  
And, hark, what discord follows! each thing meets  
In mere oppugnancy: the bounded waters  
Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,

And make a sop of all this solid globe :  
 Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
 And the rude son should strike his father dead :  
 Force should be right ; or, rather, right and wrong,—  
 Between whose endless jar justice resides,—  
 Should lose their names, and so should justice too.  
 Then everything includes itself in power,  
 Power into will, will into appetite ;  
 And appetite, an universal wolf,  
 So doubly seconded with will and power,  
 Must make perforce an universal prey,  
 And last eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,  
 This chaos, when degree is suffocate,  
 Follows the choking.

And this neglect of degree it is  
 That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose  
 It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd  
 By him one step below ; he by the next ;  
 That next by him beneath : so every step,  
 Exemplified by the first pace that is sick  
 Of his superior, grows to an envious fever  
 Of pale and bloodless emulation ;  
 And 'tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot,  
 Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,  
 Troy in our weakness stands, not in her strength.

*Nest.* Most wisely hath Ulysses here discover'd  
 The fever whereof all our power is sick.

*Agam.* The nature of the sickness found, Ulysses,  
 What is the remedy ?

*Ulyss.* The great Achilles,—whom opinion crowns  
 The sinew and the forehead of our host,—  
 Having his ear full of his airy fame,  
 Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent  
 Lies mocking our designs : with him Patroclus,  
 Upon a lazy bed, the livelong day  
 Breaks scurril jests ;  
 And with ridiculous and awkward action,—  
 Which, slanderer, he imitation calls,—  
 He pageants us. Sometime, great Agamemnon,  
 Thy topless deputation he puts on ;  
 And, like a strutting player,—whose conceits  
 Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich  
 To hear the wooden dialogue and sound  
 'Twixt his stretch'd footing and the scaffoldage,—  
 Such to-be-pitied and o'er-wrested seeming  
 He acts thy greatness in : and when he speaks



'Tis like a chime a-mending; with terms unsquar'd,  
Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhou dropp'd,  
Would seem hyberboles. At this fusty stuff  
The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling,  
From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;  
Cries, *Excellent! 'tis Agamemnon just.*  
*Now play me Nestor: hem, and stroke thy beard,*  
*As he being drest to some oration.*

That's done;—as near as the extremest ends  
Of parallels; as like as Vulcan and his wife:  
Yet god Achilles still cries, *Excellent!*  
'Tis Nestor right. *Now play him me, Patroclus,*  
*Arming to answer in a night alarm.*

And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age  
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough and spit,  
And, with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,  
Shake in and out the rivet: and at this sport  
Sir Valour dies; cries, *O, enough, Patroclus;*  
*Or give me ribs of steel! I shall split all*  
*In pleasure of my spleen.* And in this fashion  
All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes,  
Severals and generals of grace exact,  
Achievements, plots, orders, preventions,  
Excitements to the field or speech for truce,  
Success or loss, what is or is not, serves  
As stuff for these two to make paradoxes.

*Nest.* And in the imitation of these twain,—  
Who, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns  
With an imperial voice,—many are infect.  
Ajax is grown self-willed; and bears his head  
In such a rein, in full as proud a place  
As broad Achilles; keeps his tent like him;  
Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war  
Bold as an oracle; and sets Thersites,—  
A slave, whose gall coins slanders like a mint,—  
To match us in comparisons with dirt,  
To weaken and discredit our exposure,  
How rank soever rounded in with danger.

*Ulyss.* They tax our policy, and call it cowardice;  
Count wisdom as no member of the war;  
ForeSTALL prescience, and esteem no act  
But that of hand: the still and mental parts,—  
That do contrive how many hands shall strike,  
When fitness calls them on; and know, by measure  
Of their observant toil, the enemies' weight,—  
Why, this hath not a finger's dignity:

They call this bed-work, mappery, closet-war;  
 So that the ran that batters down the wall,  
 For the great swing and rudeness of his poise,  
 They place before his hand that made the engine,  
 Or those that with the fineness of their souls  
 By reason guide his execution.

*Nest.* Let this be granted, and Achilles' horse  
 Makes many Thetis' sons. [Trumpet sounds.

*Agam.* What trumpet? look, Menelaus.

*Men.* From Troy.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Agam.* What would you 'fore our tent?

*Æne.* Is this great Agamemnon's tent, I pray you?

*Agam.* Even this.

*Æne.* May one, that is a herald and a prince,  
 Do a fair message to his kingly ears?

*Agam.* With surety stronger than Achilles' arm  
 'Fore all the Greekish heads, which with one voice  
 Call Agamemnon head and general.

*Æne.* Fair leave and large security. How may  
 A stranger to those most imperial looks  
 Know them from eyes of other mortals?

*Agam.*

How!

*Æne.* Ay;

I ask, that I might waken reverence,  
 And bid the cheek be ready with a blush  
 Modest as morning when she coldly eyes  
 The youthful Phœbus:

Which is that god in office, guiding men?

Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?

*Agam.* This Trojan scorns us; or the men of Troy  
 Are ceremonious courtiers.

*Æne.* Courtiers as free, as debonair, unarm'd,  
 As bending angels; that's their fame in peace:  
 But when they would seem soldiers, they have galls,  
 Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and, Jove's accord,  
 Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas,  
 Peace, Trojan; lay thy finger on thy lips!  
 The worthiness of praise distains his worth,  
 If that the prais'd himself bring the praise forth:  
 But what the repining enemy commends,  
 That breath fame blows; that praise, sole pure, transcends.

*Agam.* Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself Æneas?

*Æne.* Ay, Greek, that is my name.

*Agam.* What's your affair, I pray you?

*Æne.* Sir, pardon; 'tis for Agamemnon's ears.

*Agam.* He hears not privately that comes from Troy.

*Æne.* Nor I from Troy come not to whisper him:

I bring a trumpet to awake his ear;  
To set his sense on the attentive bent,  
And then to speak.

*Agam.* Speak frankly as the wind;  
It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour:  
That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake,  
He tells thee so himself.

*Æne.* Trumpet, blow loud,  
Send thy brass voice through all these lazy tents  
And every Greek of mettle, let him know  
What Troy means fairly shall be spoke aloud.

[*Trumpet sounds.*]

We have, great Agamemnon, here in Troy  
A prince called Hector,—Priam is his father,—  
Who in this dull and long-continued truce  
Is rusty grown: he bade me take a trumpet  
And to this purpose speak. Kings, princes, lords!  
If there be one among the fair'st of Greece  
That holds his honour higher than his ease;  
That seeks his praise more than he fears his peril;  
That knows his valour and knows not his fear;  
That loves his mistress more than in confession,—  
With truant vows to her own lips he loves,—  
And dare avow her beauty and her worth  
In other arms than hers,—to him this challenge.  
Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,  
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it,  
He hath a lady wiser, fairer, truer  
Than ever Greek did compass in his arms;  
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call,  
Mid-way between your tents and walls of Troy,  
To rouse a Grecian that is true in love:  
If any come, Hector shall honour him;  
If none, he'll say in Troy when he retires,  
The Grecian dames are sunburnt, and not worth  
The splinter of a lance. Even so much.

*Agam.* This shall be told our lovers, Lord Æneas;  
If none of them have soul in such a kind,  
We left them all at home: but we are soldiers;  
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove  
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!  
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,  
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.

*Nest.* Tell him of Nestor, one that was a man  
 When Hector's grandsire suck'd: he is old now;  
 But if there be not in our Grecian host  
 One noble man that hath one spark of fire  
 To answer for his love, tell him from me—  
 I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver,  
 And in my vantbrace put this wither'd brawu;  
 And, meeting him, will tell him that my lady  
 Was fairer than his grandame, and as chaste  
 As may be in the world: his youth in flood,  
 I'll prove this truth with my three drops of blood.

*Æne.* Now heavens forbid such scarcity of youth!

*Ulyss.* Amen.

*Agam.* Fair Lord Æneas, let me touch your hand;  
 To our pavilion shall I lead you, sir.  
 Achilles shall have word of this intent;  
 So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent:  
 Yourself shall feast with us before you go,  
 And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[*Exeunt all but ULYSS. and NEST.*]

*Ulyss.* Nestor,—

*Nest.* What says Ulysses?

*Ulyss.* I have a young conception in my brain;  
 Be you my time to bring it to some shape.

*Nest.* What is't?

*Ulyss.* This 'tis:—

Blunt wedges rive hard knots: the seeded pride  
 That hath to this maturity blown up  
 In rank Achilles must or now be cropp'd,  
 Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,  
 To overbulk us all.

*Nest.* Well, and how?

*Ulyss.* This challenge that the gallant Hector sends,  
 However it is spread in general name,  
 Relates in purpose only to Achilles.

*Nest.* The purpose is perspicuous even as substance,  
 Whose grossness little characters sum up:  
 And, in the publication, make no strain  
 But that Achilles, were his brain as barren  
 As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo knows,  
 'Tis dry enough,—will, with great speed of judgment,  
 Ay, with celerity, find Hector's purpose  
 Pointing on him.

*Ulyss.* And wake him to the answer, think you?

*Nest.* Yes, 'tis most meet: whom may you else oppose  
 That can from Hector bring his honour off,

If not Achilles? Though't be a sportful combat,  
 Yet in the trial much opinion dwells;  
 For here the Trojans taste our dear'st repute  
 With their fin'st palate: and trust to me, Ulysses.  
 Our imputation shall be oddly pois'd  
 In this wild action; for the success,  
 Although particular, shall give a scantling  
 Of good or bad unto the general;  
 And in such indexes, although small pricks  
 To their subsequent volumes, there is seen  
 The baby figure of the giant mass  
 Of things to come at large. It is suppos'd  
 He that meets Hector issues from our choice:  
 And choice being mutual act of all our souls,  
 Makes merit her election; and doth boil,  
 As 'twere from forth us all, a man distill'd  
 Out of our virtues; who miscarrying,  
 What heart receives from hence the conquering part,  
 To steel a strong opinion to themselves?  
 Which entertain'd, limbs are his instruments,  
 In no less working than are swords and bows  
 Directive by the limbs.

*Ulyss.* Give pardon to my speech;—  
 Therefore 'tis meet Achilles meet not Hector.  
 Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,  
 And think perchance they'll sell; if not,  
 The lustre of the better shall exceed,  
 By showing the worst first. Do not consent  
 That ever Hector and Achilles meet;  
 For both our honour and our shame in this  
 Are dogg'd with two strange followers.

*Nest.* I see them not with my old eyes: what are they?

*Ulyss.* What glory our Achilles shares from Hector,  
 Were he not proud, we all should share with him:  
 But he already is too insolent;  
 And we were better parch in Afric sun  
 Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes.  
 Should he 'scape Hector fair: if he were foil'd,  
 Why, then we did our main opinion crush  
 In taint of our best man. No, make a lottery;  
 And, by device, let blockish Ajax draw  
 The sort to fight with Hector: among ourselves,  
 Give him allowance for the better man;  
 For that will physic the great Myrmidon  
 Who broils in loud applause, and make him fall  
 His crest that prouder than blue Iris bends.

If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,  
 We'll dress him up in voices: if he fail,  
 Yet go we under our opinion still  
 That we have better men. But, hit or miss,  
 Our project's life this shape of sense assumes,—  
 Ajax employ'd plucks down Achilles' plumes.

*Nest.* Now, Ulysses, I begin to relish thy advice;  
 And I will give a taste of it forthwith  
 To Agamemnon: go we to him straight.  
 Two curs shall tame each other: pride alone  
 Must tarre the mastiffs on, as 'twere their bone. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*Another part of the Grecian Camp.*

*Enter AJAX and THERSITES.*

*Ajax.* Thersites,—

*Ther.* Agamemnon,—how if he had boils,—full, all over,  
 generally?—

*Ajax.* Thersites,—

*Ther.* And those boils did run?—Say so,—did not the  
 general run then? were not that a botchy core?—

*Ajax.* Dog,—

*Ther.* Then would come some matter from him; I see  
 none now.

*Ajax.* Thou bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not hear? Feel,  
 then. [*Beating him.*]

*Ther.* The plague of Greece upon thee, thou mongrel beef-  
 witted lord!

*Ajax.* Speak, then, thou vinewedst leaven, speak: I will  
 beat thee into handsomeness.

*Ther.* I shall sooner rail thee into wit and holiness: but  
 I think thy horse will sooner con an oration than thou learn  
 a prayer without book. Thou canst strike, canst thou? a  
 red murrain o' thy jade's tricks!

*Ajax.* Toadstool, learn me the proclamation.

*Ther.* Dost thou think I have no sense, thou strikest  
 me thus?

*Ajax.* The proclamation,—

*Ther.* Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.

*Ajax.* Do not, porcupine, do not; my fingers itch.

*Ther.* I would thou didst itch from head to foot, and I  
 had the scratching of thee; I would make thee the loath-

somest scab in Greece. When thou art forth in the incur-  
sions, thou strikest as slow as another.

*Ajax.* I say, the proclamation,—

*Ther.* Thou grumblest and raillest every hour on Achilles;  
and thou art as full of envy at his greatness as Cerberus is  
at Proserpina's beauty, ay, that thou barkest at him.

*Ajax.* Mistress Thersites!

*Ther.* Thou shouldst strike him.

*Ajax.* Cobloaf!

*Ther.* He would pun thee into shivers with his fist, as a  
sailer breaks a biscuit.

*Ajax.* You whoreson cur! [Beating him.]

*Ther.* Do, do.

*Ajax.* Thou stool for a witch!

*Ther.* Ay, do, do; thou sodden-witted lord! thou hast no  
more brain than I have in mine elbows; an assuego may  
tutor thee: thou scurvy valiant ass! thou art here but to  
thrash Trojans; and thou art bought and sold among those  
of any wit, like a barbarian slave. If thou use to beat me,  
I will begin at thy heel, and tell what thou art by inches,  
thou thing of no bowels, thou!

*Ajax.* You dog!

*Ther.* You scurvy lord!

*Ajax.* You cur!

[Beating him.]

*Ther.* Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do, camel; do, do.

*Enter* ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.

*Achil.* Why, how now, Ajax! wherefore do you thus?—  
How now, Thersites! what's the matter, man?

*Ther.* You see him there, do you?

*Achil.* Ay; what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, look upon him.

*Achil.* So I do: what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, but regard him well.

*Achil.* Well! why, I do so.

*Ther.* But yet you look not well upon him; for, whosoever  
you take him to be, he is Ajax.

*Achil.* I know that, fool.

*Ther.* Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

*Ajax.* Therefore I beat thee.

*Ther.* Lo, lo, lo, lo, what medicums of wit he utters! his  
evasions have ears thus long. I have bobbed his brain more  
than he has beat my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a  
penny, and his *pia mater* is not worth the ninth part of a  
sparrow. This lord, Achilles, Ajax,—who wears his wit in

his belly, and his guts in his head,—I'll tell you what I say of him.

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* I say, this Ajax,—

[AJAX offers to beat him, ACHILLES interposes.]

*Achil.* Nay, good Ajax.

*Ther.* Has not so much wit,—

*Achil.* Nay, I must hold you.

*Ther.* As will stop the eye of Helen's needle, for whom he comes to fight.

*Achil.* Peace, fool!

*Ther.* I would have peace and quietness, but the fool will not: he there; that he; look you there.

*Ajax.* O thou damned cur! I shall,—

*Achil.* Will you set your wit to a fool's?

*Ther.* No, I warrant you; for a fool's will shame it.

*Patr.* Good words, Thersites.

*Achil.* What's the quarrel?

*Ajax.* I bade the vile owl go learn me the tenor of the proclamation, and he rails upon me.

*Ther.* I serve thee not.

*Ajax.* Well, go to, go to.

*Ther.* I serve here voluntary.

*Achil.* Your last service was sufferance, 'twas not voluntary,—no man is beaten voluntary: Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress.

*Ther.* E'en so; a great deal of your wit, too, lies in your sinews, or else there be liars. Hector shall have a great catch if he knock out either of your brains: 'a were as good crack a fusty nut with no kernel.

*Achil.* What, with me too, Thersites?

*Ther.* There's Ulysses and old Nestor,—whose wit was mouldy ere your grandsires had nails on their toes,—yoke you like draught oxen, and make you plough up the wars.

*Achil.* What, what?

*Ther.* Yes, good sooth: to, Achilles! to, Ajax! to!

*Ajax.* I shall cut out your tongue.

*Ther.* 'Tis no matter; I shall speak as much as thou afterwards.

*Patr.* No more words, Thersites; peace!

*Ther.* I will hold my peace when Achilles' brach bids me, shall I?

*Achil.* There's for you, Patroclus.

*Ther.* I will see you hanged, like clotpoles, ere I come any more to your tents: I will keep where there is wit stirring, and leave the faction of fools. [Exit.]



*Patr.* A good riddance.

*Achil.* Marry, this, sir, is proclaim'd through all our host:—

That Hector, by the fifth hour of the sun,  
Will, with a trumpet, 'twixt our tents and Troy,  
To-morrow morning call some knight to arms  
That hath a stomach; and such a one that dare  
Maintain I know not what; 'tis trash. Farewell.

*Ajax.* Farewell. Who shall answer him?

*Achil.* I know not, it is put to lottery; otherwise  
He knew his man.

*Ajax.* O, meaning you.—I'll go learn more of it. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—TROY. *A Room in PRIAM'S Palace.*

*Enter PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, and HELENUS.*

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches spent,  
Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks:—  
*Deliver Helen, and all damage else,—*  
*As honour, loss of time, travail, expense,*  
*Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consum'd*  
*In hot digestion of this cormorant war,—*  
*Shall be struck off:—*Hector, what say you to't?

*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks than I,  
As far as toucheth my particular,  
Yet, dread Priam,  
There is no lady of more softer bowels,  
More spongy to suck in the sense of fear,  
More ready to cry out, *Who knows what follows?*  
Than Hector is: the wound of peace is surety,  
Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd  
The beacon of the wise, the tent that searches  
To the bottom of the worst. Let Helen go:  
Since the first sword was drawn about this question,  
Every tithe soul, 'mongst many thousand dimes,  
Hath been as dear as Helen,—I mean, of ours:  
If we have lost so many tenths of ours,  
To guard a thing not ours, nor worth to us,  
Had it our name, the value of one ten,—  
What merit 's in that reason which denies  
The yielding of her up?

*Tro.* Fie, fie, my brother!  
Weigh you the worth and honour of a king,  
So great as our dread father, in a scale  
Of common ounces? will you with counters sum

The past-proportion of his infinite?  
 And buckle-in a waist most fathomless  
 With spans and inches so diminutive  
 As fears and reasons? fie, for godly shame?

*Hel.* No marvel though you bite so sharp at reasons,  
 You are so empty of them. Should not our father  
 Bear the great sway of his affairs with reasons,  
 Because your speech hath none that tells him so?

*Tro.* You are for dreams and slumbers, brother priest;  
 You fur your gloves with reason. Here are your reasons:  
 You know an enemy intends you harm;  
 You know a sword employ'd is perilous,  
 And reason flies the object of all harm:  
 Who marvels, then, when Helenus beholds  
 A Grecian and his sword, if he do set  
 The very wings of reason to his heels,  
 And fly like chidden Mercury from Jove,  
 Or like a star disorb'd?—Nay, if we talk of reason,  
 Let's shut our gates and sleep: manhood and honour  
 Should have hare hearts would they but fat their thoughts  
 With this cramm'd reason: reason and respect  
 Make livers pale and lustihood deject.

*Hect.* Brother, she is not worth what she doth cost  
 The holding.

*Tro.* What is aught but as 'tis valued?

*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular will;  
 It holds his estimate and dignity  
 As well wherein 'tis precious of itself  
 As in the prizer: 'tis mad idolatry  
 To make the service greater than the god;  
 And the will dotes, that is attributive  
 To what infectiously itself affects,  
 Without some image of the affected merit.

*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election  
 Is led on in the conduct of my will;  
 My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,  
 Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores  
 Of will and judgment: how may I avoid,  
 Although my will distaste what it elected,  
 The wife I chose? there can be no evasion  
 To blench from this, and to stand firm by honour:  
 We turn not back the silks upon the merchant  
 When we have soil'd them; nor the remainder viands  
 We do not throw in unrespective sieve,  
 Because we now are full. It was thought meet  
 Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks:

Your breath of full consent bellied his sails;  
 The seas and winds,—old wranglers,—took a truce,  
 And did him service: he touch'd the ports desir'd;  
 And for an old aunt, whom the Greeks held captive,  
 He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and freshness  
 Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes stale the morning.  
 Why keep we her? the Grecians keep our aunt:  
 Is she worth keeping? why, she is a pearl,  
 Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand ships,  
 And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.  
 If you'll avouch 'twas wisdom Paris went,—  
 As you must needs, for you all cried, *Go, go,*—  
 If you'll confess he brought home noble prize,—  
 As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your hands,  
 And cried, *Inestimable!*—why do you now  
 The issue of your proper wisdoms rate,  
 And do a deed that fortune never did,—  
 Beggar the estimation which you priz'd  
 Richer than sea and land? O theft most base,  
 That we have stol'n what we do fear to keep!  
 But thieves, unworthy of a thing so stol'n,  
 That in their country did them that disgrace,  
 We fear to warrant in our native place!

*Cas.* [*within.*] Cry, Trojans, cry!

*Pri.* What noise? what shriek is this?

*Tro.* 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her voice.

*Cas.* [*within.*] Cry, Trojans!

*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

*Enter CASSANDRA, raving.*

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand eyes,  
 And I will fill them with prophetic tears.

*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace.

*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled old,  
 Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,  
 Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes  
 A moiety of that mass of moan to come.  
 Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears!  
 Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand;  
 Our firebrand brother, Paris, burns us all.  
 Cry, Trojans, cry! an Helen and a woe:  
 Cry, cry! Troy burns, or else let Helen go.

*Hect.* Now, youthful Troilus, do not these high strains  
 Of divination in our sister work  
 Some touches of remorse? or is your blood  
 So madly hot that no discourse of reason,

[*Exit.*]

Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,  
Can qualify the same?

*Tro.* Why, brother Hector,  
We may not think the justness of each act  
Such and no other than event doth form it;  
Nor once deject the courage of our minds  
Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick raptures  
Cannot distaste the goodness of a quarrel  
Which hath our several honours all engag'd  
To make it gracious. For my private part,  
I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons:  
And Jove forbid there should be done amongst us  
Such things as might offend the weakest spleen  
To fight for and maintain!

*Par.* Else might the world convince of levity  
As well my undertakings as your counsels:  
But I attest the gods, your full consent  
Gave wings to my propensien, and cut off  
All fears attending on so dire a project.  
For what, alas, can these my single arms?  
What propugnation is in one man's valour,  
To stand the push and enmity of those  
This quarrel would excite? Yet, I protest,  
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,  
And had as ample power as I have will,  
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done,  
Nor faint in the pursuit.

*Pri.* Paris, you speak  
Like one besotted on your sweet delights:  
You have the honey still, but these the gall;  
So to be valiant is no praise at all.

*Par.* Sir, I propose not merely to myself  
The pleasures such a beauty brings with it;  
But I would have the soil of her fair rape  
Wip'd off in honourable keeping her.  
What treason were it to the ransack'd queen,  
Disgrace to your great worths, and shame to me,  
Now to deliver her possession up  
On terms of base compulsion! Can it be  
That so degenerate a strain as this  
Should once set footing in your generous bosoms?  
There's not the meanest spirit on our party,  
Without a heart to dare or sword to draw,  
When Helen is defended; nor none so noble,  
Whose life were ill bestow'd or death unfam'd,  
Where Helen is the subject: then, I say,

Well may we fight for her, whom, we know well,  
The world's large spaces cannot parallel.

*Hect.* Paris and Troilus, you have both said well;  
And on the cause and question now in hand  
Have glaz'd,—but superficially; not much  
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought  
Unfit to hear moral philosophy:  
The reasons you allege do more conduce  
To the hot passion of distemper'd blood  
Than to make up a free determination  
'Twixt right and wrong; for pleasure and revenge  
Have ears more deaf than adders to the voice  
Of any true decision. Nature craves  
All dues be render'd to their owners: now,  
What nearer debt in all humanity  
Than wife is to the husband? If this law  
Of nature be corrupted through affection;  
And that great minds, of partial indulgence  
To their benumbed wills, resist the same;  
There is a law in each well-order'd nation  
To curb those raging appetites that are  
Most disobedient and refractory.  
If Helen, then, be wife to Sparta's king,—  
As it is known she is,—these moral laws  
Of nature and of nations speak aloud  
To have her back return'd: thus to persist  
In doing wrong extenuates not wrong,  
But makes it much more heavy. Hector's opinion  
Is this, in way of truth: yet, ne'ertheless,  
My sprightly brethren, I propend to you  
In resolution to keep Helen still;  
For 'tis a cause that hath no mean dependence  
Upon our joint and several dignities.

*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our design:  
Were it not glory that we more affected  
Than the performance of our heaving spleens,  
I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood  
Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hector,  
She is a theme of honour and renown;  
A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds;  
Whose present courage may beat down our foes,  
And fame in time to come canonize us:  
For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose  
So rich advantage of a promis'd glory,  
As smiles upon the forehead of this action,  
For the wide world's revenue.

*Hect.* I am yours,  
 You valiant offspring of great Priamus.—  
 I have a roisting challenge sent amongst  
 The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks  
 Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits:  
 I was advértis'd their great general slept,  
 Whilst emulation in the army crept:  
 This, I presume, will wake him.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—THE GRECIAN CAMP. *Before*  
 ACHILLES' Tent.

*Enter* THERSITES.

*Ther.* How now, Thersites! what, lost in the labyrinth of thy fury! Shall the elephant Ajax carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at him: O worthy satisfaction! would it were otherwise; that I could beat him, whilst he railed at me. 'Sfoot, I'll learn to conjure and raise devils, but I'll see some issue of my spiteful execrations. Then there's Achilles,—a rare engineer. If Troy be not taken till these two undermine it, the walls will stand till they fall of themselves. O thou great thunder-darter of Olympus, forget that thou art Jove, the king of gods; and, Mercury, lose all the serpentine craft of thy caduceus; if ye take not that little little less-than-little wit from them that they have! which short-aimed ignorance itself knows is so abundant scarce, it will not in circumvention deliver a fly from a spider, without drawing their massy irons and cutting the web. After this, the vengeance on the whole camp! or, rather, the bone-ache! for that, methinks, is the curse dependent on those that war for a placket. I have said my prayers; and devil envy say Amen.—What, ho! my Lord Achilles!

*Enter* PATROCLUS.

*Patr.* Who's there? Thersites! Good Thersites, come in and rail.

*Ther.* If I could have remembered a gilt counterfeit, thou wouldst not have slipped out of my contemplation: but it is no matter; thyself upon thyself! The common curse of mankind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great revenue: heaven bless thee from a tutor, and discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood be thy direction till thy death! then if she that lays thee out says thou art a fair

corse, I'll be sworn and sworn upon't she never shrouded any but lazars. Amen.—Where's Achilles?

*Patr.* What, art thou devout? wast thou in prayer?

*Ther.* Ay; the heavens hear me!

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Who's there?

*Patr.* Thersites, my lord.

*Achil.* Where, where?—Art thou come? Why, my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou not served thyself in to my table so many meals? Come,—what's Agamemnon?

*Ther.* Thy commander, Achilles:—then tell me, Patroclus, what's Achilles?

*Patr.* Thy lord, Thersites: then tell me, I pray thee, what's thyself?

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus: then tell me, Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou mayest tell that knowest.

*Achil.* O, tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Agamemnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my lord; I am Patroclus' knower; and Patroclus is a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool! I have not done.

*Achil.* He is a privileged man.—Proceed, Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a fool; Thersites is a fool; and, as aforesaid, Patroclus is a fool.

*Achil.* Derive this; come.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to command Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be commanded of Agamemnon; Thersites is a fool to serve such a fool; and Patroclus is a fool positive.

*Patr.* Why am I a fool?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the prover. It suffices me thou art.—Look you, who comes here?

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody.—Come in with me, Thersites. *[Exit.*

*Ther.* Here is such patchery, such juggling, and such knavery! all the argument is a cuckold and a whore; a good quarrel to draw emulous factions and bleed to death upon. Now the dry serpigo on the subject! and war and iechery confound all! *[Exit.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIOMEDES,  
and AJAX.

*Agam.* Where is Achilles?

*Patr.* Within his tent; but ill-dispos'd, my lord.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him that we are here.  
He shent our messengers; and we lay by  
Our appertainments, visiting of him:  
Let him be told so; lest, perchance, he think  
We dare not move the question of our place,  
Or know not what we are.

*Patr.* I shall say so to him. *Exit.*

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his tent:  
He is not sick.

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart: you may call  
it melancholy, if you will favour the man; but, by my head,  
'tis pride: but why, why? let him show us the cause.—A  
word, my lord. [*Takes AGAMEMNON aside.*]

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from him.

*Nest.* Who, Thersites?

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have lost his  
argument.

*Ulyss.* No; you see, he is his argument that has his  
argument,—Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better; their fraction is more our wish  
than their faction. But it was a strong composure a fool  
could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity that wisdom knits not, folly may  
easily untie. Here comes Patroclus.

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none for courtesy:  
his legs are legs for necessity, not for flexure.

*Re-enter PATROCLUS.*

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say, he is much sorry,  
If anything more than your sport and pleasure  
Did move your greatness and this noble state  
To call upon him; he hopes it is no other  
But for your health and your digestion sake,—  
An after-dinner's breath.

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus:—  
We are too well acquainted with these answers:  
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,  
Cannot outfly our apprehensions.  
Much attribute he hath; and much the reason  
Why we ascribe it to him: yet all his virtues,—  
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,—  
Do in our eyes begin to lose their gloss;



Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,  
 Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him  
 We come to speak with him; and you shall not sin  
 If you do say we think him over-proud  
 And under-honest; in self-assumption greater  
 Than in the note of judgment; and worthier than himself  
 Here tend the savage strangeness he puts on,  
 Disguise the holy strength of their command,  
 And underwrite in an observing kind  
 His humorous predominance; yea, watch  
 His pettish lunes, his ebbs, his flows, as if  
 The passage and whole carriage of this action  
 Rode on his tide. Go tell him this; and add,  
 That if he overhold his price so much,  
 We'll none of him; but let him, like an engine  
 Not portable, lie under this report,—  
 Bring action hither, this cannot go to war:  
 A stirring dwarf we do allowance give  
 Before a sleeping giant:—tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall; and bring his answer presently. [Exit.

*Agam.* In second voice we'll not be satisfied;  
 We come to speak with him.—Ulysses, enter you.

[Exit ULYSSES.

*Ajax.* What is he more than another?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is.

*Ajax.* Is he so much? Do you not think he thinks himself a better man than I am?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and say he is?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax; you are as strong, as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more gentle, and altogether more tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud? How doth pride grow? I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind is the clearer, Ajax, and your virtues the fairer. He that is proud eats up himself: pride is his own glass, his own trumpet, his own chronicle; and whatever praises itself but in the deed devours the deed in the praise.

*Ajax.* I do hate a proud man as I hate the engendering of toads.

*Nest.* Yet he loves himself: is't not strange? [Aside.

Re-enter ULYSSES.

*Ulyss.* Achilles will not to the field to-morrow.

*Agam.* What's his excuse?

*Ulyss.* He doth rely on none;  
But carries on the stream of his dispose,  
Without observance or respect of any,  
In will peculiar and in self-admission.

*Agam.* Why will he not, upon our fair request,  
Untent his person, and share the air with us?

*Ulyss.* Things small as nothing, for request's sake only  
He makes important: possess'd he is with greatness.  
And speaks not to himself but with a pride  
That quarrels at self-breath: imagin'd worth  
Holds in his blood such swoln and hot discourse  
That 'twixt his mental and his active parts  
Kingdom'd Achilles in commotion rages,  
And batters down himself: what should I say?  
He is so plaguy proud that the death tokens of it  
Cry, *No recovery.*

*Agam.* Let Ajax go to him.—  
Dear lord, go you and greet him in his tent:  
'Tis said he holds you well; and will be led,  
At your request, a little from himself.

*Ulyss.* O Agamemnon, let it not be so!  
We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes  
When they go from Achilles. Shall the proud lord,  
That bastes his arrogance with his own seam,  
And never suffers matter of the world  
Enter his thoughts,—save such as do revolve  
And ruminates himself,—shall he be worshipp'd  
Of that we hold an idol more than he?  
No, this thrice-worthy and right valiant lord  
Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquir'd;  
Nor, by my will, assubjugate his merit,  
As amply titled as Achilles is,  
By going to Achilles:  
That were to enlard his fat-already pride,  
And add more coals to Cancer when he burns  
With entertaining great Hyperion.  
This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid;  
And say in thunder, *Achilles go to him.*

*Nest.* O, this is well; he rubs the vein of him. [*Aside.*]

*Dio.* And how his silence drinks up this applause! [*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my armed fist  
I'll pash him o'er the face.

*Agam.* O, no, you shall not go.

*Ajax.* An 'a be proud with me I'll pheeze his pride:  
Let me go to him.

*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon our quarrel.

*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow!

*Nest.* How he describes himself!

[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* Can he not be sociable?

*Ulyss.* The raven chides blackness.

[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* I'll let his humours blood.

*Agam.* He will be the physician that should be the patient.

[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* An all men were o' my mind,—

*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion.

[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* 'A should not bear it so, 'a should eat swords first: shall pride carry it?

*Nest.* An 'twould, you'd carry half.

[*Aside.*]

*Ulyss.* 'A would have ten shares.

[*Aside.*]

*Ajax.* I will knead him, I'll make him supple.

*Nest.* He's not yet thorough warm: force him with praises: pour in, pour in: his ambition is dry.

[*Aside.*]

*Ulyss.* My lord, you feed too much on this dislike.

[*To* AGAMEMNON.

*Nest.* Our noble general, do not do so.

*Dio.* You must prepare to fight without Achilles.

*Ulyss.* Why, 'tis this naming of him does him harm.

Here is a man—but 'tis before his face;

I will be silent.

*Nest.* Wherefore should you so?

He is not emulous, as Achilles is.

*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as valiant.

*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter thus with us! Would he were a Trojan!

*Nest.* What a vice were it in Ajax now,—

*Ulyss.* If he were proud,—

*Dio.* Or covetous of praise,—

*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne,—

*Dio.* Or strange, or self-affected!

*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of sweet composure;

Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee suck;

Fam'd be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature

Thrice-fam'd, beyond all erudition:

But he that disciplin'd thy arms to fight,

Let Mars divide eternity in twain,

And give him half: and, for thy vigour,

Bull-bearing Milo his addition yield

To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,

Which, like a bourn, a pale, a shore, confines

Thy spacious and dilated parts: here's Nestor,—

Instructed by the antiquary times,  
 He must, he is, he cannot but be wise;—  
 But pardon, father Nestor, were your days  
 As green as Ajax', and your brain so temper'd,  
 You should not have the eminence of him,  
 But be as Ajax.

*Ajax.* Shall I call you father?

*Nest.* Ay, my good son.

*Dio.* Be rul'd by him, Lord Ajax.

*Ulyss.* There is no tarrying here; the hart Achilles  
 Keeps thicket. Please it our great general  
 To call together all his state of war;  
 Fresh kings are come to Troy. To-morrow  
 We must with all our main of power stand fast:  
 And here's a lord,—come knights from east to west,  
 And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep:  
 Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks draw deep.

[*Eceunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—TROY. *A Room in PRIAM'S Palace.*

*Enter PANDARUS and a Servant.*

*Pan.* Friend, you,—pray you, a word: do not you follow  
 the young Lord Paris?

*Serv.* Ay, sir, when he goes before me.

*Pan.* You depend upon him, I mean?

*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.

*Pan.* You depend upon a noble gentleman;  
 I must needs praise him.

*Serv.* The lord be praised!

*Pan.* You know me, do you not?

*Serv.* Faith, sir, superficially.

*Pan.* Friend, know me better; I am the Lord Pandarus.

*Serv.* I hope I shall know your honour better.

*Pan.* I do desire it.

*Serv.* You are in the state of grace. [*Music within.*]

*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend; honour and lordship are  
 my titles.—What music is this?

*Serv.* I do but partly know, sir: it is music in parts.

*Pan.* Know you the musicians?

*Serv.* Wholly, sir.

*Pan.* Who play they to?

*Serv.* To the hearers, sir.

*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?

*Serv.* At mine, sir, and theirs that love music.

*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.

*Serv.* Who shall I command, sir?

*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one another: I am too courtly, and thou art too cunning. At whose request do these men play?

*Serv.* That's to't, indeed, sir. Marry, sir, at the request of Paris my lord, who is there in person; with him, the mortal Venus, the heart-blood of beauty, love's invisible soul,—

*I an.* Who, my cousin Cressida?

*Serv.* No, sir, Helen: could you not find out that by her attributes?

*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the Lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the Prince Troilus: I will make a complimentary assault upon him, for my business seethes.

*Serv.* Sodden business! there's a stewed phrase indeed!

*Enter PARIS and HELEN, attended.*

*Pan.* Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measure, fairly guide them!—especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!

*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.

*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen.—Fair prince, here is good broken music.

*Par.* You have broke it, consin: and by my life, you shall make it whole again; you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance.—Nell, he is full of harmony.

*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.

*Helen.* O, sir,—

*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.

*Par.* Well said, my lord! well, you say so in fits.

*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen.—My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?

*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out: we'll hear you sing, certainly.

*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me.—But, marry, thus, my lord,—My dear lord, and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus,—

*Helen.* My Lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—

*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to:—commends himself most affectionately to you,—

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our melody: if you do, our melancholy upon your head!

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen; that's a sweet queen, i' faith.

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la. Nay, I care not for such words; no, no.—And, my lord, he desires you that, if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My Lord Pandarus,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen,—my very very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploit's in hand? where sups he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but, my lord,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen?—My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sups.

*Par.* I'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida.

*Pan.* No, no, no such matter; you are wide: come, your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord. Why should you say Cressida? no, your poor disposer's sick.

*Par.* I spy.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy?—Come, give me an instrument.—Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my Lord Paris.

*Pan.* He! no, she'll none of him; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I'll hear no more of this; I'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, pr'ythee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Love! ay, that it shall, i' faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so:

[Sings.

Love, love, nothing but love, still more!  
 For, oh, love's bow  
 Shoots buck and doe:  
 The shaft confounds,  
 Not that it wounds,  
 But tickles still the sore.  
 These lovers cry—Oh! oh! they die!  
 Yet that which seems the wound to kill,  
 Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!  
 So dying love lives still:  
 Oh! oh! a while, but ha! ha! ha!  
 Oh! oh! groans out for ha! ha! ha!

Heigh-ho!

*Helen.* In love, i' faith, to the very tip of the nose.

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love; and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love? hot blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds? Why, they are vipers: is love a generation of vipers?—Sweet lord, who's a-field to-day?

*Par.* Hector, Deiphobus, Helenus, Antenor, and all the gallantry of Troy: I would fain have armed to-day, but my Nell would not have it so. How chance my brother Troilus went not?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something:—you know all, Lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen.—I long to hear how they sped to-day. You'll remember your brother's excuse?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen.

[*Exit.*

[*A retreat sounded.*

*Par.* They are come from field: let us to Priam's hall  
 To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must woo you  
 To help unarm our Hector: his stubborn buckles,  
 With these your white enchanting fingers touch'd,  
 Shall more obey than to the edge of steel,  
 Or force of Greekish sinews; you shall do more  
 Than all the island kings,—disarm great Hector.

*Helen.* 'Twill make us proud to be his servant, Paris;  
 Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty  
 Gives us more palm in beauty than we have,  
 Yea, overshines ourself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—TROY. PANDARUS' Orchard.

*Enter PANDARUS and TROIILUS' Boy, meeting.*

*Pan.* How now! where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Boy.* No, sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

*Pan.* O, here he comes.

*Enter TROIILUS.*

How now, how now!

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off.

[*Exit Boy.*]

*Pan.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door,  
Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks  
Staying for waftage. O, be thou my Charon,  
And give me swift transportance to those fields  
Where I may wallow in the lily beds  
Propos'd for the deserver! O gentle Pandarus,  
From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings,  
And fly with me to Cressid!

*Pan.* Walk here i' the orchard, I'll bring her straight.

[*Exit.*]

*Tro.* I am giddy; expectation whirls me round.  
The imaginary relish is so sweet  
That it enchants my sense: what will it be,  
When that the wat'ry palate tastes indeed  
Love's thrice-repured nectar? death, I fear me;  
Swooning destruction; or some joy too fine,  
Too subtle-potent, tun'd too sharp in sweetness,  
For the capacity of my ruder powers:  
I fear it much; and I do fear besides  
That I shall lose distinction in my joys;  
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps  
The enemy flying.

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

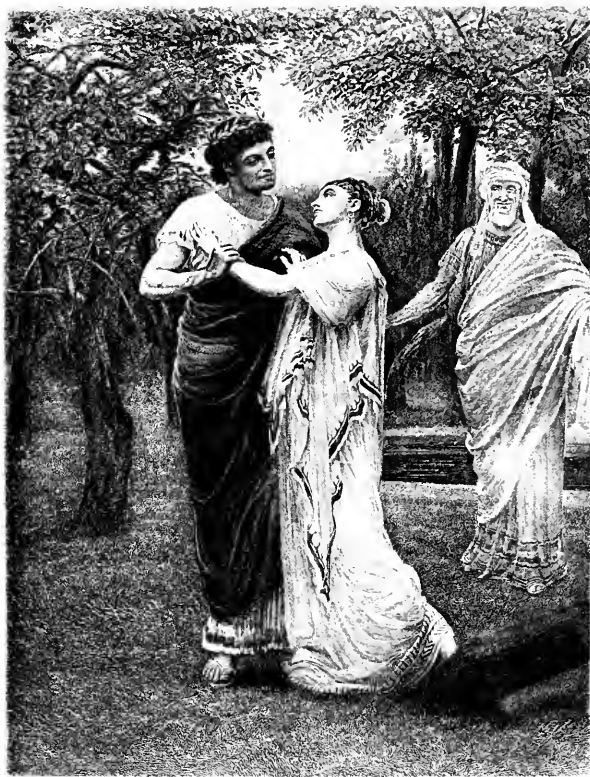
*Pan.* She's making her ready, she'll come straight:  
you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches  
her wind so short, as if she were frayed with a sprite:  
I'll fetch her. It is the prettiest villain: she fetches her  
breath as short as a new-ta'en sparrow.

[*Exit.*]

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom:  
My heart beats thicker than a feverous pulse;  
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,







© C. ARMYTAGE, F. I. N. X.

TROILUS AND CRESSIDA

*Act III, Scene II.*





Like vassalage at unawares encount ring  
The eye of majesty.

*Re-enter PANDARUS with CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Come, come, what need you blush? shame's a baby.—Here she is now: swear the oaths now to her that you have sworn to me.—What, are you gone again? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you? Come your ways, come your ways; an you draw backward, we'll put you i' the fills.—Why do you not speak to her?—Come, draw this curtain, and let's see your picture. Alas the day, how loth you are to offend daylight! an' 'twere dark, you'd close sooner. So, so; rub on, and kiss the mistress. How now, a kiss in fee-farm! build there, carpenter; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out ere I part you. The falcon as the tercel, for all the ducks i' the river: go to, go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Pan.* Words pay no debts, give her decds: but she'll bereave you o'the d'eds too, if she call your activity in question. What, billing again? Here's—*In witness whereof the parties interchangeably*—Come in, come in: I'll go get a fire. [Exit.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Tro.* O Cressida, how often have I wished me thus!

*Cres.* Wished, my lord!—The gods grant,—O my lord!

*Tro.* What should they grant? what makes this pretty abruption? What too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love?

*Cres.* More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils of cherubims; they never see truly.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer footing than blind reason stumbling without fear: to fear the worst oft cures the worse.

*Tro.* O, let my lady apprehend no fear: in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither?

*Tro.* Nothing, but our undertakings; when we vow to weep seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstrosity in love, lady,—that the will is infinite, and the execution confined; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to limit.

*Cres.* They say, all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they

never perform; vowing more than the perfection of ten, and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions and the act of hares, are they not monsters?

*Tro.* Are there such? such are not we: praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove; our head shall go bare till merit crown it: no perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert before his birth; and, being born, his addition shall be humble. Few words to fair faith: Troilus shall be such to Cressid as what envy can say worst shall be a moek for his truth; and what truth can speak truest not truer than Troilus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* What, blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that: if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me. Be true to my lord: if he flinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages; your uncle's word and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too: our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant being won: they are burs, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown.

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart:—Prince Troilus, I have lov'd you night and day For many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid, then, so hard to win?

*Cres.* Hard to seem won; but I was won, my lord,  
With the first glance that ever—Pardon me,—  
If I confess much, you will play the tyrant.  
I love you now; but not, till now, so much  
But I might master it:—in faith, I lie;  
My thoughts were like unbridled children, grown  
Too headstrong for their mother:—see, we fools!  
Why have I blabb'd? who shall be true to us,  
When we are so unsecret to ourselves?—  
But, though I lov'd you well, I woo'd you not;  
And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man,  
Or that we women had men's privilege  
Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue;  
For, in this rapture, I shall surely speak  
The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence,

Cunning in dumbness, from my weakness draws  
My very soul of conscience!—Stop my mouth.

*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues thence.

*Pan.* Pretty, i' faith.

*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me;  
'Twas not my purpose thus to beg a kiss:  
I am ashamed;—O heavens! what have I done?  
For this time will I take my leave, my lord.

*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid!

*Pan.* Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning,—

*Cres.* Pray you, content you.

*Tro.* What offends you, lady?

*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.

*Tro.* You cannot shun

Yourself.

*Cres.* Let me go and try:

I have a kind of self resides with you;  
But an unkind self, that itself will leave  
To be another's fool. I would be gone:—  
Where is my wit? I know not what I speak.

*Tro.* Well know they what they speak that speak so  
wisely.

*Cres.* Perchance, my lord, I show more craft than love;  
And fell so roundly to a large confession,  
To angle for your thoughts: but you are wise;  
Or else you love not; for to be wise and love  
Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above.

*Tro.* O that I thought it could be in a woman,—  
As, if it can, I will presume in you,—  
To feed for aye her lamp and flames of love;  
To keep her constancy in plight and youth,  
Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind  
That doth renew swifter than blood decays!  
Or, that persuasion could but thus convince me,—  
That my integrity and truth to you  
Might be affronted with the match and weight  
Of such a winnow'd purity in love;  
How were I then uplifted! but, alas!  
I am as true as truth's simplicity,  
And simpler than the infancy of truth.

*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.

*Tro.* O virtuous fight,  
When right with right wars who shall be most right!  
True swains in love shall, in the world to come,  
Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rhymes,  
Full of protest, of oath, and big compare,

Want similes, truth tir'd with iteration,—  
 As true as steel, as plantage to the moon,  
 As sun to day, as turtle to her mate,  
 As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,—  
 Yet, after all comparisons of truth,  
 As truth's authentic author to be cited,  
 As true as Troilus shall crown up the verse,  
 And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.* Prophet may you be!  
 If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth,  
 When time is old and hath forgot itself,  
 When waterdrops have worn the stones of Troy,  
 And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up,  
 And mighty states characterless are grated  
 To dusty nothing; yet let memory  
 From false to false, among false maids in love,  
 Upbraid my falsehood! when they have said—as false  
 As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,  
 As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,  
 Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son;  
 Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of falsehood,  
 As false as Cressid.

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made: seal it, seal it; I'll be the witness. Here I hold your hand; here my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers between be called to the world's end after my name, call them all Pandars; let all constant men be Troiluses, all false women Cressids, and all brokers-between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed; which bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, press it to death: away!  
 And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here,  
 Bed, chamber, Pandar to provide this gear! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*The Grecian Camp.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR, AJAX,  
 MENELAUS, and CALCHAS.

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you  
 The advantage of the time prompts me aloud  
 To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind



That, through the sight I bear in things to Jove,  
 I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession,  
 Incurr'd a traitor's name; expos'd myself,  
 From certain and possess'd conveniences,  
 To doubtful fortunes; sequest'ring from me all  
 That time, acquaintance, custom, and condition  
 Made tame and most familiar to my nature;  
 And here, to do you service, am become  
 As new into the world, strange, unacquainted:  
 I do beseech you, as in way of taste,  
 To give me now a little benefit,  
 Out of those many register'd in promise,  
 Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

*Agam.* What wouldst thou of us, Trojan? make demand.

*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, call'd Antenor,  
 Yesterday took: Troy holds him very dear.  
 Oft have you,—often have you thanks therefore,—  
 Desir'd my Cressid in right great exchange,  
 Whom Troy hath still denied: but this Antenor,  
 I know, is such a wrest in their affairs  
 That their negotiations all must slack  
 Wanting his manage; and they will almost  
 Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam,  
 In change of him: let him be sent, great princes,  
 And he shall buy my daughter; and her presence  
 Shall quite strike off all service I have done  
 In most accepted pain.

*Agam.* Let Diomedes bear him,  
 And bring us Cressid hither: Calchas shall have  
 What he requests of us.—Good Diomed,  
 Furnish you fairly for this interchange:  
 Withal, bring word if Hector will to-morrow  
 Be answer'd in his challenge: Ajax is ready.

*Dio.* This shall I undertake; and 'tis a burden  
 Which I am proud to bear.

[*Exeunt DIOMEDES and CALCHAS*]

*Enter* ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before their tent.

*Ulyss.* Achilles stands i' the entrance of his tent:—  
 Please it our general to pass strangely by him,  
 As if he were forgot; and, princes all,  
 Lay negligent and loose regard upon him:  
 I will come last. 'Tis like he'll question me  
 Why such unplausible eyes are bent on him:  
 If so, I have derision med'cinable,  
 To use between your strangeness and his pride,

Which his own will shall have desire to drink:  
 It may do good: pride hath no other glass  
 To show itself but pride; for supple knees  
 Feed arrogance, and are the proud man's fees.

*Agam.* We'll execute your purpose, and put on  
 A form of strangeness as we pass along;—  
 So do each lord; and either greet him not,  
 Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him more  
 Than if not look'd on. I will lead the way.

*Achil.* What, comes the general to speak with me?  
 You know my mind, I'll fight no more 'gainst Troy.

*Agam.* What says Achilles? would he aught with us?

*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the general?

*Achil.* No.

*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.

*Agam.* The better.

[*Exeunt* AGAM. and NEST.]

*Achil.* Good day, good day.

*Men.* How do you? how do you?

[*Exit.*]

*Achil.* What, does the cuckold scorn me?

*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus?

*Achil.* Good-morrow, Ajax.

*Ajax.* Ha?

*Achil.* Good-morrow.

*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too.

[*Exit.*]

*Achil.* What mean these fellows? Know they not  
 Achilles?

*Patr.* They pass by strangely: they were us'd to bend,  
 To send their smiles before them to Achilles;  
 To come as humbly as they us'd to creep  
 To holy altars.

*Achil.* What, am I poor of late?  
 'Tis certain, greatness, once fallen out with fortune,  
 Must fall out with men too. What the declin'd is,  
 He shall as soon read in the eyes of others  
 As feel on his own fall: for men, like butterflies,  
 Show not their mealy wings but to the summer;  
 And not a man, for being simply man,  
 Hath any honour; but honour for those honours  
 That are without him, as place, riches, and favour,  
 Prizes of accident as oft as merit:  
 Which when they fall, as being slippery standers,  
 The love that lean'd on them as slippery too,  
 Do one pluck down another, and together  
 Die in the fall. But 'tis not so with me:  
 Fortune and I are friends; I do enjoy  
 At ample point all that I did possess

Save these men's looks; who do, methinks, find out  
 Something not worth in me such rich beholding  
 As they have often given. Here is Ulysses:  
 I'll interrupt his reading.—  
 How now, Ulysses!

*Ulyss.* Now, great Thetis' son!

*Achil.* What are you reading?

*Ulyss.* A strange fellow here  
 Writes me, That man,—how dearly ever parted,  
 How much in having, or without or in,—  
 Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,  
 Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection;  
 As when his virtues shiuing upon others  
 Heat them, and they retort that heat again  
 To the first giver.

*Achil.* This is not strange, Ulysses.  
 The beauty that is borne here in the face  
 The bearer knows not, but commends itself  
 To others' eyes: nor doth the eye itself,—  
 That most pure spirit of sense,—behold itself,  
 Not going from itself; but eye to eye oppos'd:  
 Salutes each other with each other's form:  
 For speculation turns not to itself  
 Till it hath travell'd, and is mirror'd there  
 Where it may see itself. This is not strange at all.

*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position,—  
 It is familiar,—but at the author's drift;  
 Who, in his circumstance, expressly proves  
 That no man is the lord of anything,—  
 Though in and of him there be much consisting,—  
 Till he communicate his parts to others;  
 Nor doth he of himself know them for aught  
 Till he behold them form'd in the applause  
 Where they're extended; who, like an arch, reverberates  
 The voice again; or, like a gate of steel  
 Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
 His figure and his heat. I was much rapt in this;  
 And apprehended here immediately  
 The unknown Ajax.  
 Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse;  
 That has he knows not what. Nature, what things there are  
 Most abject in regard and dear in use!  
 What things again most dear in the esteem  
 And poor in worth! Now shall we see to-morrow  
 An act that very chance doth throw upon him,  
 Ajax renown'd. O heavens, what some men do,

While some men leave to do!

How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,  
 Whiles others play the idiots in her eyes!  
 How one man eats into another's pride,  
 While pride is fasting in his wantonness!  
 To see these Grecian lords!—why, even already  
 They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder  
 As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast,  
 And great Troy shrinking.

*Achil.* I do believe it; for they pass'd by me  
 As misers do by beggars,—neither gave to me  
 Good word nor look. What, are my deeds forget?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his back,  
 Wherein he puts alms for oblivion,  
 A great-siz'd monster of ingratitude:  
 Those scraps are good deeds past; which are devour'd  
 As fast as they are made, forgot as soon  
 As done: perseverance, dear my lord,  
 Keeps honour bright: to have done is to hang  
 Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail  
 In monumental mockery. Take the instant way;  
 For honour travels in a strait so narrow,  
 Where one but goes abreast: keep, then, the path;  
 For emulation hath a thousand sons  
 That one by one pursue: if you give way,  
 Or hedge aside from the direct forthright,  
 Like to an enter'd tide they all rush by  
 And leave you hindmost;  
 Or, like a gallant horse fall'n in first rank,  
 Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,  
 O'er-run and trampled on: then what they do in present,  
 Though less than yours in past, must o'ertop yours;  
 For time is like a fashionable host,  
 That slightly shakes his parting guest by the hand;  
 And with his arms out-stretch'd, as he would fly,  
 Grasps-in the comer: welcome ever smiles,  
 And farewell goes out sighing. O, let not virtue seek  
 Remuneration for the thing it was;  
 For beauty, wit,  
 High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,  
 Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all  
 To envious and calumniating time.  
 One touch of nature makes the whole world kin,—  
 That all, with one consent, praise new-born gawds,  
 Though they are made and moulded of things past;  
 And give to dust that is a little gilt

More laud than gilt o'er-dusted. The present eye  
 Praises the present object:  
 Then marvel not, thou great and complete man,  
 That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax;  
 Since things in motion sooner catch the eye  
 Than what not stirs. The cry went once on thee,  
 And still it might; and yet it may again,  
 If thou wouldst not entomb thyself alive,  
 And ease thy reputation in thy tent;  
 Whose glorious deeds but in these fields of late  
 Made emulous missions 'mongst the gods themselves,  
 And drove great Mars to faction.

*Achil.* Of this my privacy  
 I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.* But 'gainst your privacy  
 The reasons are more potent and heroical:  
 'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love  
 With one of Priam's daughters.

*Achil.* Ha! known!

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder?

The providence that's in a watchful state  
 Knows almost every grain of Pluto's gold;  
 Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps;  
 Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the gods,  
 Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.

There is a mystery—with whom relation  
 Durst never meddle—in the soul of state;  
 Which hath an operation more divine  
 Than breath or pen can give expressure to:  
 All the commerce that you have had with Troy  
 As perfectly is ours as yours, my lord;  
 And better would it fit Achilles much

To throw down Hector than Polyxena:  
 But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home,  
 When fame shall in our island sound her trumpet;  
 And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing,  
*Great Hector's sister did Achilles win;*  
*But our brave Ajax bravely beat down him.*

Farewell, my lord: I as your lover speak;  
 The fool slides o'er the ice that you should break. [Exit

*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I moved you:  
 A woman impudent and mannish grown  
 Is not more leath'd than an effeminate man  
 In time of action. I stand condemn'd for this;  
 They think my little stomach to the war,  
 And your great love to me, restrains you thus:

Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wanton Cupid  
 Shall from your neck unloose his amorous fold,  
 And, like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,  
 Be shook to air.

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector?

*Patr.* Ay, and perhaps receive much honour by him.

*Achil.* I see my reputation is at stake;  
 My fame is shrewdly gor'd.

*Patr.* O, then, beware;

Those wounds heal ill that men do give themselves;  
 Omission to do what is necessary  
 Seals a commission to a blank of danger;  
 And danger, like an ague, subtly taints  
 Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Thersites hither, sweet Patroclus:  
 I'll send the fool to Ajax, and desire him  
 To invite the Trojan lords, after the combat,  
 To see us here unarm'd: I have a woman's longing,  
 An appetite that I am sick withal,  
 To see great Hector in his weeds of peace;  
 To talk with him, and to behold his visage,  
 Even to my full of view. A labour sav'd!

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* A wonder!

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field asking for himself.

*Achil.* How so?

*Ther.* He must fight singly to-morrow with Hector;  
 and is so prophetically proud of an heroic cudgelling that  
 he raves in saying nothing.

*Achil.* How can that be?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a peacock,—a  
 stride and a stand: ruminates like an hostess that hath  
 no arithmetic but her brain to set down her reckoning:  
 bites his lip with a politic regard, as who should say, There  
 were wit in this head, an 'twould out; and so there is; but  
 it lies as coldly in him as fire in a flint, which will not  
 show without knocking. The man's undone for ever; for  
 if Hector break not his neck i'the combat, he'll break it  
 himself in vain-glory. He knows not me: I said *Good-*  
*morrow, Ajax*; and he replies, *Thanks, Agamemnon.*  
 What think you of this man, that takes me for the general?  
 He is grown a very land fish, languageless, a monster. A  
 plague of opinion! a man may wear it on both sides, like a  
 leather jerkin.

*Achil.* Thou must be my ambassador to him, Thersites.

*Ther.* Who, I? why, he'll answer nobody; he professes not answering: speaking is for beggars; he wears his tongue in 's arms. I will put on his presence: let Patroclus make demands to me, you shall see the pageant of Ajax.

*Achil.* To him, Patroclus: tell him,—I humbly desire the valiant Ajax to invite the most valorous Hector to come unarmed to my tent; and to procure safe conduct for his person of the magnanimous and most illustrious six-or-seven-times-honoured captain-general of the Grecian army. Agamemnon. Do this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax!

*Ther.* Hum!

*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles,—

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you to invite Hector to his tent,—

*Ther.* Hum!

*Patr.* And to procure safe conduct from Agamemnon.

*Ther.* Agamemnon!

*Patr.* Ay, my lord.

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* What say you to't?

*Ther.* God be wi' you, with all my heart.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven o'clock it will go one way or other: howsoever, he shall pay for me ere he has me.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.

*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune, is he?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o' tune thus. What music will be in him when Hector has knocked out his brains I know not: but, I am sure, none; unless the fiddler Apollo get his sinews to make catlings ou.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him straight.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse; for that's the more capable creature.

*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain stirr'd;  
And I myself see not the bottom of it.

[*Exeunt* ACHIL. and PATROCLUS.]

*Ther.* Would the fountain of your mind were clear again, that I might water an ass at it! I had rather be a tick in a sheep than such a valiant ignorance. [Exit.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—TROY. *A Street.*

*Enter, at one side, ÆNEAS, and Servant with a torch; at the other, PARIS, DELPHOEBUS, ANTENOR, DIOMEDES, and others, with torches.*

*Par.* See, ho! who's that there?

*Dei.* 'Tis the Lord Æneas.

*Æne.* Is the prince there in person?—

Had I so good occasion to lie long  
As you, Prince Paris, nothing but heavenly business  
Should rob my bed-mate of my company.

*Dio.* That's my mind too.—Good-morrow, Lord Æneas.

*Par.* A valiant Greek, Æneas,—take his hand,—  
Witness the process of your speech, wherein  
You told how Diomed, a whole week by days,  
Did haunt you in the field.

*Æne.* Health to you, valiant sir,  
During all question of the gentle truce;  
But when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance  
As heart can think or courage execute.

*Dio.* The one and other Diomed embraces.  
Our bloods are now in calm; and, so long, health;  
But when contention and occasion meet,  
By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life  
With all my force, pursuit, and policy.

*Æne.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that will fly  
With his face backward.—In humane gentleness,  
Welcome to Troy! now, by Anchises' life,  
Welcome indeed! By Venus' hand I swear  
No man alive can love, in such a sort,  
The thing he means to kill, more excellently.

*Dio.* We sympathize.—Jove, let Æneas live,  
If to my sword his fate be not the glory,  
A thousand complete courses of the sun!  
But, in mine emulous honour, let him die,  
With every joint a wound, and that to-morrow!

*Æne.* We know each other well.

*Dio.* We do; and long to know each other worse.

*Par.* This is the most spiteful gentle greeting,  
The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of.—  
What business, lord, so early?

*Æne.* I was sent for to the king; but why, I know not.



*Par.* His purpose meets you: 'twas to bring this Greek  
To Calchas' house; and there to render him,  
For the enfréed Antenor, the fair Cressid:  
Let's have your company; or, if you please,  
Haste there before us: I constantly do think,—  
Or, rather, call my thought a certain knowledge,—  
My brother Troilus lodges there to-night:  
Rouse him, and give him note of our approach,  
With the whole quality wherefore: I fear  
We shall be much unwelcome.

*Ane.* That I assure you:  
Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece  
Than Cressid borne from Troy.

*Par.* There is no help;  
The bitter disposition of the time  
Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.

*Ane.* Good-morrow, all. *[Exit, with Servant.*

*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed,—faith, tell me  
true,

Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship,—  
Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,  
Myself or Menelaus?

*Dio.* Both alike:  
He merits well to have her, that doth seek her,—  
Not making any scruple of her soilure,—  
With such a hell of pain and world of charge;  
And you as well to keep her, that defend her,—  
Not palating the taste of her dishonour,—  
With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:  
He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up  
The lees and dregs of a flat tamed piece;  
You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins  
Are pleas'd to breed out your inheritors:  
Both merits pois'd, each weighs nor less nor more;  
But he as he, each heavier for a whore.

*Par.* You are too bitter to your countrywoman.

*Dio.* She's bitter to her country. Hear me, Paris:—  
For every false drop in her bawdy veins  
A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple  
Of her contaminated carrion weight  
A Trojan hath been slain: since she could speak,  
She hath not given so many good words breath  
As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.

*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,  
Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy:  
But we in silence hold this virtue well,—

We'll not commend what we intend to sell,  
Here lies our way.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—TROY. *Court of PANDARUS' House.*

*Enter TROIILUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself: the morn is cold.

*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine uncle down;  
He shall unbolt the gates.

*Tro.* Trouble him not;  
To bed, to bed: sleep kill those pretty eyes,  
And give as soft attachment to thy senses  
As infants' empty of all thought!

*Cres.* Good-morrow, then.

*Tro.* I pr'ythee now, to bed.

*Cres.* Are you aweary of me?

*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,  
Wak'd by the lark, hath rous'd the ribald crows,  
And dreaming night will hide our joys no longer,  
I would not from thee.

*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.

*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous wights she stays  
As tediously as hell; but flies the grasps of love  
With wings more momentary-swift than thought.  
You will catch cold, and curse me.

*Cres.* Pr'ythee, tarry;—

You men will never tarry.—

O foolish Cressid!—I might have still held off,  
And then you would have tarried. Hark! there's one up.

*Pan.* [*within.*] What, 's all the doors open here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

*Cres.* A pestilence on him! now will he be mocking:  
I shall have such a life!—

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* How now, how now? how go maidenheads?—Here,  
you maid! where's my cousin Cressid?

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking uncle!  
You bring me to do, and then you flout me too.

*Pan.* To do what? to do what?—let her say what:  
what have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come, beshrew your heart! you'll ne'er be  
good,  
Nor suffer others.

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! ah, poor capocchio!

hast not slept to-night? would he not, a naughty man, let it sleep? a bugbear take him!

*Cres.* Did not I tell you?—would he were knock'd i' the head!— [Knocking.]

Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see.—

My lord, come you again into my chamber:

You smile, and mock me, as if I meant naughtily.

*Tro.* Ha! ha!

*Cres.* Come, you are deceiv'd, I think of no such thing.— [Knocking.]

How earnestly they knock!—Pray you, come in:

I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Ereunt TROIILUS and CRESSIDA.*]

*Pan* [*going to the door.*] Who's there? what's the matter? will you beat down the door? How now? what's the matter?

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* Good-morrow, lord, good-morrow.

*Pan.* Who's there! my lord Æneas? By my troth, I knew you not: what news with you so early?

*Æne.* Is not Prince Troilus here?

*Pan.* Here! what should he do here?

*Æne.* Come, he is here, my lord; do not deny him: It doth import him much to speak with me.

*Pan.* Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I know, I'll be sworn.—For my own part, I came in late. What should he do here?

*Æne.* Who!—nay, then:—come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you are ware: you'll be so true to him to be false to him: do not you know of him, but yet go fetch him hither; go.

*As PANDARUS is going out, re-enter TROIILUS.*

*Tro.* How now! what's the matter?

*Æne.* My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute you, My matter is so rash. There is at hand Paris your brother, and Deiphobus, The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor Deliver'd to us; and for him forthwith, Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour, We must give up to Diomedes' hand The Lady Cressida.

*Tro.* Is it so concluded?

*Æne.* By Priam, and the general state of Troy: They are at hand, and ready to effect it.

*Tro.* How my achievements mock me!  
I will go meet them:—and, my Lord Æneas,  
We met by chance; you did not find me here.

*Æne.* Good, good, my lord; the secrets of nature  
Have not more gift in taciturnity.

[*Exeunt TROIILUS and ÆNEAS.*]

*Pan.* Is't possible? no sooner got but lost? The devil  
take Antenor! the young prince will go mad: a plague  
upon Antenor! I would they had broke's neck!

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Cres.* How now! what is the matter? who was here?

*Pan.* Ah, ah!

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly? where's my lord?  
gone! tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Would I were as deep under the earth as I am  
above!

*Cres.* O the gods! what's the matter?

*Pan.* Pr'ythee, get thee in. Would thou hadst ne'er  
been born? I knew thou wouldst be his death!—O, poor  
gentleman!—A plague upon Antenor?

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you, on my knees I beseech  
you, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench, thou must be gone;  
thou art changed for Antenor: thou must to thy father,  
and be gone from Troilus: 'twill be his death; 'twill be his  
bane; he cannot bear it.

*Cres.* O you immortal gods!—I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must.

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my father;  
I know no touch of consanguinity;  
No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me  
As the sweet Troilus.—O you gods divine?  
Make Cressid's name the very crown of falsehood  
If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and death,  
Do to this body what extremes you can;  
But the strong base and building of my love  
Is as the very centre of the earth,  
Drawing all things to it.—I'll go in and weep,—

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair, and scratch my praised  
cheeks;  
Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my heart  
With sounding Troilus. I will not go from Troy. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—TROY. *Street before PANDARUS' House.*

*Enter PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR,  
and DIOMEDES.*

*Par.* It is great morning; and the hour prefix'd  
Of her delivery to this valiant Greek  
Comes fast upon:—good my brother Troilus,  
Tell you the lady what she is to do,  
And haste her to the purpose.

*Tro.* Walk in to her house;  
I'll bring her to the Grecian presently:  
And to his hand when I deliver her,  
Think it an altar; and thy brother Troilus  
A priest, there offering to it his own heart. [Exit.

*Par.* I know what 'tis to love;  
And would, as I shall pity, I could help!—  
Please you walk in, my lords. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—TROY. *A Room in PANDARUS' House.*

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Be moderate, be moderate.

*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation?  
The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,  
And violenteth in a sense as strong  
As that which causeth it: how can I moderate it?  
If I could temporize with my affection,  
Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,  
The like allayment could I give my grief:  
My love admits no qualifying dross;  
No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

*Pan.* Here, here, here he comes.

*Enter TROILUS.*

Ah, sweet ducks!

*Cres.* O Troilus! Troilus! [Embracing him.

*Pan.* What a pair of spectacles is here! Let me embrace too. *O heart,* as the goodly saying is,—

O heart, heavy heart,  
Why sigh'st thou without breaking?

where he answers again,

Because thou canst not ease thy smart  
By silence nor by speaking.

There was never a truer rhyme. Let us cast away nothing, for we may live to have need of such a verse: we see it, we see it.—How now, lambs!

*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a purity  
That the bless'd gods,—as angry with my fancy,  
More bright in zeal than the devotion which  
Cold lips blow to their deities,—take thee from me.

*Cres.* Have the gods envy?

*Pan.* Ay, ay, ay, ay; 'tis too plain a case

*Cres.* And is it true that I must go from Troy?

*Tro.* A hateful truth.

*Cres.* What, and from Troilus too?

*Tro.* From Troy and Troilus.

*Cres.* Is it possible?

*Tro.* And suddenly; where injury of chance  
Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by  
All time of pause, rudeiy beguiles our lips  
Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents  
Our lock'd embrasures, strangles our dear vows  
Even in the birth of our own lab'ring breath:  
We two, that with so many thousand sighs  
Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves  
With the rude brevity and discharge of one.  
Injurious time now, with a robber's haste,  
Crams his rich thievery up, he knows not how:  
As many farewells as be stars in heaven,  
With distinct breath and consigu'd kisses to them,  
He fumbles up into a loose adieu;  
And scants us with a single famish'd kiss,  
Distasted with the salt of broken tears.

*Ene.* [within.] My lord, is the lady ready?

*Tro.* Hark! you are call'd. Some say the Genius so  
Cries, *Come!* to him that instantly must die.—  
Bid them have patience; she shall come anon.

*Pan.* Where are my tears? rain, to lay this wind, or my  
heart will be blown up by the root? [Exit.]

*Cres.* I must, then, to the Grecians?

*Tro.* No remedy.

*Cres.* A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry Grecks!  
When shall we see again?

*Tro.* Hear me, my love. Be thou but true of heart,—

*Cres.* I true! how now! what wicked deem is this?

*Tro.* Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,  
For it is parting from us:

I speak not *be thou true*, as fearing thee;

For I will throw my glove to death himself

That there's no maculation in thy heart:  
 But *be thou true*, say I, to fashion in  
 My sequent protestation; be thou true,  
 And I will see thee.

*Cres.* O, you shall be expos'd, my lord, to dangers  
 As infinite as imminent! but I'll be true.

*Tro.* And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear this sleeve.

*Cres.* And you this glove. When shall I see you?

*Tro.* I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels,  
 To give thee nightly visitation.  
 But yet be true.

*Cres.* O heavens!—be true, again!

*Tro.* Hear why I speak it, love:  
 The Grecian youths are full of quality;  
 They're loving, well compos'd, with gifts of nature flowing,  
 And swelling o'er with arts and exercise:  
 How novelty may move, and parts with person,  
 Alas, a kind of godly jealousy,—  
 Which, I beseech you, call a virtuous sin,—  
 Makes me afeard.

*Cres.* O heavens! you love me not.

*Tro.* Die I a villain, then!

In this I do not call your faith in question  
 So mainly as my merit; I cannot sing,  
 Nor heel the high lavolt, nor sweeten talk,  
 Nor play at subtle games; fair virtues all,  
 To which the Grecians are most prompt and pregnant;  
 But I can tell, that in each grace of these  
 There lurks a still and dumb-discursive devil  
 That tempts most cunningly: but be not tempted.

*Cres.* Do you think I will!

*Tro.* No.

But something may be done that we will not:  
 And sometimes we are devils to ourselves,  
 When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,  
 Presuming on their changeful potency.

*Æne.* [*within.*] Nay, good my lord,—

*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part.

*Par.* [*within.*] Brother Troilus!

*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;  
 And bring Æneas and the Grecian with you.

*Cres.* My lord, will you be true?

*Tro.* Who, I? alas, it is my vice, my fault:  
 While others fish with craft for great opinion,  
 I with great truth catch mere simplicity;  
 Whilst some with cunning gild their copper crowns,

With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.  
 Fear not my truth: the moral of my wit  
 Is—plain and true; there's all the reach of it.

*Enter ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTENOR, DEIPHOBUS, and  
 DIOMEDES.*

Welcome, Sir Diomed! here is the lady  
 Which for Antenor we deliver you:  
 At the port, lord, I'll give her to thy hand;  
 And by the way possess thee what she is.  
 Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,  
 If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,  
 Name Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe  
 As Priam is in Ilium.

*Dio.* Fair Lady Cressid,  
 So please you, save the thanks this prince expects:  
 The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,  
 Pleads your fair usage; and to Diomed  
 You shall be mistress, and command him wholly.

*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me courteously,  
 To shame the zeal of my petition to thee  
 In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,  
 She is as far high-soaring o'er thy praises  
 As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.  
 I charge thee use her well, even for my charge;  
 For, by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,  
 Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,  
 I'll cut thy throat.

*Dio.* O, be not mov'd, Prince Troilus:  
 Let me be privileg'd by my place and message  
 To be a speaker free; when I am hence  
 I'll answer to my lust: and know you, lord,  
 I'll nothing do on charge: to her own worth  
 She shall be priz'd; but that you say, be't so,  
 I'll speak it in my spirit and honour, no.

*Tro.* Come, to the port.—I'll tell thee, Diomed,  
 This brave shall oft make thee to hide thy head.—  
 Lady, give me your hand; and, as we walk,  
 To our own selves bend we our needful talk.

*[Exit TRO., CRES., and DIOMEDES.  
 [Trumpet within.]*

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Æne.* How have we spent this morning!  
 The prince must think me tardy and remiss,  
 That swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'Tis Troilus' fault. Come, come, to field with him.



*Dio.* Let us make ready straight.

*Æne.* Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacrity  
Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:  
The glory of our Troy doth this day lie  
On his fair worth and single chivalry.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*The Grecian Camp. Lists set out.*

*Enter AJAX, armed; AGAMEMNON, ACHILLES, PATROCLUS, MENELAUS, ULYSSES, NESTOR, and others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment fresh and fair,  
Anticipating time. With starting courage  
Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,  
Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled air  
May pierce the head of the great combatant,  
And hale him hither.

*Ajax.* Thou, trumpet, there's my purse.  
Now crack thy lungs and split thy brazen pipe:  
Blow, villain, till thy sphered bias cheek  
Out-swell the colic of puff'd Aquilon:  
Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout blood;  
Thou blow'st for Hector. [*Trumpet sounds.*]

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.* 'Tis but early day.

*Agam.* Is not yon Diomed, with Calchas' daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;  
He rises on the toe: that spirit of his  
In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

*Enter DIOMEDES, with CRESSIDA.*

*Agam.* Is this the Lady Cressid?

*Dio.* Even she?

*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks, sweet lady

*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a kiss.

*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;  
'Twere better she were kiss'd in general.

*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin.—  
So much for Nestor.

*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips, fair lady  
Achilles bids you welcome.

*Men.* I had good argument for kissing once.

*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing now;  
For thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment,  
And parted thus you and your argument.

*Ulyss.* O deadly gall, and theme of all our scorn!  
For which we lose our heads to gild his horns.

*Patr.* The first was Menelaus' kiss ;—this, mine ;  
 Patroclus kisses you.

*Men.* O, this is trim !

*Patr.* Paris and I kiss evermore for him.

*Men.* I'll have my kiss, sir. — Lady, by your leave.

*Cres.* In kissing, do you render or receive ?

*Patr.* Both take and give.

*Cres.* I'll make my match to live,  
 The kiss you take is better than you give ;  
 Therefore no kiss.

*Men.* I'll give you boot, I'll give you three for one.

*Cres.* You're an odd man ; give even, or give none.

*Men.* An odd man, lady ! every man is odd.

*Cres.* No, Paris is not ; for, you know, 'tis true,  
 That you are odd, and he is even with you.

*Men.* You fillip me o' the head.

*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.

*Ulyss.* It were no match, your nail against his horn.—  
 May I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you ?

*Cres.* You may.

*Ulyss.* I do desire it.

*Cres.* Why, beg then, do.

*Ulyss.* Why then, for Venus' sake, give me a kiss  
 When Helen is a maid again, and his.

*Cres.* I am your debtor, claim it when 'tis due.

*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of you.

*Dio.* Lady, a word.—I'll bring you to your father.

[DIOMEDES leads out CRESSIDA.]

*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.

*Ulyss.* Fie, fie upon her !

There's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip,  
 Nay, her foot speaks ; her wanton spirits look out  
 At every joint and motive of her body.

O, these encounterers, so glib of tongue,  
 That give a coasting welcome ere it comes,  
 And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts

To every ticklish reader ! set them down

For sluttish spoils of opportunity,

And daughters of the game.

[Trumpet within.]

*All.* The Trojans' trumpet.

*Agam.* Yonder comes the troop.

*Enter* HECTOR, armed ; ÆNEAS, TROIUS, and other  
 Trojans, with Attendants.

*Æne.* Hail, all you state of Greece ! what shall be done  
 To him that victory commands ? Or do you purpose

A victor shall be known? will you the knights  
 Shall to the edge of all extremity  
 Pursue each other: or shall be divided  
 By any voice or order of the field?  
 Hector bade ask.

*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it

*Æne.* He cares not; he'll obey conditions.

*Achil.* 'Tis done like Hector; but securely done,  
 A little proudly, and great deal misprizing  
 The knight oppos'd.

*Æne.* If not Achilles, sir,  
 What is your name?

*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.

*Æne.* Therefore Achilles. But, whate'er, know this:—

In the extremity of great and little  
 Valour and pride excel themselves in Hector,  
 The one almost as infinite as all,  
 The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,  
 And that which looks like pride is courtesy.  
 This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood:  
 In love whereof, half Hector stays at home;  
 Half heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek  
 This blended knight, half Trojan and half Greek.

*Achil.* A maiden battle then?—O, I perceive you.

*Re-enter DIOMEDES.*

*Agam.* Here is Sir Diomed.—Go, gentle knight,  
 Stand by our Ajax; as you and Lord Æneas  
 Consent upon the order of their fight  
 So be it; either to the uttermost,  
 Or else a breath: the combatants being kin  
 Half stunts their strife before their strokes begin.

[AJAX and HECTOR enter the lists.

*Ulyss.* They are oppos'd already.

*Agam.* What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy?

*Ulyss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true knight;  
 Not yet mature, yet matchless: firm of word;  
 Speaking in deeds, and deedless in his tongue;  
 Not soon provok'd, nor, being provok'd, soon calm'd:  
 His heart and hand both open and both free;  
 For what he has he gives, what thinks he shows;  
 Yet gives he not till judgment guide his bounty,  
 Nor dignifies an impure thought with breath:  
 Manly as Hector, but more dangerous;  
 For Hector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes  
 To tender objects; but he, in heat of action,

Is more vindicative than jealous love:  
 They call him Troilus; and on him erect  
 A second hope, as fairly built as Hector.  
 Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth  
 Even to his inches, and, with private soul,  
 Did in great Ilion thus translate him to me.

[*Alarum.* HECTOR and AJAX fight.]

*Agam.* They are in action.

*Nest.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!

*Tro.*

Hector, thou sleep'st;

Awake thee!

*Agam.* His blows are well dispos'd:—there, Ajax!

*Dio.* You must no more.

[*Trumpets cease.*]

*Æne.*

Princes, enough, so please you.

*Ajax.* I am not warm yet, let us fight again.

*Dio.* As Hector pleases.

*Hect.*

Why, then will I no more:—

Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,  
 A cousin-german to great Priam's seed;  
 The obligation of our blood forbids  
 A gory emulation 'twixt us twain;  
 Were thy commixtion Greek and Trojan so,  
 That thou could'st say *This hand is Grecian all,*  
*And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg*  
*All Greek, and this all Troy; my mother's blood*  
*Runs on the dexter cheek, and this sinister*  
*Bounds in my father's;* by Jove multipotent,  
 Thou shouldst not bear from me a Greekish member  
 Wherein my sword had not impressure made  
 Of our rank feud: but the just gods gainsay  
 That any drop thou borrow'dst from thy mother,  
 My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword  
 Be drain'd! Let me embrace thee, Ajax:  
 By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms;  
 Hector would have them fall upon him thus:  
 Cousin, all honour to thee!

*Ajax.*

I thank thee, Hector:

Thou art too gentle and too free a man:

I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence

A great addition earned in thy death.

*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus so mirable,—

On whose bright crest Fame with her loud'st Oyes

Cries, *This is he*,—could promise to himself

A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

*Æne.* There is expectance here from both the sides  
 What further you will do.

*Hect.* We'll answer it ;  
The issue is embracement :—Ajax, farewell.

*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success,—  
As seld' I have the chance,—I would desire  
My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

*Dio.* 'Tis Agamemnon's wish ; and great Achilles  
Doth long to see unarm'd the valiant Hector.

*Hect.* Æneas, call my brother Troilus to me :  
And signify this loving interview  
To the expecters of our Trojan part ;  
Desire them home.—Give me thy hand, my cousin ;  
I will go eat with thee, and see your knights.

*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us here.

*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me name by name ;  
But for Achilles, mine own searching eyes  
Shall find him by his large and portly size.

*Agam.* Worthy of arms ! as welcome as to one  
That would be rid of such an enemy ;  
But that's no welcome : understand more clear,  
What's past and what's to come is strew'd with husks  
And formless ruin of oblivion ;  
But in this extant moment, faith and troth,  
Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing,  
Bids thee, with most divine integrity,  
From heart of very heart, great Hector, welcome.

*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious Agamemnon.

*Agam.* My well-fam'd lord of Troy, no less to you.

[To TROIUS.]

*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's greeting ;—  
You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hither.

*Hect.* Who must we answer ?

*Æne.*

The noble Menelaus.

*Hect.* O, you, my lord ? by Mars his gauntlet, thanks !  
Mock not, that I affect the untraded oath ;  
Your *quondam* wife swears still by Venus' glove :  
She's well, but bade me not commend her to you.

*Men.* Name her not now, sir ; she's a deadly theme.

*Hect.* O, pardon ; I offend.

*Nest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee oft,  
Labouring for destiny, make cruel way  
Through ranks of Greekish youth ; and I have seen thee,  
As hot as Perseus, spur thy Phrygian steed,  
Despising many forfeits and subduements,  
When thou hast hung thy advanced sword i' the air,  
Not letting it decline on the declin'd,  
That I have said to some my standers-by,

*Lo, Jupiter is yonder, dealing life!*

And I have seen thee pause, and take thy breath,  
When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd thee in,  
Like an Olympian wrestling: this have I seen;  
But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel,  
I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire,  
And once fought with him: he was a soldier good;  
But, by great Mars, the captain of us all,  
Never like thee. Let an old man embrace thee;  
And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.

*Æne.* 'Tis the old Nestor.

*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chronicle,  
That hast so long walk'd hand in hand with time:—  
Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

*Nest.* I would my arms could match thee in contention,  
As they contend with thee in courtesy.

*Hect.* I would they could.

*Nest.* Ha!

By this white beard, I'd fight with thee to-morrow:—  
Well, welcome, welcome! I have seen the time.

*Ulyss.* I wonder now how yonder city stands,  
When we have here her base and pillar by us.

*Hect.* I know your favour, Lord Ulysses, well.  
Ah, sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead,  
Since first I saw yourself and Diomed  
In Ilium, on your Greekish embassy.

*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would ensue:  
My prophecy is but half his journey yet;  
For yonder walls, that pertly front your town,  
Yond towers, whose wanton tops do buss the clouds,  
Must kiss their own feet.

*Hect.* I must not believe you:  
There they stand yet; and modestly I think  
The fall of every Phrygian stone will cost  
A drop of Grecian blood: the end crowns all;  
And that old common arbitrator, time,  
Will one day end it.

*Ulyss.* So to him we leave it.  
Most gentle and most valiant Hector, welcome:  
After the general, I beseech you next  
To feast with me, and see me at my tent.

*Achil.* I shall forestall thee, Lord Ulysses, thou!—  
Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee;  
I have with exact view perus'd thee, Hector,  
And quoted joint by joint.

*Hect.* Is this Achilles?

*Achil.* I am Achilles.

*Hect.* Stand fair, I pray thee: let me look on thee.

*Achil.* Behold thy fill.

*Hect.* Nay, I have done already.

*Achil.* Thou art too brief: I will the second time,  
As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb.

*Hect.* O, like a book of sport thou'lt read me o'er;  
But there's more in me than thou understand'st.  
Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye?

*Achil.* Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body  
Shall I destroy him? whither there, or there, or there?  
That I may give the local wound a name,  
And make distinct the very breach whereout  
Hector's great spirit flew: answer me, heavens!

*Hect.* It would discredit the bless'd gods, proud man.  
To answer such a question: stand again:  
Think'st thou to catch my life so pleasantly,  
As to prenominate in nice conjecture  
Where thou wilt hit me dead?

*Achil.* I tell thee, yea.

*Hect.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so,  
I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee well  
For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there.  
But, by the forge that stithied Mars his helm,  
I'll kill thee everywhere, yea, o'er and o'er.—  
You wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag,  
His insolence draws folly from my lips;  
But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words,  
Or may I never,—

*Ajax.* Do not chafe thee, cousin:—  
And you, Achilles, let these threats alone,  
Till accident or purpose bring you to't:  
You may have every day enough of Hector,  
If you have stomach; the general state, I fear  
Can scarce entreat you to be odd with him.

*Hect.* I pray you, let us see you in the field:  
We have had pelting wars since you refus'd  
The Grecians' cause.

*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector?  
To-morrow do I meet thee, fell as death;  
To-night all friends.

*Hect.* Thy hand upon that match.

*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece, go to my tent;  
There in the full convive we: afterwards,  
As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall  
Concur together, severally entreat him.—

Beat loud the tabourines, let the trumpets blow,  
That this great soldier may his welcome know.

[*Exeunt all but TROILUS and ULYSSES.*]

*Tro.* My Lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech you,  
In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?

*Ulyss.* At Menelaus' tent, most princely Troilus:  
There Diomed doth feast with him to-night;  
Who neither looks upon the heaven nor earth,  
But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view  
On the fair Cressid.

*Tro.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so much,  
After we part from Agamemnon's tent,  
To bring me thither?

*Ulyss.* You shall command me, sir.  
As gentle tell me, of what honour was  
This Cressida in Troy? Had she no lover there  
That wails her absence?

*Tro.* O, sir, to such as boasting show their scars  
A mock is due Will you walk on, my lord?  
She was belov'd, she lov'd; she is, and doth:  
But, still, sweet love is food for fortune's tooth. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—THE GRECIAN CAMP. *Before ACHILLES' Tent.*

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine to-night,  
Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow.—  
*Patroclus,* let us feast him to the height.

*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Achil.* How now, thou core of envy!  
Thou: crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seemest, and idol  
of idiot worshippers, here's a letter for thee.

*Achil.* From whence, fragment?

*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?

*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's wound.

*Patr.* Well said, Adversity! and what need these tricks?

*Ther.* Pr'ythee, be silent, boy; I profit not by thy talk;  
thou art thought to be Achilles' male varlet.



*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now, the rotten diseases of the south, the guts griping, ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i'the back, lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of impostume, sciaticas, lime-kilns i' the palm, incurable boue-ache, and the rivelled fee-simple of the tetter, take and take again such preposterous discoveries!

*Patr.* Why, thou damnable box of envy, thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?

*Ther.* Do I curse thee?

*Patr.* Why, no, you ruinous butt; you whoreson indistinguishable cur, no.

*Ther.* No! why art thou, then, exasperate, thou idle im material skein of sleeve-silk, thou green sarcenet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah, how the poor world is pestered with such water-flies,—diminutives of nature!

*Patr.* Out, gall!

*Ther.* Finch egg!

*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted quite  
From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle.  
Here is a letter from Queen Hecuba;  
A token from her daughter, my fair love;  
Both taxing me and gaging me to keep  
An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it;  
Fall, Greeks; fail, fame; honour or go or stay;  
My major vow lies here, this I'll obey.—  
Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent;  
This night in banqueting must all be spent.—  
Away, Patroclus! [Exeunt *ACHIL.* and *PATR.*]

*Ther.* With too much blood and too little brain these two may run mad; but, if with too much brain and too little blood they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon,—an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails; but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: and the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull,—the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckold; a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg,—to what form, but that he is, should wit larded with malice, and malice forced with wit, turn him to? To an ass, were nothing; he is both ass and ox: to an ox, were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitchew, a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care; but to be Menelaus,—I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would

be, if I were not Thersites; for I care not to be the louse of a lazar, so I were not Menelaus.—Hoy-day! spirits and fires!

*Enter* HECTOR, TROILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, and DIOMEDES, with lights.

*Agam.* We go wrong, we go wrong.

*Ajax.* No, yonder 'tis;

There, where we see the lights.

*Hect.* I trouble you.

*Ajax.* No, not a whit.

*Ulyss.* Here comes himself to guide you.

*Re-enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector; welcome, princes all.

*Agam.* So now, fair prince of Troy, I bid good-night.

*Ajax* commands the guard to tend on you.

*Hect.* Thanks, and good-night to the Greeks' general.

*Men.* Good-night, my lord.

*Hect.* Good-night, sweet Lord Menelaus.

*Ther.* Sweet draught: sweet, quoth 'a! sweet sink, sweet sewer.

*Achil.* Good-night and welcome, both at once, to those That go or tarry.

*Agam.* Good-night. [*Exeunt* AGAM. and MEN.]

*Achil.* Old Nestor tarries; and you too, Diomed, Keep Hector company an hour or two.

*Dio.* I cannot, lord; I have important business, The tide whereof is now.—Good-night, great Hector.

*Hect.* Give me your hand.

*Ulyss.* Follow his torch; he goes to Calchas' tent; I'll keep you company. [*Aside to* TROILUS.]

*Tro.* Sweet sir, you honour me.

*Hect.* And so good-night.

[*Exit* DIO., ULYSS. and TRO. following.]

*Achil.* Come, come, enter my tent.

[*Exeunt* ACHIL., HECT., AJAX, and NEST.]

*Ther.* That same Diomed 's a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knave; I will no more trust him when he leers than I will a serpent when he hisses: he will spend his mouth and promise, like Brabblor the hound; but when he performs astronomers foretell it; it is prodigious, there will come some change; the sun borrows of the moon when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector than not to dog him: they say he keeps a Trojan drab and

uses the traitor Calchas' tent: I'll after.—Nothing but lechery! all incontinent varlets! [Exit.]

SCENE II.—THE GRECIAN CAMP. *Before CALCHAS' Tent.*

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* What, are you up here, ho? speak.

*Cal.* [within.] Who calls?

*Dio.* Diomed.—Calchas, I think.—Where's your daughter?

*Cal.* [within.] She comes to you.

*Enter TROIUS and ULYSSES, at a distance; after them THERSITES.*

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Cressid comes forth to him.

*Dio.* How now, my charge!

*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian!—Hark, a word with you. [Whispers.]

*Tro.* Yea, so familiar!

*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.

*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff; s'e's noted.

*Dio.* Will you remember?

*Cres.* Remember! yes.

*Dio.* Nay, but do, then;  
And let your mind be coupled with your words.

*Tro.* What should she remember?

*Ulyss.* List!

*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.

*Ther.* Roguery!

*Dio.* Nay, then,—

*Cres.* I'll tell you what,—

*Dio.* Pho, pho! come, tell a pin: you are forsworn.

*Cres.* In faith, I cannot: what would you have me do?

*Ther.* A juggling trick, to be secretly open.

*Dio.* What did you swear you would bestow on me?

*Cres.* I pry'thee, do not hold me to mine oath;  
Bid me do anything but that, sweet Greek.

*Dio.* Good-night.

*Tro.* Hold, patience!

*Ulyss.* How now, Trojan!

*Cres.* Diomed,--  
*Dio.* No, no, good-night: I'll be your fool no more.  
*Tro.* Thy better must.  
*Cres.* Hark! one word in your ear.  
*Tro.* O plague and madness!  
*Ulyss.* You are mov'd, prince; let us depart, I pray you,  
 Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself  
 To wrathful terms: this place is dangerous;  
 The time right deadly; I beseech you, go.  
*Tro.* Behold, I pray you!  
*Ulyss.* Nay, good my lord, go off:  
 You flow to great destruction; come, my lord.  
*Tro.* I pray thee, stay.  
*Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.  
*Tro.* I pray you, stay; by hell and all hell's torments,  
 I will not speak a word.  
*Dio.* And so, good-night.  
*Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.  
*Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?  
 O wither'd truth!  
*Ulyss.* Why, how now, lord?  
*Tro.* By Jove,  
 I will be patient.  
*Cres.* Guardian!—why, Greek!  
*Dio.* Pho, pho! adieu; you palter.  
*Cres.* In faith, I do not: come hither once again.  
*Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something: will you go?  
 You will break out.  
*Tro.* She strokes his cheek!  
*Ulyss.* Come, come.  
*Tro.* Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak a word:  
 There is between my will and all offences  
 A guard of patience:—stay a little while.  
*Ther.* How the devil luxury, with his fat rump and potato  
 finger, tickles these together! Fry, lechery, fry!  
*Dio.* But will you, then?  
*Cres.* In faith, I will, la; never trust me else.  
*Dio.* Give me some token for the surety of it.  
*Cres.* I'll fetch you one. [Exit.  
*Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.  
*Tro.* Fear me not, sweet lord;  
 I will not be myself, nor have cognition  
 Of what I feel: I am all patience.

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Ther.* Now the pledge; now, now, now!

*Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve.

*Tro.* O, beauty! where's thy faith?

*Jlyss.* My lord,—

*Tro.* I will be patient; outwardly I will.

*Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; behold it well.—  
He lov'd me—O false wench!—Give't me again.

*Dio.* Whose was't?

*Cres.* It is no matter, now I have't again.  
I will not meet with you to-morrow night:  
I pr'ythee, Diomed, visit me no more.

*Ther.* Now she sharpens:—Well said, Whetstone.

*Dio.* I shall have it.

*Cres.* What, this?

*Dio.* Ay, that.

*Cres.* O, all you gods!—O pretty, pretty pledge!  
Thy master now lies thinking in his bed  
Of thee and me; and sighs, and takes my glove,  
And gives memorial dainty kisses to it,  
As I kiss thee.—Nay, do not snatch it from me;  
He that takes that doth take my heart withal.

*Dio.* I had your heart before, this follows it.

*Tro.* I did swear patience.

*Cres.* You shall not have it, Diomed; faith, you shall  
I'll give you something else. [not;

*Dio.* I will have this: whose was it?

*Cres.* It is no matter.

*Dio.* Come, tell me whose it was.

*Cres.* 'Twas one's that loved me better than you will.  
But, now you have it, take it.

*Dio.* Whose was it?

*Cres.* By all Diana's waiting women yond,  
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.

*Dio.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm  
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.

*Tro.* Wert thou the devil, and wor'st it on thy horn,  
It should be challeng'd.

*Cres.* Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past;—and yet it is not;  
I will not keep my word.

*Dio.* Why, then, farewell;  
Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.

*Cres.* You shall not go:—one cannot speak a word  
But it straight starts you.

*Dio.* I do not like this fooling.

*Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes not you  
pleases me best.

*Dio.* What, shall I come the hour?

*Cres.* Ay, come:—O Jove!—do come:—I shall be  
plagu'd.

*Dio.* Farewell till then.

*Cres.* Good-night: I pr'ythee, come.

[*Exit* DIOMEDES.]

Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee;

But with my heart the other eye doth see.

Ah, poor our sex! this fault in us I find,

The error of our eye directs our mind:

What error leads must err; O, then conclude,

Minds sway'd by eyes are full of turpitude.

[*Exit.*

*Ther.* A proof of strength she could not publish more,

Unless she said, My mind is now turn'd whore.

*Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.

*Tro.*

It is.

*Ulyss.*

Why stay we, then?

*Tro.* To make a recordation to my soul

Of every syllable that here was spoke.

But if I tell how these two did co-act,

Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?

Sith yet there is a credence in my heart,

An esperance so obstinately strong,

That doth invert the attest of eyes and ears;

As if those organs had deceptive functions

Created only to calumniate.

Was Cressid here?

*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, Trojan.

*Tro.* She was not, sure.

*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.

*Tro.* Why, my negation hath no taste of madness.

*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here but now.

*Tro.* Let it not be believ'd for womanhood!

Think, we had mothers; do not give advantage

To stubborn critics,—apt, without a theme,

For depravation,—to square the general sex

By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.

*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can soil our  
mothers?

*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were she.

*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own eyes?

*Tro.* This she? no; this is Diomed's Cressida:

If beauty have a soul, this is not she;

If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimonies,

If sanctimony be the gods' delight,

If there be rule in unity itself,

This is not she. O madness of discourse,

That cause sets up with and against itself!  
 Bi-fold authority! where reason can revolt  
 Without perdition, and loss assume all reason  
 Without revolt: this is, and is not, Cressid!  
 Within my soul there doth conduce a fight  
 Of this strange nature, that a thiug inseparate  
 Divides more wider than the sky and earth;  
 And yet the spacious breadth of this division  
 Admits no orifex for a point, as subtle  
 As Ariachne's broken woof, to enter.  
 Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;  
 Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven:  
 Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;  
 The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolv'd, and loos'd;  
 And with another note, five-finger-tied,  
 The fractions of her faith, orts of her love,  
 The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy relics  
 Of her o'er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed.

*Ulyss.* May worthy Troilus be but half-attach'd  
 With that which here his passion doth express?

*Tro.* Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged well  
 In characters as red as Mars his heart  
 Inflam'd with Venus: never did young man fancy  
 With so eterual and so fix'd a soul.  
 Hark, Greek: as much as I do Cressid love,  
 So much by weight hate I her Diomed:  
 That sleeve is mine that he'll bear on his helm;  
 Were it a casque compos'd by Vulcan's skill  
 My sword should bite it: not the dreadful spout  
 Which shipmen do the hurricano call,  
 Constring'd in mass by the almighty sun,  
 Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear  
 In his descent, than shall my prompted sword  
 Falling on Diomed.

*Ther.* He'll tickle it for his concupy.

*Tro.* O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false, false!  
 Let all untruths stand by thy stained name,  
 And they'll seem glorious.

*Ulyss.* O, contain yourself;  
 Your passion draws ears hither.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* I have been seeking you this hour, my lord:  
 Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy;  
 Ajax, your guard, stays to conuet you home.

*Tro.* Have with you, prince. — My courtuous lord, adieu. —

Farewell, revolted fair!—and, Diomed,  
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

*Ulyss.* I'll bring you to the gates.

*Tro.* Accept distracted thanks.

[*Eceunt* TRO., ÆNE., and ULYSS.]

*Ther.* Would I could meet that rogue Diomed! I would croak like a raven; I would bode, I would bode. Patroclus will give me anything for the intelligence of this whore: the parrot will not do more for an almond than he for a commodious drab. Lechery, lechery; still wars and lechery; nothing else holds fashion: a burning devil take them!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—TROY. *Before* PRIAM'S Palace.

*Enter* HECTOR and ANDROMACHE.

*And.* When was my lord so much ungently temper'd  
To stop his ears against admonishment?

Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.

*Hect.* You train me to offend you; get you in:  
By all the everlasting gods, I'll go!

*And.* My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to the day.

*Hect.* No more, I say.

*Enter* CASSANDRA.

*Cas.* Where is my brother Hector?

*And.* Here, sister; arm'd, and bloody in intent.

Consort with me in loud and dear petition,  
Pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd  
Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night  
Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of slaughter.

*Cas.* O, 'tis true.

*Hect.* Ho! bid my trumpet sound!

*Cas.* No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet brother.

*Hect.* Begone, I say: the gods have heard me swear.

*Cas.* The gods are deaf to hot and peevish vows:  
They are polluted offerings, more abhor'd  
Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

*And.* O, be persuaded! do not count it holy  
To hurt by being just: it is as lawful,  
For we would give much, to use violent thefts,  
And rob in the behalf of charity.

*Cas.* It is the purpose that makes strong the vow;  
But vows to every purpose must not hold:  
Unarm, sweet Hector.



*Hect.* Hold you still, I say;  
 Mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:  
 Life every man holds dear; but the dear man  
 Holds honour far more precious dear than life.—

*Enter TROILUS.*

How now, young man! mean'st thou to fight to-day?

*And.* Cassandra, call my father to persuade.

[*Exit CASSANDRA*

*Hect.* No, faith, young Troilus; doff thy harness,  
 youth;

I am to-day i' the vein of chivalry:  
 Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,  
 And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.  
 Unarin thee, go; and doubt thou not, brave boy,  
 I'll stand to-day for thee, and me, and Troy.

*Tro.* Brother, you have a vice of mercy in you,  
 Which better fits a lion than a man.

*Hect.* What vice is that, good Troilus? chide me for it.

*Tro.* When many times the captive Grecians fall,  
 Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,  
 You bid them rise and live.

*Hect.* O, 'tis fair play.

*Tro.* Fool's play, by Heaven, Hector.

*Hect.* How now! how now!

*Tro.* For the love of all the gods,

Let's leave the hermit pity with our mothers;  
 And when we have our armours buckled on,  
 The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords;  
 Spur them to ruthless work, rein them from ruth.

*Hect.* Fie, savage, fie!

*Tro.* Hector, then 'tis wars.

*Hect.* Troilus, I would not have you fight to-day.

*Tro.* Who should withhold me?

Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars  
 Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;  
 Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,  
 Their eyes o'ergalled with recourse of tears;  
 Nor you, my brother, with your true sword drawn,  
 Oppos'd to hinder me, should stop my way,  
 But by my ruin.

*Re-enter CASSANDRA, with PRIAM.*

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him fast:  
 He is thy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay,

Thou on him leaning and all Troy on thee,  
Fall all together.

*Pri.* Come, Hector, come, go back :  
Thy wife hath dream'd ; thy mother hath had visions ;  
Cassandra doth foresee ; and I myself  
Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,  
To tell thee that this day is ominous :  
Therefore, come back.

*Hect.* Æneas is a-field ;  
And I do stand engag'd to many Greeks,  
Even in the faith of valour, to appear  
This morning to them.

*Pri.* Ay, but thou shalt not go.

*Hect.* I must not break my faith.  
You know me dutiful ; therefore, dear sir,  
Let me not shame respect ; but give me leave  
To take that course by your consent and voice  
Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

*Cas.* O Priam, yield not to him !

*And.* Do not, dear father.

*Hect.* Andromache, I am offended with you :  
Upon the love you bear me, get you in. [*Exit ANDROMACHE.*]

*Tro.* This foolish, dreaming, superstitious girl  
Makes all these bodements.

*Cas.* O, farewell, dear Hector !  
Look, how thou diest ! look, how thy eye turns pale !  
Look, how thy wounds do bleed at many vents !  
Hark, how Troy roars ! how Heuba cries out !  
How poor Andromache shrills her dolours forth !  
Behold, destruction, frenzy, and amazement,  
Like witless antics, one another meet,  
And all cry, Hector ! Hector's dead ! O Hector !

*Tro.* Away ! away !

*Cas.* Farewell :—yet, soft !—Hector, I take my leave :  
Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive. [*Exit.*]

*Hect.* You are amaz'd, my liege, at her exclaim :  
Go in, and cheer the town : we'll forth, and fight ;  
Do deeds worth praise, and tell you them at night.

*Pri.* Farewell : the gods with safety stand about thee !

[*Exeunt severally PRIAM and HECTOR. Alarums.*]

*Tro.* They are at it, hark ! Proud Diomed, believe,  
I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

*As TROIUS is going out, enter from the other side*  
PANDARUS.

*Pan.* Do you hear, my lord ? do you hear ?

*Tro.* What now?

*Pan.* Here's a letter come from yond poor girl.

*Tro.* Let me read.

*Pan.* A whoreson phtisick, a whoreson rascally phtisick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of this girl; and what one thing, what another, that I shall leave you one o' these days: and I have a rheum in mine eyes too; and such an ache in my bones, that unless a man were cursed I cannot tell what to think on't.—What says she there?

*Tro.* Words, words, mere words, no matter from the heart; The effect doth operate another way.— [*Tearing the letter.* Go, wind, to wind, there turn and change together.— My love with words and errors still she feeds; But edifies another with her deeds. [*Exeunt severally.*

SCENE IV.—*Plains between Troy and the Grecian Camp.*

*Alarums: excursions. Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-clawing one another; I'll go look on. That dissembling abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that same scurvy doting foolish young knave's sleeve of Troy there in his helm: I would fain see them meet; that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whoremasterly villain, with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious drab, of a sleeveless errand. O the t'other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals,—that stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese, Nestor, and that same dog-fox, Ulysses,—is not proved worth a blackberry:—they set me up, in policy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles: and now is the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day; whereupon the Grecians begin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion. Soft! here comes sleeve, and t'other.

*Enter DIOMEDES, TROIUS following.*

*Tro.* Fly not; for shouldst thou take the river Styx I would swim after.

*Dio.* Thou dost miscall retire:  
I do not fly; but advantageous care  
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude:  
Have at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian! now for thy whore,  
Trojan!—now the sleeve, now the sleeve!

[*Exeunt TRO. and DIO., fighting.*

*Enter* HECTOR.

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek! art thou for Hector's match?  
Art thou of blood and honour?

*Ther.* No, no,—I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave;  
a very filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee;—live. [*Exit.*

*Ther.* God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; but a  
plague break thy neck for frightening me!—What's become  
of the wenching rogues? I think they have swallowed one  
another: I would laugh at that miracle. Yet, in a sort,  
lechery eats itself. I'll seek them. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Plains.*

*Enter* DIOMEDES and a Servant.

*Dio.* Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus' horse;  
Present the fair steed to my lady Cressid:  
Fellow, commend my service to her beauty;  
Tell her I have chastis'd the amorous Trojan,  
And am her knight by proof.

*Serv.* I go, my lord. [*Exit.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON.

*Agam.* Renew, renew! The fierce Polydamus  
Hath beat down Menon: bastard Margarelon  
Hath Doreus prisoner,  
And stands colossus-wise, waving his beam,  
Upon the pashed corpses of the kings  
Epistrophus and Cedius: Polixenes is slain;  
Amphimachus and Thoas deadly hurt;  
Patroclus ta'en, or slain; and Palamedes  
Sore hurt and bruis'd: the dreadful Sagittary  
Appals our numbers:—haste we, Diomed,  
To reinforcement, or we perish all.

*Enter* NESTOR.

*Nest.* Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles;  
And bid the snail-pac'd Ajax arm for shame.—  
There is a thousand Hectors in the field:  
Now here he fights on Galathea his horse,  
And there lacks work; anon he's there afoot,  
And there they fly or die, like scaled skulls  
Before the belching whale; then is he yonder,  
And there the strawy Greeks ripe for his edge.

Fall down before him like the mower's swath :  
 Here, there, and everywhere he leaves and takes ;  
 Dexterity so obeying appetite  
 That what he will he does ; and does so much  
 That proof is call'd impossibility.

*Enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* O, courage, courage, princes ! great Achilles  
 Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance :  
 Patroclus' wounds have rous'd his drowsy blood,  
 Together with his mangl'd Myrmidons,  
 That noiseless, handless, hack'd and chipp'd, come to  
 him,  
 Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,  
 And foams at mouth, and he is arm'd and at it,  
 Roaring for Troilus ; who hath done to-day  
 Mad and fantastic execution ;  
 Engaging and redeeming of himself  
 With such a careless force and forceless care  
 As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,  
 Bade him win all.

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus ! thou coward Troilus ! *[Exit.*  
*Dio.* Ay, there, there.  
*Nest.* So, so, we draw together.

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Where is this Hector ?  
 Come, come, thou boy-queller, show thy face ;  
 Know what it is to meet Achilles angry :—  
 Hector ! where's Hector ? I will none but Hector. *[Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.—*Another Part of the Plains.*

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head !

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* Troilus, I say ! where's Troilus ?  
*Ajax.* What wouldst thou ?  
*Dio.* I would correct him.  
*Ajax.* Were I the general, thou shouldst have my office  
 Ere that correction.—Troilus, I say ! what. Troilus !

*Enter* TROIILUS.

*Tro.* O traitor Diomed!—turn thy false face, thou traitor,  
And pay thy life thou owest me for my horse!

*Dio.* Ha! art thou there?

*Ajax.* I'll fight with him alone: stand, Diomed.

*Dio.* He is my prize. I will not look upon.

*Tro.* Come, both, you cogging Greeks; have at you both.  
[*Exeunt fighting.*]

*Enter* HECTOR.

*Hect.* Yea, Troilus? O, well fought, my youngest brother!

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Now do I see thee, ha! have at thee, Hector!

*Hect.* Pause, if thou wilt.

*Achil.* I do disdain thy courtesy, proud Trojan:  
Be happy that my arms are out of use:  
My rest and negligence befriends thee now,  
But thou anon shalt hear of me again;  
Till when, go seek thy fortune.

[*Exit.*]

*Hect.* Fare thee well:—  
I would have been much more a fresher man  
Had I expected thee.—How now, my brother!

*Re-enter* TROIILUS.

*Tro.* Ajax hath ta'en *Aeneas*: shall it be?  
No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,  
He shall not carry him; I'll be ta'en too,  
Or bring him off:—fate, hear me what I say!  
I reck not though I end my life to-day.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter one in sumptuous armour.*

*Hect.* Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a goodly mark:—  
No? wilt thou not?—I like thy armour well;  
I'll frush it, and unlock the rivets all,  
But I'll be master of it:—Wilt thou not, beast, abide?  
Why then, fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide.

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE VII.—*Another Part of the Plains.*

*Enter* ACHILLES, with Myrmidons.

*Achil.* Come here about me, you my Myrmidons;  
Mark what I say.—Attend me where I wheel:  
Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in breath:

And when I have the bloody Hector found,  
Empale him with your weapons round about;  
In fellest manner execute your aims.  
Follow me, sirs, and my proceedings eye:—  
It is decreed Hector the great must die. [Exit.

*Enter MENELAUS and PARIS, fighting; then THERSITES.*

*Ther.* The cuckold and the cuckold-maker are at it. Now, bull! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris, 'loo! now my double-henned sparrow! 'loo, Paris, 'loo! The bull has the game:—'ware horns, ho!  
[Exit PARIS and MENELAUS.

*Enter MARGARELON.*

*Mar.* Turn, slave, and fight.

*Ther.* What art thou?

*Mar.* A bastard son of Priam's.

*Ther.* I am a bastard too; I love bastards: I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard in mind, bastard in valour, in everything illegitimate. One bear will not bite another, and wherefore should one bastard? Take heed, the quarrel's most ominous to us: if the son of a whore fight for a whore he tempts judgment: farewell, bastard. [Exit.

*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward! [Exit.

SCENE VIII.—*Another Part of the Plains.*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Most putrified core, so fair without,  
Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.  
Now is my day's work done: I'll take good breath:  
Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and death!  
[Puts off his helmet and hangs his shield behind him.

*Enter ACHILLES and Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to set;  
How ugly night comes breathing at his heels;  
Even with the vail and dark'ning of the sun,  
To close the day up, Hector's life is done.

*Hect.* I am unarm'd; forego this vantage, Greek.

*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike; this is the man I seek.

[HECTOR falls.

So, Ilium, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink down!  
Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone.—

On, Myrmidons; and cry you all amain,  
*Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain.* [*A retreat sounded.*  
 Hark! a retire upon our Grecian part.

*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like, my lord.

*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads the earth,  
 And, stickler-like, the armies separate  
 My half-suppl'd sword, that frankly would have fed,  
 Pleas'd with this dainty bait, thus goes to bed.—

[*Sheathes his sword*

Come, tie his body to my horse's tail;  
 Along the field I will the Trojan trail.

[*Exeunt*

SCENE IX.—*Another Part of the Plains.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS, NESTOR, DIO-  
 MEDES, and others, marching. *Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark! hark! what shout is that?

*Nest.* Peace, drums!

[*Within.*] Achilles! Achilles! Hector's slain, Achilles!

*Dio.* The bruit is, Hector's slain, and by Achilles.

*Ajax.* If it be so, yet bragless let it be;

Great Hector was a man as good as he.

*Agam.* March patiently along.—Let one be sent  
 To pray Achilles see us at our tent.—

If in his death the gods have us befriended;

Great Troy is ours, and our sharp wars are ended.

[*Exeunt, marching*

SCENE X.—*Another Part of the Plains.*

*Enter* ÆNEAS and Trojans.

*Æne.* Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the field:  
 Never go home; here starve we out the night.

*Enter* TROIILUS.

*Tro.* Hector is slain.

*All.* Hector!—the gods forbid!

*Tro.* He's dead; and at the murderer's horse's tail.  
 In beastly sort, dragg'd through the shameful field.—

Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with speed!

Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile at Troy!

I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy.

And linger not our sure destructions on!

*Æne.* My lord, you do discomfort all the host.



*Tro.* You understand me not that tell me so:  
 I do not speak of flight, of fear, of death;  
 But dare all imminence that gods and men  
 Address their dangers in. Hector is gone:  
 Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba?  
 Let him that will a screech-owl aye be call'd  
 Go in to Troy, and say there, Hector's dead:  
 There is a word will Priam turn to stone;  
 Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,  
 Cold statues of the youth; and, in a word,  
 Scare Troy out of itself. But, march away:  
 Hector is dead; there is no more to say.  
 Stay yet.—You vile abominable tents,  
 Thus proudly pight upon our Phrygian plains,  
 Let Titan rise as early as he dare,  
 I'll through and through you!—And, thou great siz'd  
     coward,  
 No space of earth shall sunder our two hates:  
 I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,  
 That mouldeth goblins swift as frenzy's thoughts.—  
 Strike a free march to Troy!—with comfort go:  
 Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.

[*Exeunt ÆNEAS and Trojans.*]

*As TROIILUS is going out, enter, from the other side,*  
 PANDARUS.

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you!

*Tro.* Hence, broker lackey! ignomy and shame  
 Pursue thy life, and live aye with thy name! [*Exit.*]

*Pan.* A goodly medicine for my aching bones!—O world:  
 world! world! thus is the poor agent despised! O traitors  
 and bawds, how earnestly are you set at work, and how ill  
 requited! Why should our endeavour be so loved, and the  
 performance so loathed? what verse for it? what instance  
 for it?—Let me see:—

Full merrily the humble bee doth sing  
 Till he hath lost his honey and his sting;  
 And being once subdued in armed tail,  
 Sweet honey and sweet notes together fail.—

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths  
 As many as be here of pander's hall,  
 Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall;  
 Or, if you cannot weep, yet give some groans,  
 Though not for me, yet for your aching bones.  
 Brethren and sisters of the old-door trade,

Some two months hence my will shall here be made:  
It should be now, but that my fear is this,—  
Some galled goose of Winchester would hiss:  
Till then I'll sweat, and seek about for eases;  
And, at that time, bequeath you my diseases.

[*Exit.*]









PR  
2752  
J6  
1896  
v.4

Shakespeare, William  
Complete works Dr. Johnson  
ed.



PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

